

first in the prologue is concyued how Gylbryne Wi
ch his sisters encad in to this Isle and named
yt Albion

The begynnyng of the world conteyned how Brute Was
engendred of them of troye & how he sle Whis fadre and mo
der Ca. i

How Brute Was driven oute of his land & how he helz
de him in grece And deliured the trojans there out of bon
dage Ca. ii

How corynthean Brutes man and how kynge Gof
far Was discomfited And of the foundacion of tours in eu
rope Ca. iii

How Brute arrived at the towne in the Isle of albion.
And of the battail Bit Bene coryn & gogmagog Ca. iiii

How Brute made london & named this lande Britaygne
& Scotland allange & Walys cambre And of the division
of the land to his three sones Ca. v.

How kynge Madan reigned in pces & of the deathe of his
sones & how that one shew that othir & how after Bulues
slew him that slew his brother Ca. vi.

How kynge Ebrae conquered fraunce & begate xx. sones &
xxiij. daughters Ca. vii.

Of kynge Brute greues helde first sone of kynge Ebrae Ca. viii

Of kynge Leyl Brute greues helde his sone Ca. ix

Of kynge Lud ludibras that Was kynge Leyl son Ca. x

Of kynge Bladud that Was soe of kynge Lud ludibras Ca. xi

Of kynge Leyl & of his iij. daughters & how the yongest W
as married to the kynge of fraunce Ca. xii.

How kynge Leyl Was driven oute of his lande by his folke
and how corthe his yongest daughter helped him in his ne
de Ca. xiii

How Morgan & eodenage Which Were newe Ws to corthe
Betrid on hir & had hir in prison Ca. xiiii

¶ Ho W Reynold that Was conedages sone Regned after
his fadre And in his tyme it turned glode the dages.

Ca. vii.

Ho W Gorbodian regned after Reynold his fadre ca. vii
Ho W the t wo sones of Gorbodian fought for the heritage
e ho W they both Were slayne

Ca. viii.

Ho W iiii. Kynges held all Britaigne And What their Na-
mes Were.

Ca. ix.

Of Kyng Doneband that Was elctus sone and ho W he W
an the land

Ca. x.

ho W Donebant Was the fyrst Kyng that euer Wered crowne of
gold in Britaigne

Ca. xi.

ho W Brenne and Bel yn departed bit Wene hem the lō ;
de After the deth of Donebant hir fadre And their Wete

Ca. xii.

ho W Bel yn drofe oute of this land Guthlaggh of Den-
marke and Sampe

Ca. xiii.

ho W accord Was made bit Wene Brenne and Bel yn by the
moyen of corne Way hir moder

Ca. xiiii.

ho W kyngh Coembatrus ho W the Kyng of Denmarke by
cause he Wold not pay him his tynage

Ca. xv.

¶ Ho W Kyng Guenthelon Regned and gouerned the lōd

Ca. xvi.

ho W Kyng sepsell regned after guenthelon

Ca. xvii.

ho W Rymor regn'd aft sepsell e ho W a regn'd aft hir ca. xviii

ho W Kyng mor With wide thurgh deuourynge of a best

Ca. xix.

Of Gradwodiah that Was the sone of mor Wyth Whych
made the toun of cambrige

Ca. xx.

Of Artogail that Was grandwodians soe ho W he Was ma-
de Kyng e after tposed for his Wickednesse

Ca. xxi.

ho W helydur Was made Kyng after the deth of Artogail
le his brother

Ca. xxii.

How the Britons taken besidur out of prison and made
him king the thridde tyme

How xxviii. kynges reigned in pces ech after othir After
that dech of besidur

How lud was made king after the dech of his fadre
Capitulo

How the Britons graunted cassibalam which was lud's
brother the Reame in whos tyme Julius cesar comet byes
to conquer the lond

Of the dech that was hit bene cassibalam & the Erle of
hndwng of the truage that was paid to Rome

How the lades of the land after the dech of cassibalam be
cause he had none hit made Admagen king

Of kymbalin which was Andragessone in whos tyme w
as Ihu borne of the blessed Virgine seint marie

Of king Supnder kymbalynes sone which refused to pay
trybute to Rome And how he was slayne

Capitulo

Of king Armager in whos tyme the Apostolles pre
chd

How king Westmer gaf to Gerynger an Island & mar
to the touns of Westbyke

How king Westmer diid to arew a stone in the tching of
Westmerland when he slew Ro & rpk

Of king Corgl that was Westmers sone

Capitulo

How king lucie reigned after corl And was the first ca
sten king that ever was in this land

How this land was long without a king and atte last
the Britons chey Qstlepadus which after was slayne by
weyll.

How constance a Romayn was chosen kynge by cause he
wedded Edgna king weylls daughter

aii

Ca. xxviii

Ca. xxviii

xxviii

Ca. xxxviii

ca. xxxviii

ca. xxxviii

ca. xxxviii

xxviii

Ca. xli

Ca. xli

ca. xli

plii

Ca. xliii

ca. xliii

ca. xliii



How Constantine sone of cunstance and of saint Elph
ne Ruled the londe & after Was made Emperour of Rome
Capitulo

How magimian that Was the Empours cosyn of Rome
edred octaviens Subhter & Was made kyng

How magimian conquered the londe of amoucan and gaf
it to Conan meriedwe

How saint Ursula With xiij. Virgyns in hir compaign
ere martred at colkyne

How kyng Eowen came for to Westwe this lande And
how gracion & fened it

How gracion made him selfe kyng. When magimian Was
slapned after Ward the Britons shew him

How constantine that Was the kynges brother of litle Bri
tayne Was crowned kyng of moche Britayne

Capitulo

Of Constunce that Was constantynes sone a monke at W
ynchestre Was taken oute by Vortiger and made kyng of
ter his fadres & shew him Vortiger let sle hym to. Make
him selfe kyng

How the Warryngs that had the children to kepe Whiche
Were constantines sones led & them to litle Britayn for the
traison and fallenesse of Vortiger

How Engist With xiij. men come in to this londe to Whom
Vortiger gaf the place that ys Called thongcastell

Capitulo

Of Rome Wom Engistes daughter Whom kyng Vortiger
Wedded for her Beaute

How Uortimer that Was Vortigers sone Was made kyng
and how Engist Was driven oute and how Vortimer Was
as slayne by Rome Wom

How the Britons chosen Vortiger agayne to be kyng & how
Engiste returned & how they fought togedre

to the first of the world of moidens h' son

Capitulum

of King Edward of England

How King Edward made the dampified and bachelors was

that he to a house in his age

of King Edward

Of King Edward of Surmond that come by help of the

papists in to England

How King Edward deose King Edward to chiste and the

the Bishop of York the house

How King Edward was named England after the name of the

land and how many houses were made after in diverse par

of the land

How King Edward was first in to Englande baptised

and converted King Edward and of the Bishops that

were his friends

How King Edward went in to Wales and how the Bishops

of Wales not obeyed the Bishop of Cauntyne

Capitulum

How King Edward and King Edward of Wales

and King Edward of Wales

How King Edward was first in to Englande baptised

and converted King Edward and of the Bishops that

were his friends

How King Edward went in to Wales and how the Bishops

of Wales not obeyed the Bishop of Cauntyne

Britayne

Ho B King offe the Britayne almech the King
Egbert the first King of Britayne
of Britayne the first King of the North Sea

Capitulum

Ho B the Danes toke portle and sh the King of Britayne
Eke

Ho B seine Edmond the King was married

Capitulum

Ho B Hubba & Hugar toke the house of riding
Of King Alund & Ho B the Danes in his time required
to suffer them to depart out of this land

Ho B Hubba & Hugar Ben slayne at Chipmaring and Ho B
the Danes swughe the King to King Alund

Capitulum

Ho B the Danes the Bent in to France the first
me a gayne in to Englonde and of the death of King Alund

Of King Edward the first King Alundson

Capitulum

Of King Edelfion and of Edmond the first and of
the his brethren

Capitulum

Of King Edgar the first King of the Kingdom of
Land and Wales and Ho B the first King of the Kingdom of
his wife

Ho B King Edgar the first King of the Kingdom of
Wales

Of King Richard first in the 1st of the reign of King Richard first

King Richard first returned for the holy land & to the
sacred sepulchre in the curia

King Richard first brother was made King and the first
year of his reign he lost all Normandy

Capitule
King Richard first sold the church of the monks of Marmouth
to the monks of England for a certain sum

Capitule
King Richard first of Langham came in to England by the pope's
commandment and he was crowned again

Capitule
King Richard first died the 6th of April

Capitule
King Richard first died a child the 6th of April and count
described the King's money in the King's palace

Capitule
Of the letter obligation the King Richard first made by to the
curia of Rome where for the first time he paid

Capitule
King Richard first died the 6th of April and count
described the King's money in the King's palace

Capitule
King Richard first died the 6th of April and count
described the King's money in the King's palace

Capitule
King Richard first died the 6th of April and count
described the King's money in the King's palace

Capitule
King Richard first died the 6th of April and count
described the King's money in the King's palace

Capitule
King Richard first died the 6th of April and count
described the King's money in the King's palace

Capitule
King Richard first died the 6th of April and count
described the King's money in the King's palace

Capitule
King Richard first died the 6th of April and count
described the King's money in the King's palace

Of the quene of gloucester his sheweth
 of the puruance of Oxford ca c l viii
 Of the rege of hertford & his gmeilmen Ten dishes
 and by counsell of the bishps and how they had the Duke
 gynn ca l x
 The prophete of muelyn of King Henry the first King
 Johannes son ca c l x
 Of King Edward King of Wales son ca c l xi
 How the pene daughter of the Welsh prince of Wales. And
 the brother of the king of manchester was taken by the
 Capitul ca l xii
 How the Welsh by the coming of David his brother made the
 against King Edward ca c l xiii
 How David the Welsh brother prince of Wales was put to
 death ca c l xiiii
 How King Edward dismissed his Justices & clerks & how
 the Jews were put out of England ca c l xv
 How King Edward was seized in all the land of Scotland
 by assent of all the lords of the same
 Capitul ca l xvi
 How the John lord of Buchan his homage for Scotland &
 the Thomas Turkelville
 Capitul ca l xvii
 Of the conquest of Wales in Scotland ca c l xviii
 How King Edward killed the Scots out of prison and
 how they were sent to the fens by the will of William
 Wallace
 Capitul ca l xix
 William Wallace the first the lord of cruggathay and
 lord of Scotland ca c l xx
 The last marriage of King Edward & how he was the
 time in Scotland ca c l xxi
 The castle of Edinburgh was built ca c l xxii

the 11th of June the 11th of June
the 11th of June the 11th of June

Capitule
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June

Capitule
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June

Capitule
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June

Capitule
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June

Capitule
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June

the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June

Capitule
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June
the 11th of June the 11th of June the 11th of June

How the hugh spencer was made chamberlaine
underlegge of the king of england ca. lxxxv

How king Edward was all ruled by the spencers
Capitulo lxxxvi

How the hugh spencer and his father were exiled out of
England ca. lxxxvii

How the king exiled Thomas Earl of Lancaster all them
that helpe with him and how mortimer come and put
him to the king ca. lxxxviii

Of the siege of richhill and of the Earl of Lancaster
Capitulo lxxxix

Of the discomfiture of Burghdun
How Thomas of Lancaster was besieged at pontefract and
his lawns hanged & drawn ca. lxxxix

How king Edward went in to Scotland with an hundred
thousand men of warre and might not speere

Capitulo xc
How the Andrew of Breteche was taken & put to death by
the king Earl of Carleill ca. xc

Of the miracles that god wrought for saint Thomas of
cantuarie wherefor the doors of the priore were closed by cause no
one shold come & offer at his sepulchre ca. xc i

How the Quene Isabella went in to france for to take for
her husband the king of England & of france ca. xc ii

How king Edward sent Edward his son the prync
to in to france ca. xc iii

How king Edward exiled the quene his wyfe and Edward
his eldest son ca. xc. iiii

How king Edward by the counsaill of the spencers sent to
the prynces of france to helpe the quene Isabella and his
son Edward out of france ca. xc v

How king Edward his son the prync of Wales was
crowned at London ca. xc vi

But the world saw her other will & doted se maner and
all hir other suffres eueryone ben how so euil agen st her
bidis that it was wonder to wepe & for as moche as her
thoughts that hir husbande was nought of so he pege
minas her fadir Que charynges that her hir bidis
wolde haue chastized him with fair speche & behestes and
also by pecces & warned him in fair maner vpon all his
ue and frendship that they shold amende her leues condi-
cions but all was for nought for they didden her othe
wyl in all thynges that her liked & had of poer therfor the
xxij. charynges vpon a tyme and often tymes beten her
wifes for they wend that they wolde haue amended her
taches & her wilked the wifes but of soch condicions that
wem that for fair speche & warning they didden alle the
wifes & for beynnges of sonnes moche wem therfor the
kyng that had wedded. Albius wem the taches & con-
ditions of his wife Albius & the letter sent to. Diocli-
an hir fadir. And whan the other kynges herd that Al-
bynes lord had sent a letter to Dioclian anon they se-
cretly inselad with hir scales the condicions & the taches
of hir wifes. Whan the kyng Dioclian saw and herd so
man y playnes of his daughters he was som ashamed
& became wonder angry & wroth to ward his daughters
and thought both nyght & day yf he coughe amende it
that they so misdid. And anon sent his letter by each.
xxij. charynges that they shold come to hym & beynng wi-
th hem hir wifes eueryone at certain day for he wolde
that chastise them of their wilkardnesse yf he myght in a-
ny maner wyse. So that the kynges come all at that day
& tyme that he was seate bin vnto hym & the kyng Diocli-
an vnderfeng we moche honour & made a solompne fest
so all that wem vnder his lordship. And the thridde day
after that solompne the kyng, Dioclian sent after his

gyn. Doughters that they shold come a speke with hym in
his chāber & they sayd that they wold come to hym of hir
wilfulnesse of hir cruelte & disproul & he wroth & wroth
naght he said that of they wold nat be chastised they shold
be his hure life for evermore. And whē the ladies herd all
this thing becom abashed & schēd & to hir fadre they
seyd that they wold make all amendes & so they departyd
out from hir fadres chāber & dame Albynne that was
the eldest suster had hem all to hir chambere & she made wi
th all that was thereynne so that no lye was amōge hem
but she and hir susters yf. The said this Albine my fair
susters well be lio when that the kynng our fadre be
hath wroth & schēd and disproul for encheson to make
be obediente to our husbands but wretche that shall
I neuer forgiue that I knowe that I am come of amōre
hir kynge whē that mynne husband is. And when she
had thus said all hir susters said the same. And she said
albyne full well I wote that our husbands
have plyned to our fadre upon be wretche he hath
be thus foul reproved and disproul whē for susters my
counsaill is that this nyght when our ho: shoud be a
bedde all be with out assent curten hir chawes and that
they may be in pres of hem and better be mo be doo this
thing. Under our fadres power than elles. When Rnd a
none all the ladies consented & graunted to this counsaill
And when nyght was com the brides & ladies went to
bedde & anon as hir bedes were Alse they were all hir
husbands chawes. And so they shewen hem all whenne
that. Dioclesian the kynng her fadre herd of this thing
he becom ful of wroth agens his doughters and anon
he wold hem all have bren. But all the barons & her
des of surre wylked not so for to so such sternesse the
him o wnes doughters but only shold be with the land of

him for evermore so that they new shold come againe. And
so he dyde. And Diochisian that was his sadde anone
commaunded him to gone in to ship and deliuered to him
vitaillies for half a yere And when this was done all the
sustren went in to the ship and sailed forth in the sea and
broke all his frendes to Apolyn that was his god And
so longe they sailed in the see till at the last they come and
arrived in an yle that was all wyl dernesse And when da
me Albvne was come to that lond & all his sustres this
Albvne went forth out of the ship and said to his othis
sustres For as moche quod she as I am the oldest suster of
all this companie and first this land have taken and for
as moche as my name is. Albvne I will that this lond
be called Albvion after myne owne name. And anone
all his sustren graunted to him with a good will. Tho
went out all the sustres of the ship and toke the land.
Albvion as his suster called it And after they went by
to wne and fonde neither man ne woman ne child but wil
de bestes of diuerse kyndes And when his vitaillies wh
re dispende and him failed they fedde him with herbes
and frutes in season of the yere and so they lived as they
best myghte and after that they toke flesh of diuerse
bestes and became wonder fast and so they desired mannis
companie and mannis kynde that him failed and for he
re they wogen wonder comions of kynde so that they &
sired men mannis companie then any othis solace or mite
the when the deuel that perceyved and went by diuerse con
ceits and nomme body of the air and all kynde Natures
shad of men and come in to the land of Albvion and
lay by too wyemen and shad the natures vpon him and
they conceived after they broght forth Geantez of the wi
ch one me calle. Gogmagog and an othis langhengang
so they were nempned by diuerse names and in this man

ner the some force and was done horrible grante in Al
byon and the dwelled in caves and in hilles at his Will
and had the lande of Albion as him liked by to the tyme
me that Grece arrived and come to Cornesse that was
the pt of Albion and ther this Grece conquered and se
ficed the grante about said

Here endeth the prolog of Albion that the was
an Ile and her keneth now. how. Brute was goten
and how he slowe first his moder & after ward his
fadre and how he conquered Albion that after he ne
pned Britaigne after his owne name that now is
called England after the name of Engist of Saxo
me

Capitulo primo

In the noble Cite of grece Troye ther was a no
ble kynghe & a man of grece poer that was cal
led Eneas Wher the Cite of Troye was lost
and distroied thurgh hem of Grece this Eneas
as with all his myght fledde thens and come in to lumb
ardie that the was hie and governour of that land a
kyng that was called Laetyne. And an othir kyng the
was that was called Turcolyne that strongly berred
pon this kyng laetyne that often tymes did hym moche
harne And when this kyng laetyne herd that Eneas w
as comen he vnderfong hym with moche honour & hym
wyth hote for as much as he had herd of hym and wist
well that he was a noble kynghe and a worthy of his bo
dy and of his dres This Eneas helpe kyng Laetyne in his
war & shortly for to the so well and worthely he did that
he shold Turcolyne and discomfited hym and all his pe
ple And when all this was done kyng Laetyne gaf all
that lande that was Turcolynis to. Eneas in mariage

Wpeth luyne his daughter the most fair creature that ani
man wist and so they lived to gedre in Joye and miche
all hir lyfes tyme And after he wedded a wyfe and wpo
hir he begate a sone that was called Silueyne & this Sil
ueyne whan he coude some wson of man by witing hies
dre and apenst his Will acquyneed with a damisell that
was co sin to luyne that was kyng Latynes daughter
the quene that was Eneas wife and brought the damisell
with child And whan Ascanus his fadre it wist ano
ne let enquer of the wisest mastres & of the grettest clers
thes what child the damisell shold bring forth & they ensur
wed and seid that she shold bring forth a sone that shold
quelle bothe fadre & moder and so he did For his moder
died in bering of hym And whan this child was borne
his fadre let calle hym Brute And the mastres said that
he shold do mo. h. harme & sorwe in many diuerse places
after he shold come to grette honour & wurship This kyng
Ascanus deide whan good wold and silueyne his sone
assayed the land and made hym wonderlich well bel
ued amonge hir peple And whan Brute that was Sil
ueynus sone was .xv. yers old he went vpon a day w
th his fadre for to pley and solaw as this Brute shold
stee vnto an hert his ar we myschapped and glad and
so thew Brute quelled his fadre.

How Brute was driuen out of the land and how
he held hym in grece. Capitulo secundo

And whan this mischance befall was the peple of
the lande made sorwe & no we And wem sore
an angred and for enche son therof they driuen.
Brute once of the lande and wold nat suffer hym amon
ges hem and he saugh that he must no abide and we fro

thus in the grend and the fonde vij. M. men that we
of the kinage an kyned of Troie that were come of gre
ce ldd as the storie telleth as of men and womē and chil
dren which were all holden in thraldome and bondage of
the kyng Pandrus of grece for the tith of achi lls that
was burredg shynat troie This Bruce was a won
der fair mē and a stronge and huge of his age and of glad
cheer and semblant and also worthi of bodei and was wel
beloued among his ppl. This kyng Pandrus herd spe
ke of his goodnesse and his condicions and auone made
hym duell wyth hym so that Bruce bicomē wonder pri
ued & moche schuld wyth the kyng so the long tyme Bru
ce duelled wyth the kyng So at the last they of Troie ad
Bruce spoken to godes of kynd and of kinage and of ac
quynte and the playned hym yn to Bruce of his sor
we and of his bondage and of meny othir shames that
the kyng Pandrus had hym done and so Bruce they saiz
den vpon a tyme ye be a lord of our kinage and a strong
man and a mighte ye be our capteyn and lord and we
will bicomē your men and your comandmentz done in
all māter chnges and bynges ye be oute of this wrecche
dnesse and bondage and hige we wyth the kyng for thorgh
the grace of the grette god we schal hym ouercome and we
schul make you kyng of the ldd and so you done homage
and of you we schul helde euermore Bruce had the grete pi
ce of his bondage that they were brouht yn and praelich
went hym from the kynges cōtre and all the that were of
Troie went and put hym in the wodes and in to mōtar
gues and hym held and sent yn the kyng Pandrus
that the schold geue hym lue saullich for to wind oue of
the land for they hold no longer duelle in his lddage The
kyng Pandrus was the son annoier and the sore the
he holden hym curche and ordyned a gree poer and

Wet to Wardis hem al for to fight but Brut and his men
manliche hem defended and ferily foughten and quilled
all the kynges men that none of hem ascapd and toke the
kyng and hym helde in prison and ordeyned counsell hit
ene hem what they might done somme sayd that he shold be
put to deeth and somme sayd that he shold be gyllid ouer of
the lande and somme sayd that he shold be brent. And the
spake a wyse kynghe that was called Menynus and sa-
io to Brut and to alle of Trope of kyng Pandras
Wolde helde hym and haue his lyfe I counsell that he geue
yn to Brut that is our duety and our souerainne his
doughter Gennogen to his wyfe and in marriage with hir
an hundred schippes wold araped and all his trefour of
gold & siluer of corn and of wyne and as moche as he
needeth to haue of o thyng and o chir and than go we of
his land and ordeyne we be land elles wherfore we ne
none of our kyngd that comen after we shall neuer ha-
ue pres in this land amanges hem of Grece for we haue sla-
yne many of hir kynghees and of hir o chir fandes that
euermore wete and counsaile shold beue amanges we Bru-
te the ad alle his folke consented well to that counsaile ad
this thyng they tolde to kyng Pandras and ther for to
haue his lyfe graunted as moche as they oged and anone
paf yn to Brut Gennogen his doughter to wyfe and
the hundred scippes wiche as moche as he needd of all vi-
alles as before was ordeyned Brut the toke his wyfe and
all his men that forsoke the land of Grece and wenten
hem yn to the see and hadden wynd and weder at will
and comen the thridde day in to an Iu that was called
Lorigers Brut anone sent of his men a bond for to aspie
the maner of the countre and they founden an old Citie all
wasted and forlote that was thynne ne chir man ne wo-
man ne no thyng dwelling and in the middell of this

Thus they founde an olde temple of a faire lady that was
called Diane the goddesse and they came ager e vnto Brutus
and tolde hym what they had seene and founde and
conualled hym to come and to done sacrificie vnto Dame
Diane for she was bounde to geue answere of what thyng
that ever man prayed hir and namely vnto them
that she honoured with sacrificie Brutus went to that ym-
mage and sayd Diane noble goddesse lady that all thyng
hath in myghte and in chypoor Wyndes Waters Woodes fel-
des and all thynges of the world and alle maner bestes
hath that in bene to you I make my prayer that ye me co-
ntelle and telle what and in what place I shall haue a coue-
nable dwelling for me and for my peple and ther I shall
make in honour of you a well faire temple and a noble ther
ynue ye shall euermore bene honoured. When he had done
his prayer Diane answered in this maner Brutus quod she
goe euen forth thy way ouer the see in to fraunce to ward
the West and that ye shall finde an Ile that is called Al-
bion and that place is compassed all whiche the see and no
man may come thert. But it bene by shippes And in that
londe wher bounde to be graunte but no weie is nat so but
all wilderness and chareland is no on this stynd and or-
dined for you and for your peple.

**How Corin became Brutes man and how King
Goffars was discomfited.**

Capitulo Tercio.

Then Bruce herde this asure of Diane the goddes
anone he theke ancms wynde by a sayle in to
the his see & When he and his men had sayled xx.
dayes and moo they founden fast beside a coast of
the see a thousand men of the kynge and kinred of Trowe
and hir soueraygne hir master of all was called Corin.
And When Bruce Wiste Thunne they Were he the Indres
keng hym With moche Joye in to his sch. co and hym led
forth With hym. This Corin to become Bruces man and
to hym did frautes and homage and so longe they sayled
fort in the see till they comen in to Gasconne and anone
they arnued in the hauey of Agiers and ther they duelled
viii dayes hym for to wsten and hir sailles to amende the
that ie Was newe Tydynge some come to kyng Goffar
that Was lord of the lande so that moche folke of stran-
ge lade Wern arnued in his lade in the hauey of Agiers the
for he Was sore angred and anoped that they comen and
arnued in his lande Withoute leue and anone he ordeyned
hym a grete poer to drine ouer and to schind Bruce With
his peple but kyng Goffar Was discomfied and all his
folke and hym selfe fledde in to fraunce to seke helpe and so
cour And in that tyme agnet in fraunce xii knyghtes & the xi
assembled a grete poer for to helpe Goffar for to fight ag-
ens Bruce Goffar duelled With hym of fraunce hal feyere
and more And Bruce in the mene tyme and his companie
destroied all the lond of gasconne and led eake alle the tre-
sours that the kyng Goffar had and led bringe it in to his
scippes And this Bruce founde in that land a fair place
and a couenable and the Bruce made a fair place and a
couenable and there Bruce made a faire castell and a str-
onghe.
When that Was done kyng Goffar come
fro fraunce and xii. knyghtes With hym and broughten

xx. M. men for to fyghe With Brute and his companie &
Brute had but vij. M. and ccc. men Nochtles When the
liffes meten to gedre Brutes folk though help of hym self
& of Turpin his cosyn and of Corpn that Well and man
lich hym defendid and foug he so that in the liffes meten
had quelled of the fenshmen .ij. M. and mo and to that
Wel alque fiddin a day And in this bataill Turpin
that was Brutes cosyn was slayne and Brute let en
ter Worthily hym When he had spac & lifer in the castell
that he had made and tho he call the castell. Tours for
the name of Turpin that ther was entered & pie y to
this day ther is a noble cite that is called. Tours: When
Knyng Goffar Wist that Turpin was dede he come apen Wi
th his men and after gaf a strong bataill vj to. Brute
but Brutes And his men were so Wery of fighting that
they might no longer endure but mangre hym and all his
Brute went in to his castell With all his men and made
the gates fast for to saue hym selfe and for to take conceil
amonges hym What were best for to don e Brute and Cor
pn nōm conceil and ordeyned that Corpn priuely shold
be gone oute and buss his hym in a wod eil amorne So that
in the mornynge When Brute shold figh With his Enymies
Corpn shold come With his folke in that one side and slee
& done all the harme that he might And amornynge i the da
Wenynge Brute went out of the castell & faughe With his
Enymies & they fersele defendid but Withyn a liffel yme
Brute And his folke shold vij. c. of Goffars men tho come
Corpn fro the buschment & smete to grounde he and his
companie all that wolde stonde or abide so that Knyng Gof
far and his folk were discomfited and fast they gune to
fle. And Brute and Corpn With his companie fersele
thay hym poussued and quelled

led of mo hem in the slayng ehan they dyen i batails And
in that maner Bruce had the victorie and nachles Bru
ce made moche sorwe for his cosyn Corpn that ehen was
slayne and for othe also that he had lost of his men that
is to seyn. vii. c. and xv. the which nobely he let encier i
the castill of Tones the that he had entred Turpn his
cosyn

How Bruce arrived at Tottenesse in the yle of
Albion and of the batall that was bituene Corin
and Gogmagog Capitulo quarto

Then all this was done Bruce wolde no longer
ther duells for to fight ne no mo lise of his pe
ple for kyng Goffarus wylde myghte euery day
encusse mo and mo And Bruces lassen and the
for he toke all his men & went vñ to the sei & had Wynd
and Weder at Wyll and the fiftthe day after Ward they
arrived in an haven at Tottenesse and comen in to the
Ile of Albion and ther founde neethir man neethir wo
man as the storie telleth but Geanez and they woned i
hilles and in caues Bruce saw the land was fair and
at his klyng and good also for hym and for his folk as
Diane the goddesse had hym behighe Tho was Bruce wo
der glad and late assemble vpon a day all his folke to ma
ke a solympe sacrifice & a grette fest in honour and true
wence of Diane the goddesse thurgh whos counsaill he was
comen in to that land And when they had hir solympe
re made as they vpon a day late at mite they comen in vñ
pon hem sodenly. xxx. Geanez & qñed of Bruces men. xxx.
Bruce & his mē anone sturte vñ & foughte with the ge
ar & qñed hem euenich but one goat that was master of

all that was called Gogmagog that was stronger and
er than day of the othir Geantz & Bruce kept hym &
saue his leg for enchison that he shold wastell with Co
ryn for Coryn was gat and hier than any of. Brutes
men from the gerdelstede vp ward. Gogmagog and
Coryn undertoke for to wastell yn pfer & so to gedre
they wastell longe tyme but at the last. Gogmagog held
Coryn so fast that he brak h. ribbes of his s. x. wherfor.
Coryn was sore angry & tolke tho. Gogmagog hit wene
his a. mes & cast hym downe vpon a weke so that. Gogma
gog brak all to peeces & so died an euell deeth and therfor
the place is called yet vn to this day the saute of. Gog
magog And tho yaf Bruce all that contre to Coryn and
Coryn it called after his name Corne Waille & his men
he called Corne Wails and so shull men of that contre be
ne called for euermore And in that contre duelled Co
ryn & his men and made counes & houses & inhabited the
land at hir Wyll.

How Bruce made london & called this lande.
Bretaigne and Scotland Albine & walys Cambrie
Capitulo quinto.

Ruce and his men wenten forth and saue a
boner in diuerse places wher they myghe fynde
a good place and couenable that they myghe
make a cite for hym and for his folke So at
the last they comen by a fair Riuer that is called the
Thames & thar Bruce bigg a fair cite & he calle it niue

Trope in wynde and remembrance of the grete Trope from
Whiche place all hir linage was comen. And this Bruce
let fall a doune wordes & let erpe and so the landes and do
ne moche mede for sustenance of hym and of his peple & he
departed the land to hem so that euerichon of them had a
certain place for to dwelle vpon. And Bruce let calle all
this lande. Bretaigne after his owne name & his folk he
let calle. Bretons And this Bruce had gotten an his wi
fe Beunage. iij. soens that were worship of dedes the first
was called Llewelyn the seconde Albanac & the thrid Ham
ber And Bruce bare corone in the cite of ne the Trope.
xx. yere after tyme that the cite was made & after he ma
de the lawes that the Bretons holden And this Bruce
was wonderly well beloued among all men & princeso
nes also loued wonderly wel to gedre And when Bruce
had sought all the londe in length & in berte he fonde a lan
de that joined to Bretaigne in the north and that land
Bruce gaf to Albanac his sone and let calle it Albanie
after his name that now is called. Scotland And Bru
ce fonde an othir countre to ward the West and that gaf to
Camber his othir sone & he let call it Camber after his
name & now it is called Wales And when Bruce had re
igned xx. yere as before is said he died in the cite of ne the
Trope & there his sone hym entred with moche honour.
And Llewelyn Bruces sone was crowned kynge with mo
che solemnitee of alle the lande of Bretaigne and after
when he was crowned Albanac & Camber hir. ii. brethe
ru were agen in to hir owne countre & liued with mikel
honour And Llewelyn hir brother reigned and was kynge &
gouerned the land well & wisely for he was a good man
wonder well beloued of all his land And it befell so that
Albanac dwelled in his owne lande with moche honour
and worship and thence cam

lyng Hambar of Hunland With a grette poer and arri-
ued I albane & Wolde haue quered the lād & bigā to We-
m Spā albanac and hym quelled in bataille When Al-
banac Was slayne folk of the land fled Vn to berin and
told hym for he Was kyng of. Britaigne so W that his bro-
ther Was slayne & prayed hym of helpe for to a vège his to-
thers Wch Loerrine anone he assentid all the barons of
kent of Dure in to the Wene of Northfolk & Southfolk of
Lestesen & of Lyndessey and When they Were all ensembled
they sped fast to Ward their enemies for to pene hē bataille
Loerrine had sente to Camber his brother that he shold co-
me also to hym With alle the poer that he myghte make hē
for to helpe & so he did With good Will and so they comen
all red gedres & tolde her they pteuelich for to seeke Hum-
bar Wch they myght hym fynde And so it befell that this
Humar Was besides a Watel that Was a grette Riuer With
his folk: hym for to dispoete & the come Loerrine and Ca-
ber his brother With all hir folk: so delyer that any of that
oethir Wist. And When Humbar sa W hē come he Was
sore adrad for as moche as his mē Wist it uoe and also
they Were Vn armed And anone Humbar for drede lepe
in to the Water & drenched hym selfe and so died he & his
men Were alle slayne that none of hem ascapid & cerfomif
that Water called. Humbar & euermore shal be called ehy
for trechison that lyng Humbar Was ehyr pūne drenched

And after that Loerrine Wene to his shypes vnd telde
them gold and siluer & as moche as he fand Vn to hym
selfe & all that oethir pūfry he gaf Vn to oethir folkre of
the host & they founden in one of the shypes a fair dami-
sell that Was lyng Humbar's daughter and Was cal-
led Estilde. And When Loerrine sa W hir he telde
her Wch hym for her fairnesse and for her Was odelien
With love & Wolde haue wedid her This & ydnges come

to Corin anon he thought to auenge hym vpon Lotane
For as moche as Loerne had made couenant for to spo
sen Corines daughter that was called Guentolen And
Corin in haste wene to hym In to the newetowne ad the
said to Lotane nowde artes quod he pe mward me full e
uell for all the pynes that I suffered ad haue had man
tymes for Gutes pourfader and therefore I will now
auenge me vpon yo wz and drewe his fauchon an high e
wilde haue slaghe Loerne. But the damisell wene he we
ne hem and made hem acorded in this maner that Loerne
ne shold spouse Guentolen that was Corines daughter.
And so Loerne did And neethales that he had spoused
Guentolen Corines doughter pryncely he come to Estrilde
and broughte hir with child and gate on hir a doughter
that was called Abren. The bifell anon after that Co
rin died ad anon as he was dede Loerne for soke Guen
tolen his wife and made Estrilde quene And Guentolen
wene chens all in to Corin wille ad sailed all the lande I
to hir lande for as moche as she was hir faders er and
vnderfong feaulces and homages of all the men of the
land ad after asssembled a gace bestee a greece port for to
ben vpon Loerne auenged that was hir lord ad to hym
come e pas hym a strong bataill ad ther was herel slag
ne and his me discomfited the v. pen of his wne. Guen
tolen let calle Estrilde and Abram hir doughter ad by
de bothe londes e free and cast hem in to a Water and so
they were drenched Therfor that Water was enmore
cald after abram after the name of the damisell that v
was Estrildes doughter and Englyssmen callen that
Water seuerne and Walshmen callen it abra in to this day
And when this was done Guentolen let coronne hir qu
ene of that lande and gouerned the land full wel e fast
In to the tyme that Gladston hir son that Loerne had

Rege Upon his Reue of .xx. Winter age that he myghte be
kyng so that he quene regned .v. yere and the lre she crowne
his son & he regned and gouerned the lre Wel and heno
rably & she went in to conuallie & the she dyed all
his lyfes tyme.

Of lryng madan howe he regned in pces all his
life and of menpris & of maulin his sones and howe
menpris slowe maulin his brother & howe wolnes
drou him all to pces. **Capitulo sexto**

When Madan had regned .xx. yere he died and he
leth in ne the crowne and he had ii. sones that one
me called Menpris and that other Maulin ad
the ij. hadre after his faders & he struue fast for the lande
And Menpris for enchison that he was de eldest sone wol
de haue had all that lond and Maulin wolde nat suffice
hym so that they toliken a day of buri and a corde And
at this day Menpris let quille his brother thurgh treason
and hymself afterward helde the lond and a none he
crowne hym kyng and regned and after became soliker a
man that he destroyed in a while all the men of his lond
And at the last he became so wilked and so lecherous that
he forsoke his owne wif and used the synne of sodome
ther for al myghte god was wroth and vpon hym toke
Dengearnes For on a day as he went in a wod an hounz
tyng he lost his folke and went all one vp and counece
ing after his men and the come wolkes and all to drou
hym & tomes Then he had regned .xxiii. yere and then his
pryde that he was de they made Joy y nowe and a
none make Ebeac his son kyng and he regned Wich moze
the honour.

Of Kyng Ebeac howe he conquered fraunce and bi
ga tege sones and xxiii. doughtres **Capitulo vii**

His thrac wined lxx. yere & a strong man was
and a mighty And this Ebrac thurgh his myg
ght and helpe of his barons conquered al f. lxx
and when ther so moche gold and siluer that when he co
me aye in to his lande he made a nobill cite and after his
name he calle it Ebrac that is called every tyme and this
kyng made a castell of maidenes that no tyme called Ebr
burgh This kyng had xxx. sons and xxiiij. daughters by
diuerse wyues goven and the sonnes were called as yeshu
here Bruce Breneschale Margat Seyfel Merga Bych
flanghan Gladud Jakyng Kymbat Roathm Spadogh Cor
dherl Thormnan Eldaugh Joskaghue Harbor lxx in Ro
ther haire and affaruch. And the daughters highten as
yeshu lxx after Elygny ymosen ochdas eth midhan
mailbur Omdne Cambudan Raga Renthel p Nerfi Ebr
ghan Skaldud Gladus Gberhym Abalaghe and Bla
dan and thes were the xxiiij. daughters and the barons
became good knyghtes and worthy in many contee.

Of the kyng bruce grenesheld the first sone of E
brac the kyng **Capitulo octauo**

feet the lxx of kyng Ebrac wene Bruce gones
hale his sone xxx. yere that was Ebrakes first so
ne that well and nobely wynt and when tyme came he
died and lxx at port.

Of kyng lxx

Capitulo ix.

And when Bruce grenesheld was de wened
his sone lxx lxx. yere and he made a fair towne
and he calle it karthle after his name and was
a worthy man and moche behued of his pryde and when
he had wened lxx. yere he died and lxx at karthle And
in his tyme wynt kyng Salomon in iherusale and made
the nobill tēple & the lxx came Sibelle quene of Babilon

to hie and soe p^r hie were soch that men spoken of re-
soun of the greet and noble wis and wisdom of kyng sa-
lomon and so fonde it soch that men had hie t^rll^r.

Of kyng lud ludibres that was kyng leles. **Capitulo. vii**

And after this kyng leyl reigned his sone lud luf-
dibres that made the cite of Canterbury and of
Wynchestre and he reigned vii. yere and died
and lieth at Wynchestre.

Of kyng bladud that was ludibres sene how he reg-
ned & was a good man and a nigromancer. **Ca. .xj.**

And after this lud ludibres reigned Bladud his
sone a greet nigromancer & thurgh his crafe of
nigromancie he made the newuill ouerforeth as
th^e gest t^rll^d and he reigned xxj. yere and he lieth at the
newe Croys.

Of kyng Leir & of the answeere of his yongest doughter
that graciously was mariet to the kyng of fraunce. **Ca.**

After this kyng bladud reigned leir his fader & vii
his Leir made the toun of lepesire & he called the
toun after his name & he gouerned the toun wel
& nobill. This kyng Leir had iij. doughters the first was
called Corouill the second Rigan & the thridde Corwill &
the yongest doughter was fairest and best of condicions.
The kyng his fader became and old man & wold that his
doughters were mariet er that he died. But first he thughe
to assay which of him loued hym most & best. for the that lou-
ed h^e most shold best bene mariet & he aged of the firste
doughter he w^o moche sch^e hym loued & she answered & said
betwixt th^e hie o^uer l^ese No we w^otes quod the fader that
is a greet l^ese. The aged he of the sec^od doughter he w^o moche
she hym loued & she said more passynge all the creatures of
the world & yet me for quod the fader I may no more age

And the ayed he of the chydde daughter so much she hys
loued certen fader quod she my susters haue tolde po dgh
sig wordes/bue forsoe I shall telle trouth for I hve po d
as much as I oughe to hve my fader for to bring po d
mow in certen hood I hve po d I shall po d tell/as mo
che as ye hve wordh so much I shall ye shewd The kyng
hir fader wente that she had swained hym e hrome wonder
wordh e swore by hven e erth she shold neuer haue good
of hym bue his daughters that loued hym so moste shold
hve well auaunad e married And the first daughter he
married to Maughis kyng of Scotland/and. the second he
married to lanemou Erl of Cornuall and so they ordey
ned and spake hir wene that they shold departe e ke
ame hir wene hym e wo after the dech of kyng Leir hir fa
pyn so that Cordyll his ionghst daughter shold no tynge
haue of his land/bue this Cordyll was wonder faire and
of so good condicions and maners that the kyng of fraunce
e Algame hrd of hir spake e sente the kyng hir hir
fader for to haue hir yn to his wyfe and prynced hym this
of/and kyng Leir hir fader sente hym word that he had de
parted the londe yn to his e wo daughters and said he had
no more lande wherwith hir to marie.

And whan Algame hrd this asuer he sente anon
to leir e said that he ayed no thynge whir hir bue onely
hir chodng e hir And anon kyng Leir sente hir ouer the
see to the kyng of fraunce And he assayed hir with mo
che wur ship and with moche solmpnite hir spoused e ma
de hir quene of fraunce.

So the kyng leir was driven we of his land e hurgh
his folke and so the Cordell his ionghst daughter helpe hys
in his ned.

Capitulum xij.

Thus it fel afterward that the 13. eldest daughter
wold nat abide till leir hir fader was dede bue

Went upon hym whille that he lived and moche for he
and shame hym did therfor they benedicte hym holp che to
palme & he went hym had ordeyned that one of hym shold
have lyege hit to piden all his life tyme with yf. Lurgh
as & sayers that he mighte wryte fully goe & ride whis
te that he wold in to that countre that am liket to play &
to folow. So that Manoglas kyn of Sweland had kyn
hit which hym i the maner as is above said goe othir hys
lf yet he passed Cornepe that was his eldest daughter
& quene of Sweland was so auopet of hym and of his
pys that anone she and hit lord spake to gedre therfor his
Lurghen half and his sayers from hym wex gone and
nomo life but only yf. and whiche was done hit be
gan for to make moche for he for enche for that his estate
was impyred And men had of hym more scorne and des
pise then euer they had before therfor he wist was for to
done and ad the last thought that he wold wende in to Cor
newaill to Rigan his othir daughter And. When he was
cometh to Erle and his wif that was hitis daughter hym
welcomed and with hym moche Joye and che haduelled
with yf. Lurghen & sayers And he had noughte duell
to che scarsely yij. month that his daughter of hym was
full end of his compaigne and hit lord and she of hys had
scorne and despise so that fymynglynghten they brough
ten yn to y. and after Ward. y. and so the last with hym
no moo. Tho made he for he y. no whi and said fore wepyng
Alas that euer he come in the that lond and said ye had
ne better che have duelled wim y first daughter And ano
ne benechannes to his first daughter But anone as she
sa to hym come she bore by god and his holy names and
spoke moche as she mighte that he shold have no mo whie
hym but one Lurghen yf he wold che abide Tho Rigan be
it agen wep and made moche for he and said the alas

no we to longe haue y l yued that this for we and mischief
is to me no we falle for no we am I poret that some tye
me was rich but no behau: I no fande no lye that me
wul do any good. (Que then) I was rich all men me
honoured and wshiped and no we every man had of me
sworn & despite and no we I wete well that Cordill my
poungeste daughter said me tounge then she said as mo:
che as I had so moche sheld I her beloued & alle the while
that I had good the was I beloued and honoured for my
rassie but my the daughter glosed me the and no we of me
the seete lieth pris and for to lde me Cordill but I
wold nat belue it ne d wistoud and the fore I let her go
ne frow me as a thing that I seete lieth pris of and no we
wote I neuer what for to done the my ij. daughters haue
me thus disapued that I so moche lued and no we moe
I nedes sechen her that is in an othe land that lightest I
let her gone frow me withoute any reward or piftes & she
said that she luet me as moche as she oughe to lue her fa:
dre by all maner of ason and the sheld be weared of her
nomow & so by her fayr be highten and thurgh her fals
speche no we haue me disapued. In this maner I her long
tyme began to make his mene and at the last he shope hys
to the see and passed ouer in to fraunce and asked and as:
pied where the Quene myght be founde and men tolde hys
that she was Qnd when he come to the cite that she was i
pauelich he sente his squier by to requeene to telle her that
her fadre was comen to her for greences. (Qnd then
the squier come to the buthe he tolde hir euery del of his sust
ere from the begynnynge by to the ende. Cordill the que:
anonh toke gold and siluer pinte and toke it to the
squier in consyde that he sheld goe cond here it by to his
fadre and that he sheld go in to a cartayn. (Cite end h m
amper lacy and wassher and then come agret to her and

being which hym an honest company of knyghtes xl. aces
left with her wyfe and than he shold sende to hir lord the
kyng and sayne that he wou comen for to speke with his
doughter and hym for to see and so he did. And when the
kyng and the quene her & that they comen with moche ho
nour they hym assayed And the kyng of fraunce also he
sent churche alle his Beame and edman. And that all me
stolde the hym he neeeddand to kyng. For the Quene sa
de i all maner of thyng as it wou to hym selfe. The kyng
For had duelled the a monthe more he tolde to the kyng
and to the Quene his doughter. he wou the woeldest dought
er had hym served. Agayne anon he he ordeyne a grette
fest of fraunce and send i to Britayne with For the que
ne fader for to conquer his land agene & his kyngdom
& Cordell also come with hir fader to Britayne for to
haue the wyame after hir fader. And ande they wou
to ship and passed the see and come in to Britayne and for
uaghen with the fildes and him somfild & quelled. And
the fader his land open & after lund in. For and he he his
royalme in ptes and after Ward died & Cordell his dought
er hym he entier with mistill honcur at his fter. —

Howe morgan and Cenedage that wou neeue to
Cordell woued Ipon hir put hir i to pris. Car. viij.

When the kyng die wou he Cordell his yeghst
doughter he he and he the land Ipon and in the
menne tyme died hir lord. Agayne the wou kyng
of fraunce and after his dech the life wou. And the cas
me Morgan and Cenedage that wou Cordell susten for
nes and to hir he Enemys for as most as the aune shol
he haue the land. So the wou he hym they ordeyne a
gutte wou and Ipon hir woued gutely. and neuer they
wou till they had hir taken and put hir by to dech. And
the Morgan and cenedage fild all the lande and dour

Finj

no we to longe haue y lpyed that this for we and meschif
is to me no we falle for no we am I porer that some eys
me was rich but no we haue I no funde no kyn that me
wuld do any good (But when I was rich all men me
honoured and wreshiped and no we every man hat of me
scorne & despite and no we I wote well that Cordill my
pougheste daughter said me tounge when she said as mo:
che as I had so moche sheld I bene beloued & alle the while
that I had good tho was I beloued and honoured for my
rassie but my two daughters glosed me the and no we of me
they seene lierell pris and forch tolde me Cordill but I
wold nat belue it ne ddristoud and therfore I let hir go
ne fro me as a thing that I seene lierell pris of and no we
wote I neuer what for to donefith my ij. daughters haue
me thus disapued that I so moche loued and no we moe
I nedre sechen hir that is in an othir land that lightest I
let hir gone fro me withoute any reward or piftes & she
said that she louet me as moche as she ought to loue hir fas
dre by allmaner ofason and tho I shold be weaxed of hir
nomow & so by hir fayr & highteen and thurgh hir false
speche no we haue me disapued. In this maner Leir long
tyme began to make his mene and at the last he shope hys
to the see and passed ouer it to fmaner and asked and ass
pied wher the Quene myght be founde and men tolde hys
wher she was And when he come to the cite that she was in
preuclich he sent his squyer by to requene to telle hir that
hir fadre was comen to hir for greenedes (And when
the squyer come to the butene he tolde hir cuery del of hir sust
ere from the begynnynge by to the ende Cordill the quene
among to the gold and silver plente and toke it to the
squier in consayle that he sheld goe and here it by to his
fadre and that he sheld go in to a cartayn (Cite end h m
aripen lacy and wasshen and than come agene to hir and

bring with hym an hundred company of knyghtes xl. arte
left with her men and than he shold sende to hir lord the
kyng and sayne that he woude comen for to speke with his
doughter and hym for to see and so he did. And when the
kyng and the quene her sawe that they comen with much
honour they hym assayed And the kyng of fraunce also let
sende church alle his Reame and commaundid that all men
shold the hym be neede and to kyng Leir the Quene sayd
in all maner of thyng as it woude to hym selfe when the kyng
Leir had dwelled ther a moneth more he tolde to the kyng
and to the Quene his doughter he woude doo eldste doughter
had hym served Agayne anon he let ordene a grette
fest of fraunce and sende i to Britayne with Leir the quene
sawd for to conquer his land agayne & his kyngdom
& Cordell also come with hir fader to Britayne for to
haue the wygme after hir faders deth And anon they woude
to ship and passed the see and come in to Britayne and for
ughen with the felens and him scorned & quelled And
tho had he his land open & after he died & Cordell his doughter
hym let enter with much honour as lastre.

So Morgaun and Cenedage that woude nedre to
Cordell werred upon hir ruc hir i to pris. Ca. xiiij.

When the kyng that was the Cordell his doughter
died and had the land by her and in the
mens tyme died hir lord Agayne that was kyng
of fraunce and after his deth she left widue And tho came
Morgaun and Cenedage that woude Cordell susten for
nes and to hir had Enprish for as moste as her aunte shold
he haue the land So that hir bene hym they ordeyned a
grette power and upon hir werred grette and neuer they
wist till they had hir taken and put hir by to deth And
tho Morgaun and cenedage seized all the lande and dyer

Biii

And he went hym And they helde it xij. yers & When the
xij. yers were gone the bigan he went hym a grete debate
so that wered stoghtly yfwe & every of hem did othe mo-
che disese For Morgan wolde haue had all the lande for he
yode hithur that Conedage helde But he come apene hym
With a serog poer so that Morga durst nat abide but fled
a wey in to Wales & Conedage pursued hym & toke hym
& quel'd hym Tho come Conedage apene seised alle the lan-
de in to his hande and helde it & regned after xxxij. yers &
the dyed and lieth at newe Trope

Ho Be Reynold that was Canedages sone regned
after his fader and in his tyme it regned elde iiij. dayes
in to lokenyng of grette dech

Capitule xv.

And after this Conedage regned Reynold his sone
a a Wyse knyght & an hardy & curteis that Well & no
hely gouerned the land & Wouder Well made hyz
Reboud of all maner of folke & in his tyme it regned elde
de that lasted iiij. dryes as god wolde & sone after the co-
me grette dech of peple for bestes without nombur of peple sa-
ughten till that the y Ven de Wherof no man myght ha-
ue lree till that almynghe god therof toke mercy & pite
& to gan it ase & this Reynold regned xxij. yers and di-
ed and lieth at york.

Ho W Gorlodian regned in yers that was reynold
his sone & after he died & lieth at york

ca. xv.

After this Reynold regned Gorlodian his sone
a xv. yers & died & lieth at york.

Ho W Gorlodian had iiij. sones & he was the one shew
that othe for to haue the heritage & he was some hit wode
quelled that othe Wherfore his land was destroyed ca. xvij

Then this Gorlodian was d & his iiij. sones that
he had becomen house and pruce and cur Wat

red to gedre for the land thate one was called Ferre and
that othir Porres And this ferres wold haue all the lād
but that othir wold nat suffer hym ferres had a felde
here and toughte churghteson to sle his brother but pres
wigh he went in to fraunce and efter abode with the kyng
Syward till vpon a tyme whan he come a yene and fau
the with his brother ferres but full euell he haped tho
for he was slayne first whyn ydmechir moder tist that por
res was dē she made gree for he for nicholen that she lo
ued hym more than that othir & toughte hym for to quells
le preuely and preuely she come to hir scene I han a night
with ij knyghtes and the with cutte his elwre and the bot
dy also into small piēs who herd ever such a caused moder
that quelled with hir o the bonde hir o the scene and lōz
ge tyme after laste the reproue and shame to the moder
thae for enche son of that one sone murdrid that o the
and so lost hem booth

Bo viij. kyngis courtesly helde all Britayne and
which bene hir name. capitul p viij

W hen the i Bo Brethryn were so dē thep nad le
helpynd hym nechir sone ne doughter ne nōe othir
of the kynged that myghte haue the heritage and
for as moch as the strengist men driuen and scōfied the
feldest and tolen all hir landes so that in every contere thep
had gree were and streife And it hym but among all es
the chynge the were amanges hem in the contere that
ouercome all to othir and thurgh hir strengthe and myghte
they tolen all the landes and inry of hym toke a gytyn
conter and in his contere he calle hym kyng and one of
hem was called Gwair and he was kyng of Scotland
and that othir was called Da Wallier and he was kyng
of begeres of all the lād that was letimus that was

Rudak son the third Was called Rudak he Was kyng
of Walys and the iij. Was called chery and he Was kyng
of corne Walle But this chery shold haue had all the lan
de by ryson for that Was no man that Wist none so rightful
hir as he Was But they that Weren strengthie for to fight by
hem that Weren of lesse estate and that for this chery had no
more land among hem than corne Walle.

Of kyng Donelane that Was cherys sone and so
he had Wonne the land

Capitulum.

O Donelane had a sone that Was called Donelane
that after the deith of his fadre became an hardy
man and a fair & curteis so that he passed all the
kynges of Britaigne of fraunce and of Wormalle And a
none as he Was knyght he Wist well Whan that his fadre
liued he Was moost rightfull heyr of all the lande and
shold haue had by ryson but othir kynges that Weren of
more strengthe than he in hande. he in his lande And af
ter ward this Donelane ordeigned by power and by force to
quere all the lande of loggys & after he Wold haue con
quered all Scotland & Walys & scater came with his
men and yaf hym battail and Rudak come agayn with his
Walshmen for to helpe hym but so it befell that Rudak
Was queld and scater also in playn battail & so Donelane
had the victorie and conquered all the lande and he
maintained it in pce & in quiete that neuer before it Was
so well mayntened.

So the Donelane Was first kyng that ever had a
croune of golde in Britaigne

Capitulum.

The Donelane let make hym a croune of golde &
Ward the croune vpon his hed as now kyng doo
for & he ordeigned a statute that had a man donelane
so moche harm & he myght do to the reyl shold neuer by
misdo but gone cheryn sauf & in pce & after gone to the

any barne and yf any man see any bonde vpon hyz he shal
sholdr lise his life And this Donelant made the counse of
Malmesbury and the counse of the Bise And when he had
fynz Bel & Worthely yf. yet the died & leech at ne we trope
Howe Brenne and Belyn departed his wene hym
re land after the dech of Donelant his fader & of the dech
re.

(Capitall. xxj.)

And after that this Donelant was de his sonnes
that he had departed the land his wene hym as his
fader had ordeyned for that Belyn his eldest son
he had all the dech of Breton this half hambar & his brother
Brenne had all the land from hambar vnto scotland but
for as moche that Belyn had the best part Brenne ther for
was Broth & Wolde had more of the land & Belyn his
brother Wolde graunte hym no more ther for contell and
wene arse his wene hene hym & wo But Brenne the ioughe
brother had no myght ne strength apens Belyn and therfor
Brenne thurgh counail of his folk went forth in to nor
wey to resyng Olfinges & praid hym of helpe & socour for
to conquer all the land vpon Belyn his brother vpon that
counail that he Wolde haue his daughter to wyfe and the
kyng Olfinges hym graued Belyn auone & his brother
was go to nor wey he fased in to his hounde all lande of nor
thumber land and toke all the Castelles and let hem arma
ye & kepe de costes of the see that Brenne shold not arnue i
no side but that the wel take (The kyng of luges lre alle
ble a grace tof & deliuerd his daughter to Brenne & all the
had ordeynz & this day till sampe had lōge tyme lued a
kyng that was callz guelage & to hyz she tolde all her con
will how that Brenne shold her haue & his lde with hiz for
euer more & so he shold lise her but that she might forsake
Brenne And when Guelagh had herd this ordeynz he
say for to aspis Brenne with as many shippes as he

he myghte haue so that the ij. shippes metten to gedre a long
tyme foughten so that Brenne and his shippes turned aye
ne and were discomfited And kyng Guelagh toke Samp
mye & putte hit in to his shippe & Brenne shamefully flye the
nes as a man discomfited And Gnelagh wolde haue we
in to his owne contrabute the come by vyhy magne tem
pest that v. dayes lastid so that inough that tēpest he was
driven in to Britaigne With iij. shippes and no mo And
tho that he becomfited of the see token Gnelagh and Samp
e and all his folke and hym presented to Gelyn and he
hyn putte him in to prison

How Gelyn drofe out of his lande kyng Guelagh
of Drumake and Gamp C. xxij

It was not longe after that Brenne he come aye
ne With a grete nauye & sente to his brother Gelyn
Gelyn yf. he shold yeld open his lande the his wife
and to his folke and his costleres also or elles he wolde de
stroye his lande Gelyn made no thynge his maner and
wolde no thynge done after that he said Wherfore Brenne
come With his folke & foughte With Gelyn & Brenne was
discomfited and his folke slayne & hymself fledde With
xij. men in to swana And the Gelyn that was Bren
nes brother Wene tho to porke and toke counseill what he
myghte done With kyng Guelagh for kyng Guelagh promys
ed to become his man and to holde his lande of hym yeldi
ng bi yere a thousand pounde of siluer for euermore and
for sikernesse of this counaunte to hold Gnelagh shold
bring hym good festages and to hym shold done homage
all his folke And yf shold I bea vpon the folke that the
counaunte shold neuer bene broke ne falsed Gelyn
tho by counaill of his folke graunted hym his oyyng
And so Guelagh become his man and Gelyn vnder
feng of hym his homage by othe and by writting

the same covenants And upon these covenants Rynghus
sagh nōme sampt & his folke & whne thens & turned a
pen to Denmark Evermore after Wem the covenants holde
& the erunge paid til the tyme that sonelke Was lving of
Denmark & also of this land thurgh his Wif Gildburgh
thae he has spoused for she Was the right heir of this land

This Gelyp duelled tho in ptes & Wurschippfully hez bel
de among his barons & he made iij. wal Weyes one from
the Est into West & thae Was called Waelpugstwee and a
oether froz thenorth Un to the south thae Was called Jhel
mestrete & ij. oether Weyes he made in lossenge thurgh oure
the lande thae on is called fosse and thae oether fosse dike
and he maintained Wel the good la Wess thae Donebat his
fadre had made & ordeyned in his tyme as bifoze is said.

So the accord Was made bet Wene Brene & Gelyp
thurgh Cornellen his moder.

Capitule xxij.

Kenne thae Was Gelyps brother had long ey
me duelled in fraunce and ther had conquered a
gute lirdschipp thurgh mariage For he Was duke
of Burgoyne thurgh the doughter of ee dukese Wpyn thae
he had spoused thae Was right heyr of the lande & this
Brene ordeyned a grete poer of his folke and also of fra
nce and come in to this land for to fygge With Gelyp his
brother and Gelyp come apens hym Wit a gute poer of
bretons and Wol tho haue geuen hym batall bi e hir mo
der Come Wenne thae tho liued had herd thae thae one br
oether Welde haue destroyed thae oether and Wene he Wene
his soner and hem made accorded which moche wyne so
thae at the last tho ij. bretheren With michell blis Went
to gedre in to gute Trope thae no We is called London and
ther thei duelled a yere and after they nōme hir counsell
for to gone conquere all fraunce and so they diden and
brene Wuntes

and destroyed the lande boeth in lengthe & bryd & the kyng
 of fraunce payd hym lincail which his port was he was o:
 uerred & payd cruage. In to belyn & to his brother. And
 after that they went forch to Rome & conquered Rome
 & all lūbardie & Germanie & toke homage & feaulte of Et
 the Barons & of all othir & after thei come in to this lande
 of Britaigne & duelled with Britons hit in Iope & wif &
 the made Brenne the towne of Busto Be & hit he went ouer
 to his owne lordship & the duelled all his life & belyn
 duelled at ne the Trope and the he made a fair gate that
 is called Belyngegate after his owne name & when this
 belyn had agned uelky vij. yere he died & lych at ne the
 Trope.

The kyng Cornlaerus quilled the kyng of Sum: ell
 for echson that he wold not pay hym his cruage. ca. xxiiiij
After this belyn agued his sone cornlaer
 a good man & a worthy & the kyng of Denmarke
 wold not paye hym his cruage that is to sey a
 M. pound as he had sworne by oth for to paye & also by
 weiring accorded to belyn his fader wherfor he was euell
 payed & worth & assembled a gret host of Britons & went
 to Denmarke & slo the kyng Guelagh & bruzt the land
 in subiection all ne the & toke of folke feaulte & homages
 & after went ayne in to his land and as he come fore by
 Qallieney he fonde xxx. shippes full of men & women & hit
 the host of the see & the kyngayed what they were. An erle
 that was mastir of a mall courtisly ansured In to the
 kyng and said that they were galled oute of spayne and so
 that they had traualled half a yere & mor i the see to Wi
 et of they myghte fynde any kynge I any lande that of hem
 wold haue pite or mei to yeme he any lād I any pedet ther
 in they myghte duelle & haue rest & become his liege men &
 the hym wold done hoage & feaulte. Whyles that he lued.

and to his hires after hym & hym and of his hires fol-
low that land And when the kyng this herte he had
of hym and gave him an yll all wilfulnesse that the
man was dwelling saufe only wylde bestes and the Eek
chanked moche the kyng and become his man & did him so
mage and fauour and while all his folke and were in to the
same yle and the Eek was called Iudamal & after for he
called the land Ireland after his owne name The kyng
Cormacrus come agene in to this land & reigned xxv
yere & after he died and lieth at nebbe Trope.

How the kyng Gueneholen reigned in goodnesse &
well gouerned the land all his lifes time C. xxvi
And when Cormacrus was ded reigned Guene-
holen his sone a man of good condicions & wel be-
haved & he gouerned the land Well & wysly & he
reigned xxv yere & after died and lieth at nebbe Trope.

How kyng seifell reigned & well gouerned the lān-
de after Gueneholen C. xxvii
And after this Gueneholen reigned his sone seif-
ell Well & wysly and well gouerned the land
as his fadre had done before hym & he reigned xxv
yere and died and lieth at nebbe Trope.

How kyng regnered after seifell his fadre & he be-
gate howan that reigned after C. xxviii
And after seifell reigned his sone kyng regnered Well &
nobely wyse & in pax & howan his sone regnered
and died and lieth at nebbe Trope.

How kyng Mor with died thurgh mischaunce
thurgh a beest for his wilfulnesse C. xxix

After this Ho was wigned mor rich & become wikk
er & softerne til at the last grete vengeaunce come
to hym for as he went vpon a tyme by the se shir
e he met a grete best that was black & horrible & hideous
he wene that he had fene a whale of ee sing bene an aze
balastre & wold haue slayn that best with a quail but he
myghte not smyte hym And when he had shot all his quail
relles the best anon come to hym in a grete haste & hym de
uoured a life & so he died for his wikkennesse thurgh venge
unce of god after that he had wigned is. ym

Of Grandobodia that was mor withs sone that
made the toun of Cambridge. **Capitula xxix.**

After this mor with was & the Britons called
Grandobodian his sone & this Grandobodian long
tyme wigned in goodnesse & made temples & tounes
& this Grandobodian made the toun of Cambridge & the
toun of Grauntham & was well schoued of riches wex
for he honoured the rich and helpe the poor This Grandob
dian had iiii. sones Arthogail, Esidur, Eganus & Pri
tior & when he had wigned xj. yere he died & lieth at nes
se Trope.

Of Artogail that was Grandobodianus sone
how he was made kyng & lieth put a deunce for his
wikkednesse **Capitula xxx.**

After Grandobodian wigned his sone Arthogail
like v. yere & he become so wikkid & so fierne that the
Britons wold not suffre hym to be kyng but yea tyme
made Esidur his brother kyng & he beede so good & meiable
that me his called kyng of yere and xlv. he had reigned v.
yere he had so grete pite of his brother Arthogail that
was kyng before & anon he forsoke his dignite & toke his
brother the crowne ayne & made hym kyng & yens all the
Britons Will And after ward Arthogail become so good

of condicions that he was wel belubed of all the Land so
he became so honourable & for he did righe & iustice to all ma
ner of men & he reigned vij. yeres & died & lieth at gratkam
Hon. Hefidur was made King after the deeth of Ge
togr & his brother

Capitulum xxxj.

After the deeth of archogail the Britons crowned &
other kynnes Hefidur sue his ij. brethren Hygas
nus & preieur hadde of hym gode & pice and the
fornie & ordeyned hem helpe for to werre vpon the King
his brother & so they taken hym & put hym in to prison the
fynne yere of his wyngne & they departed all Britaigne bi
the were hem both but Hygamus leyd but vij. yeres and the
had preieur all the land & he made the toun of Wykeryng
So he & Britons nomen Hefidur one of prisyn and
made hym King the thridde yere

Ca. xxxij.

Now when this preieur was dede Britons nome ano
ne yere Hefidur & made hym King the thridde yere &
the reigned he in yere xliij. yeres & after he died and lieth at
So he yere xliij. Kinges reigned

Harlike

in yere xliij. after the deeth of Hefidur ca. xxxiiij

After the deeth of Hefidur reigned xxxiiij. Kinges
very after other in yere & Wichond aung long way
eg) shall tell hym all & so we long tyme of hym reig
ned as the storie telleth the first King of xxxij. was call
ed Gerlodia & he reigned xij. yeres & after hym reigned Mor
gan ii. yeres and after hym reigned Cighnus vij. yeres &
after hym reigned Lodoalan viii. yeres & after hym reig
ned Rohugo xi. yeres And after hym reigned Woghen xiii.
yeres & after hym reigned catillixd yeres & after hym reigned por
up ii. yeres after hym reigned charyn xii. yeres & after hym reigned
Sulgenus iiii. yeres And after hym reigned Elvad xx.
yeres And after hym reigned Andragu xviii. yeres And
after hym reigned Orian v. yeres and after hym reigned

Cj

Elud ii. pere And after hym reigned Eldogan x. pere
 And after hym reigned Clatan xii. pere And after hym reigned
 Quirgann & Dii pere And after hym reigned Morta
 Vi. pere And after hym reigned Eldogh iii. pere And
 after hym reigned Capth j. pere And after hym reigned
 Genh. pere And after hym reigned Desall & kyng Blud
 xxii. pere And kyng Tabred xi. pere & Archibail xiiii.
 pere And Cwll xxx. pere And Rodingu xxxi. pere he
 re V. pere And Hampie vi. pere And Carpour vii. pere
 And Diguail iii. pere And Samuel xxiii. pere & Rede is
 pere & Ely vii. moneths & this ely had iii. sones lud cassi
 balam & enempon

How Elud was made kyng after the dech of Ely his
 fadre

After the dech of Ely reigned lud his sone & gouer
 ned well the land & mosse honoured good folk &
 tempred & amende wicked folk This lud bued
 more to dwelle at Trope than any othe place of the lād
 therfor the name of ne the Trope was left & so was the
 cite walled ludstone But the name is changed churyg
 riance of lter and now is called london & this kyng made
 the cite a fair gate & called it ludgate after his name &
 the folk of the cite here it Andree & Wahan he had reigned
 xi. pere he & his and kech at london & he had ii. yongh sones
 Audraghe & Cormac but they wold ne his pite nego for
 yonghe & therfor the britouns coud a strōgh kynghe that
 was called lud that was Cassibalam & wiche & was hys
 kyng of Britaigne

How the britouns graunted to cassibala that
 was lud's brether the land whos tyme Julius ces
 sar come twyes for to cōquere the lād

After the dech of kyng lud reigned his brether cas
 sibalā & he was a good mā & mosse & bued of

His brithers so that for his goodnesse & merites they gathered
 hym the Reame for evermore to hym & to his heirs & the
 kyng of his goodnesse he let nonysse Botchelych bothe sones
 that were his brithers & after made chertyl sones erle
 of Corne Wall & the othir erle of London Wylliam the
 kyng Cassibalam agreed wome Iulius Cesar that was Em
 perour of Rome in to this land with a poire of romayns &
 Wolfe haue had this land & church strenght. But Cassibala o
 uercome hym & battelle church helpe of the briede & drofe
 hym out of this land & he went agene to Rome & asssembled a
 grette poire an othir tyme & come agene in to this land for to
 geue battelle to Cassibala but he was discomfited church stre
 ght of the briede & church helpe of the erle of Corne Wall &
 the erle of London his brother & church helpe of Gudyan
 kyng of Scotland & wilband kyng of north Walys & of Bri
 tainn kyng of south Walys & in this battell was slayn & that
 was Cassibala's brother wherefo he made moche for we and
 so went Iulius Cesar out of this land with a few of roma
 yns that were left a litle And the Cassibalam went agene to
 London & made a feste by the all his folk that the had hym
 helpe & when that feste was done ech man went to his owne
 Of the debate that was bitwene he conere
 Cassibalam & the erle of London and at the truage
 that was paid to Rome Ca: xxxvi

And after is shewed thus by a day that de geiril
 me of the kynges household & geiril me of the erles
 household of London after mete were in fere for to play
 & curgh what that was among hym Euelyn that was the
 erles cosyn of London queld Iunglas that was the kynges
 cosyn wherefor the kyng wore that euelyn shold be here sen
 ged but the Erle of London that was euelyns broder wold
 nat suffre wherefor the kyng was wroth to wend the er
 le & thought hym disloyal & pryncely the erle sent lres to Ju

thus asat that he shold come to his land for to helpe hym
and hym avenge vpon the kyng and he wolde helpe hym
wiche all his myght And when the yroure hithe this tyme
dyng he was full glad & ordeyned a strongh poer & come
againe the thrid tyme in to this land & the erl of London
halp hym wiche viij. men & at the drit tyme was Cassi-
sibula ouercome & discomfited & made pree to the Emper-
rou: for iij m. punde of siluer geldyng bi yea for truage
for this land for euermore half a yea passed the Emper-
oure to Rome & the Erl of London wiche hym for he durst
noth abide in this lond & after cassibala was wged y vij.
in yea & the died he the y vij. yere of his tyme & lies
th at yerk

Howe lordes of the lande after the deth of cassibala
for encheson that he had none heir made Andragen
kyng Ca. xxx. vii.

After the deth of Cassibala for as moche as he had
a non heir of his body the lordes of the land by con-
assent crooned Andragen erl of cornwall & mar-
te hym kyng & he tigned wel & worthily & was a good
man & well gouerned the land & when he had reigned viij
yere he dyed & lies at London.

Of hymbalayn that was Andragens sone a good
man & wel gouerned the land Ca. xxxviii.

After the deth of Andragen wged hymbalayn his
a sone that was a good man & well gouerned the
lande & moche prosperite & pree all his lifes tyme & i his tyme
me was bozne Ihu crist our sauour of that I with Virge
Glanc This kyng hymbalayn had ij. fens Guider & Gra-
moger good knyghtes & worthily & when this kyng hymbal-
ayn had wged xxij. yere he dyed & lies at London

Of kyng Gynder that was hymbalayns sone that
wolde nat pay the truage to Rome for the land that Cas-

first had graunted & so he was slayne of amayne ca-
nd after the dech of this kynghdom
wound Gyndar his sone a good man & a worth
e he was of so high hert that he wolde nat paye to Rome
that treuage that kyng Cassibala had graunted vnto Ju-
lius Cesar wherfor the Empour that was tho that was
called Claudius Cesar was sore annoyed & ordeyned ager
to puer of Romayne & come in to this land for to cōquer the
treuage thurgh strange he haue it of the kyng but the kyng
Gynder & Remage his brother gadred a grette host yfere
of Britons & pefe lanchels to the Empour Claudius & quel-
led of Romayne grette plete the Empour had after ward
one that was called Hamon that saide that his peple wa-
re fast slayne pūelich he caste a wey his othere armes & to
he the armes of a de Briton & armed hym with his ar-
mour & come in tho the battelle to the kyng & said in this ma-
ner Sir be ye good of hert for goddis lue for the Roayns
eate hene your enemies anone shull be slayne & discōfited
euer yfson the kyng gaf no hepe he wward to his speche
for encheson of the armes that he had vpon hym & went
it had bene a Briton but the traitour euer helde hym neye
the kyng & pūelich vnder the shulders of his armes he
smote the kyng wherfor he was dede & fell dūne to the er-
th. Whā Remage saide his brother dede he caste a wey his
armes & toke to hym his brothers armes & come in to the
battelle amōge the Britons & had hym hertely for to fight
and fast by a dūne the romayne and for the armes they
be: & it had be kyng Gynder that erst was slayne thoe
they list not chine gon the Britons hertely fight and quel-
led the Romayne so at the last the Emptour forsoke the
felde and fledde as fast as he myght with his folke in to
the cite of Wynchestre and the fals traytour hamon that
had quelled the kyng fast anone gaf for the flai with all the

ger tho Was kyng and gouerned the land Well & nobely
all his lyfes tyme and this Ermager goot a sone on his
wyfe that called Was Westmer and whyles that this ar-
mager reigned seint peter dwelled in Antioche & after he ma-
de a noble church in which he sat first in his chur and ther
in he dwelled vij. yers and after he Wene to Rome & Was
made pope till that New the Emperour let hym marrye
& tho preached openly all the apostles in diuerse landes the
next sayth And When Ermager had reigned. xxiiij. yers
he died & lieth at london.

Howe kyng Westmer gaf to Beringer au yland
for that thes Beringer made the toune of bere
wike.

C. xli.

And after this Ermager reigned his sone Westmer
a good man & a worthy of a Wylgounered the
Lays. Hie befell so that eydynge came to hys on a day that
the kyng Rodolph of goswine Was come in to his land Wi-
th a longe number of peple and Was dwelling in staines
mora And When kyng Westmer herde the eydyngeas he let
assemble an huge host of Britens and come to the kyng
wduke & gaf hym bataill & kyng Westmer queld wduke
with his owne handes in playne bataill And When kyng
wdukes men sawe that his lord Was dede they yolden hem
all Vnto the kyng Westmer & bicomen his men for ener-
more and he gaf hem Brecon that Was forliten Wht in
they myght duelle & chidder they Wene & duelled them all
for yhis tyme and. iij. men them Wene of hem & nomo
left of that bataill. Hie gouernour and prince Was cal-
ed Beringer and a none he biga a toune that they might
ther in dwell and haue wstorte & let calle the toune Ber-
wike By & Wde & ther they duelled & became rich but they
had no women amonget hem & the Britons wold nae pefe
her daughters to the frengers. Wtfor they Wene out see in

C. liij

to Ireland & broughte with him women & also much spens
sed but the men founde nat vnderstande that langage ne
the speche of the women & therfor they spakke to gode &
swetes & after ward church changyng of the languages
alle frendes by that called the swetes & of husen that fol
le of the quene for evermore.

How kynge Westmer let araze a stone & the entayle
of Westmer lād the: that fellow rodrick and the: he
began first housyng

C. xlii

a And after this latwill there is about said when Ro
drick was deid kynge Westmer in remembrance of his
victorie here and ther he had the wep a guth stone an huch
& put the stone & evermore shall stand & let graue in the sto
ne lād: that the said the kynge Westmer of Britaigne quel
de in this place Rodrick his enemye And this Westmer was
as the first man that made tounge house in England & at
that stone begynnech Westmerland that Westmer let calle
after his owne name & whā Westmer had so done he dyed
up all his lyfys tyme in that countre of Westmerland for he
wold that countre more than any othe countre And when he
had agned by v. yers he died & lieth at earth.

Of kynge Corl that was Westmers sone that he lād his
lād in pres his lyfys tyme

C. xliii

a For this kynge Westmer reigned his sone Corl a
good man & a worthy & of good cōscience & well
gouverned his lād & of all men he had loue & pres & this ky
ng was neuer cōtēll debate ne were in Britaigne & he re
igned & was kynge & pres all his lyfys tyme & when he had so
ne kynge & pres he died & lieth at earth.

How kynge Lucie reigned after Corl his fader that was
good mā & after he became cristen

C. xlv

a For kynge will reigned Lucie his sone that was a go
od mā to god & to all that people he lād to Rome to

that apostle Elisee that he was pope & said that he wol
be come a caste mā & receyved baptisme in the name of
god & towe to the nyght belue Eulenebre sent h logas
that were called Pagan & elisagne i to this lād & baptis
sed the kyng & all his mayne & after wee fto toun to tou
ne & baptised the peple till alle the lād was baptised & this
was the .c. lvi. yere after the J. carnad of our lord Jhu
crist & this kyng lue made cho i this lād h erche bysshe
preou at catreburie an oehir at peck & oehir many bis
shoppes that yet bene i this lād And whā thes ij ligatz
had baptised all that lād thep ordeyned prestz for to bap
tise children & for to make the sacramēt & after thep wēt a
yent to come & the kyng duelled i his lond & reigned with
moche honour yit yere after died & lieth at eluastre
To this lād was lige with out a kyng & so we the bry
toun ch sen a kyng

C. l

This kyng lue had none hir of his body sigetay that
was after ward grete harme & for d. to the lād for after
this kyng lueas dech none of the grete of the lād wolte su
fre an oehir to be kyng but lue i was & i d. lare am dges
he there withouth kyng lue i befall after ward that
a grete prince came from we i to this lād that me called
seuene noughe for to were but for to saue the nyght of we
but nacheles he had nat duelled h lfe a yere i this lād that
the brytōs ne quelled h. The .x. of .x. of .x. that seuene
was so slayne thep see an oehir grete lord i to this land
that me called Alre that was a strong mā & a nyghep
of body & duelled in this lād lōge me & did meche for we
to the brytōs so that after f. put malin thep chesen h ma
kyng am dges he that me called esilpates & esleld a ge
re host of brytōs & we told to h. al. the w. thep found
hym and queld hym and all his felas & and ene called
Balon defended hym for elp and fought long. But

the Britons sue at the last he was discorde & the Britons
nōme hym and bonde handes & feet and cast hym in to a
Watte wherfor that Water after Ward was called euen mo
w Wal brode. Tho reigned astlepadre i quite till one of his
Erlas that me called will made a fair town apene the kyn
ges Wyll & he call the town Colchester after his name for
for the kyng was full brode & tought destroye the erle &
began to were vpon hym & broughe grette wter & pas ba
tail to the erle & the erle defende hym fersely With his
power & slowe the kyng hym self in that batall & tho W
as Coill crowned and made kyng of this land. This Co
ill reigned & governed the royaume well & nobely for he
was a noble man & well beloued among the Britons. Whē
tho of Rome herke that Astlepadre was slayne they wroth
der glad & sene an othir grette Prince of Romayne that w
as called Constaunce and he come to the kyng Coill for
to chalenge the eruage that was bound to be paid to Ro
me And the kyng answered well & kyfely & said that he
wolde paye to Rome all that & re'on wolde With good w
yll And so they accorded tho With good Will and witten
to any contrail & both they duelled to gedres in loue. The
kyng Coill gaf his daughter Elyne to Constaunce for to
haue hir to his spouse that was both fair wife and good &
well leered And this Constaunce spoused hir ther With
moche honour And it befell sene after Ward that this
kyng Coill died in the yere of his regne xiiij. and lixh at
Colchester enciered

Of kyng constance that was a romaine that was
cholen kyng after the deth of coill for as moche that
he had spoused elein that was lynes coilles doughter
a fter this kyng coill constance was ; C. xlvi
made kyng and crowned for as moche that he had
spoused kyng coill's doughter.

that was hie of the lādē the Wiche Tostāc wigned be &
worthely governed the lādē & he bigate on his Wif Ellyn
a sone that was called Constantine & this kyng lant
he sayes & truly did to hem of Rome all his lyf & when he
had wigned & y. yea he died and lych at york.

How constantine that was kyng Constantes so
ne & the sone of kyng Ellyn governed & ruled the lādē
he was emperor of Rome

C. lviij.
a Yere kyng constantes sech Constantine his sone
and the sone of kyng ellyn that sone the holy cros
se in the holy land & so the constantyne became emperor
of Rome & he liffed so in that tyme the was an Epour
at Rome & a Satyrne a tyme that was called Maxen
a that pue to sech all that belued in god & fastwed holy
chirch by all his poer and though alle Cristen mē that he
myghte fynde. And among all othe he the moren seie ha
ethene & many othe Cristen pple that had died of deeth
that fled & come in to this lādē to Rynge Constantine and
told hym of the for the that Maxen dyde to Cristen. W
it is: constantine had pity & gafe for he made & assed a
gute fest & a gute poer and we over to Rome & nō the
Eide & quilled all that the in Wm of myslatur that he
myghte fynde. And the was he made Empour & was a
good man and governed hym so well that all landes co
hym Wm attendaunt for to hve vnder his governaill.
And this cruel tirane Maxen that tyme was in the
lande of Gw & herde this tidynge he became Wode and so
sallich he died and so he ended his lyf when Constantine
Went fro this land to Rome to be with hym his moder.
Ellyn for the moche wisdom that she wude and in othe
gute lordes that he most loved that one was called. Ho
a y othe was.

called Dabene the theidre Mooring to lead his lade
 to lye by to the end of Come Waplethee Was called Oct
 man And anon as this Octavian Wist that his lade Was
 Dabene at come he seised all the land in to his hand &
 the Wist did all his Wyl among hisse & Was the lade
 hym for lene When this tydyngs come to Constancethe
 Emperour he Was wonder Wroth to Werd the lade Octavi
 an & sente Taberne Wist the lade man for the distre
 in the Erle for his falsnesse & armed at Northwiche
 And When Octavian Wist that he assailed a gate po
 Wer & Antonio & disceded Taberne & Taberne fledd thens
 in to Switland & ordyned there a gate po Wer & come ag
 yne in to this land an othir tyme for to geue lade to
 Octavian When Octavian herd of the lade he assailed
 a gate po Wer & came to Warden Taberne as moche as he
 myghte so that the lade metten upon stene and
 stryghtly smore to gedre and the lade Octavian disceded
 & fledd thens in to Norwiche & Taberne seised all the lade
 in to his hand & was a floure of war as they the lade
 And sith Octavian come agene for Norwiche With a gate
 po Wer & seised agene all the land in to his hand and was
 for out all the Romayns & Was the lade linge & was
 How Maximian that was the Emperours son in the
 Rome spoused Octavians daughter & was made King
 Capitulum.

The King Octavian governed the land well &
 in lye but he had none but sauf a daughter the
 Was a yong child that he loved as moche as his life and
 for as moche the he Was sick and Was in prime of daye
 myghte no longer tyme he Wold have made out of his n
 phes to have bene lye the lade Was a noble linge
 and a strong man that he was called Conon & was the lade
 shold have kept the linge linge & have made he the lade

had bene but the lordes of the lande wolde nat suffer it but
paf hir counail to be mared to some high mā of gude honoure
& they myghte the haue all hir lust & the counail of the emp
our Cōstāntine hir lord & at this counail they accorded & cho
se the eadme of wene Baillie for to Wende to the empour for
to do this message & he nōme the Wey & Went to Rōde & tol
de the empour this endyng Well & Wylfely & the Empour
fene in to this lāde With hym his owne cosyn that Was
his Buckles sone a nobill knyght & a strōge that Was called
Maximian & he spoused Octavianes doughter & Was crow
ned kyng of this lande

Howe Maximian that Was the Emperours cosyn cō
quered the lande of Amoricā & gaf it to Conā mē
zudo

Ca. xliij.
His kyng Maximian bicom so riall that he thow
ghte to conquer the land of Amoricā for gude ri
cheffe that he herde tell that Was in that lande so
that he ne lifestman that Was of Worthinesse knyghte squier
ne none othir man that he ne tolde With hym to gude dama
ge of all the lande for he lufe at home he bynd hym no man
to lye in the lāde but nōme hez With hym fro this lāde xxx.
M. knyghtes that Were doughter mennys bodies & Wene
ouer in to the lāde of Amoricā & ther stode the kyng that
Was callz Imball & cōquered all the lāde And whē he had
so done he called Conan & said for as moche as kyng oc
tavian have made yowe a kyng of Britaygne & thurgh
me ye Were litten and destrobled that ye Were nat kyng I
geue yowe all this land of Amoricā and yowe ther of
make kyng. And for as moche as yehē a Briton and
your men also and come fro Britaygne I Full that this
land haue the same name and nomore be calle Amori can
but be called keell Britaygne and the lande fro thens ye
kyng yehē shall be called moche Britaygne And so shal

me knowe that one Britaygne for that othe cona y more
wold charlied hym hedly & so was he made kyng of Britay
Britaygne. And whē all this was done Maximian went
thens to r. me & was eho made apont of ar cēstāne conā
Menedok ouelled i kēll Britaygne with moche honour &
he ordeyn u. M. boroughs of the land for to enre the land
to far weie & so weie & fessed he wehly after that they wer
& for as moche as kyng cona y nōe of his kyngdome no
ne of his othe p. l. wold nat take wifes of the naun
of traillor he eho sent i to gūte Britaygne to the erl of ar
n Waild that me called Dionoth that chise churgh out all
the land y. m. of maydēs that is to say viij. m. for the
menē wyle & iij. m. for the gūte hōdes that shold he spou
se. And whē Dionoth vnderfouge this cōmāndmēt
he let seche thurgh all gūte Britaygne as many as the nō
he came to for no man durst withstōd his cōmāndmēt
for as moche as all the land was take hym to ward & to
kepe to done all thyng that hym good liked. & whē all the
maydēs wer assēbled he let he cōsele for hi to hōdē & he cō
dile for he shippes hastel y as moche as he nedē to the Dis
ge & wile his o wne doughter that was called Ursula that
was the fairest creatur that any may wile & wold hūe
sent hir to kyng cona y that shold hane spoused hir & ma
de hir quene of the land. but she had made pūny to god
a voūe of chastite that hir fader wile not ne no man
he that was lyuyng vpon erth

How ursula & y. m. maydēs that were in hir cōpa
nie wēt toward litel britaigne & all were married
at coleyne

Capituld. l.

This Ursula chise vñ to hir companie y. m. may
dēs that of all othe she wālladg and may
stiff and all they went in to the ship at one
tymyng the wāter that was called the tanyse

se & comaunded hir kyn & all hir frendes to Almyghty
god & sailled to Ward li & all brynnyng Que when they we
re came i to the hygh see a ströge cöppe arose as it was
go dds Wille And Versula With hir shippes & hir cöpanie
Went driuen to Ward hundrad eburgh cöppe & arrived i
the haue of cite of Coltor the kyng of the lād that was cal
ld go wā was e to the cite & Whā he Wist the tydnyng that so
many fair maydēs were ther arrived he toke elga his broe
ther other of his houshold With hyr & Wet to the shippes to
see that faire cöpanie & Whā he sa w hē so faire he & his cöpa
nie Wold haue ouer lapyne hē & betake fro hem hyr mayden
hode Que Versula that good mayd councilled prayd Warnz
& tought hē that were hir selsa Wē that they shold defende
hē With all hir mygt & more suffre with than suffre hir
body to be defouled So that all the maydēs became so stedz
fast i god that they defēded hē thuegh his grace so that no
ne of hem had poer to done hē any shame Wht for that yug
Go Wā Way fore andred that he for Wtch he sūe hē euer
nyht & so were all the maydēs married for the buē of
god and lien at cologne

How hyug Go wā come for to deseroie this lād
and how a mā of grete power that was called Gra
cian defended thi land

Capitulum li.

hen all this was donchyng Go Wā that was a
sacryzen called his brother Elga and said to hy m
that he shold go to conqhere the land that ad e ho
fair maydēs therein borne And he ordeyned thoo a
grete poer of pchiree of denmare of orkoney and of 122
Wey And they come in to this land and trent to ures
and sūe folk and cast a doune chpyches and houses and
religion and woked the land in lūghe and brede and
put to With all the stad Wold

Wolte each forsake the right belone & custome & for as
much as ther was no soueraigne ther wold he be
for the king Maximian had taken with hymself the
worth men he went to edward hereil & nungue And
in the same tyme that ye hea no be the was seint Albons
marred church the Lord tyme Diocles in the same
place ther is no be an aldaye made of seint Albons
he the he was a payme But he converted hym to god
church the predication of a clere & a Wyse man the was
called Anabell the was herburghed a nyght in his house
And this was after the Incarnacion of ihu crist .cc
xxvj. yer And men shuld underston the seint
Albons suffred his martir dome & for the seint Edmunde
was Martred & the foris seint Albons called the first mar
tir of England This Go Wannes brother & his folk
the were savages went church oute the land & desired
all chyrch the the foud & no chyrch the ne spard the
this tye dyng came to Rome the we the king Go Wanne
gonne for to stroye this land the Emprour to of Rome
sent a strong man & of gude poer the was called Stans
an with xxiii. M. men well frehng for to take out the
men out of this land & all the armed at portsmos
the Maximian myghte was come hym self for as much
as he was chosen Emprour after the dech of Constantin
the was seint Elynes sone When this Stans was
arrived with his host he the aspie pryncly the the king
go Wanne myghte he found & he come upon him soudanly as
the lay in his bedde & discomforted hym & slawe him in his
bedde curysse the none of hym escaped sauf Go Wanne
the fled with messes for we in to his coner Some after
the Maximian was slayne at Rome church tye for & the
Or all the tye dyng he the counte hym king of this
Do be grada made hym king the the land

King of Britayne and after that the Britons quoth hym
 for his wilfulness. His Emperour then for Ca. liij.
 began to write to Diocet so Wilked also sterne and so mo
 ch for he did to the Britons that they shold be hym amonges
 the the the King of Britayn had understood that Emperour
 was shynge & done to see he assembled a gunt to wer & co
 me agene to this land and yf he had erst done harme
 shodid he much more for the destroyed he all this land and
 the tithes wold that was in moche. Britayne so that no
 man was so hardy for to nempne god & he that so did a
 none he was yue to stronge death. One the Bisschopp of Lon
 don that was the that was called Gosselyn scapad & wes
 in chyns to chyns of Rome to seeke scoure to helpe destroye the
 sarazens that had destroyed this land. And the Romas
 in the said that they had he so ofte annoyed for his seding af
 ter solden to Britayne all for to helpe the Bishops and
 they wold no more so done. And so the Bisschopp Gossely
 ne was chyns with out any sower or helpe. And the we
 ene he to the King of Britayne that was called Al
 dreic & this was the chyns of King of Britayne mened
 he as before is said. The Bisschopp prayed this King Al dre
 ic of helpe & sower. The King had gunt yite in his hand to
 hym he had he to the Bisschopp fladre & he to the casten m
 wren shyns I gunt Britayne church paynyme & saraze
 nish he granted hym. Constantine his brother hym for co
 lym. Byschopp of folke & hym did arait for armur &
 shyns & all chyns that hym needd to that Biage. And he
 had all chyns was wdy he called the Bisschopp & to hym sa
 id I gunt go to he to helpe & sower. Constantine my bro
 ther I gunt the wunant that if god yent hym gunt chyns
 paynyme & the sarazens to shyns & dyed. The then y
 made hym King. And the Bisschopp granted the god to
 the Constantine & the Bisschopp was the of the King.

1. Byschopp was
 hym. Byschopp
 11. 12. 13.

ye & helpe hym to god and toke his men. yij. Q. & Went
to his shippes & sailed to ward grete Britaigne & ar-
rived at colnusse when the Britons herd the tydings that
to him come soone they were strongly helpe & ordeyned he
a huge multitude of peple & come to him. Undersonge the
with moche honour. So when a none as he. With of thes tyn-
ge he assailed all the sarazenes & come ayens he & pass he
bataylle. And Constantine shew hym Wyth his owne h-
des. And all the othe sarazenes were discorde & slaynes
that none escaped but the that were converted vñ to god.

Thy Constantine that was the kynges brother of
litell Britaigne was crowned kyng of moche Bri-
taigne for his worthynesse. C- quinquagesima m.

a None after the bataylle they went to London & crow-
ned the Constantine and made hym kyng of this
lande & the bishopp. Ceseline sette the crowne on his hed & a-
nointed hym as saluter to a kyng for to here & to viganet-
tyedome. This kyng Constantine when he was crowned and
after he spoused his wyfe thurgh counsell of the Britons
and he began in forre on his. The first was called Costa-
ce the othe. Munslandwe & the eridde. Wer Constantine the
elder brother. When he came to age he made hym a monke
at Wyndchestre. Constantine his sader was slayne. Thurgh
enlon. For ye fell on a time that. Whith came to hym. Va-
pon a day in message as it were said that he wolde spe-
ke with the kyng priuely in counaill. The kyng he went
to his chambere of the men that were with hym and after a
hous no mo but the kyng and the. Whith & made a moun-
taune as they he wolde have speke with the kyng in his
er and then he quelled hym with a longe knyfe and after
went queyntely out of the chambere in to an othe chambere
but so at the last no man with. Whith he was become. When
the kynges meyne. Whith that he had. Hap so that they made

And as he
was
king
of
Briton

so moche for the thyng nyste all that to toun For as moche
as his. ii. sones. Hamalandus and. Ber. Thus so longe
that none of hem myghte be kyng & the shadowe dyeth
as moche as Hamalandus as is said before. But. Forther
that Barthe of Boffen thought pynnyng his herte. For
as quenehise to be kyng and went to Winchester the que
Constans was moche and to hem said Constans quod
for your fader is dede and your i. brother that lene with
Boschyn the bishopp of London to nouysse hem so longe
that none of hem may be kyng wherefor. I counaill yow
that ye forsake your auncle & come wite me and I shall do
for to the butons that ye shall be made kyng.

Of Constans that was kyng Constantines sone that
was monke at Winchester & howe he was made kyng
after his fadres deeth turghe cheryll of Northger. that
was syle of vestrye for as moche as Hamalandus
and vter his. ii. bretheren were but longe of age and
Northger let sles hem to be kyng hem selfe. **Chap.**

His Northger counaillid this Constans so moche
that he forsake his abbode and went with hem &
anone after he was crowned and made kyng by assent of
the barons.

This kyng Constans was he was crowned
and made kyng he wist ne leste he shuld be
wider ne wote no thyng that kyngshode aped he made
Northger his chief master and counailler and gave hym all
his power for to ordeyne and to do as moche as to the
pardon of a peccoun. So that hym selfe no thyng endermed
but only saw the name of kyng. When Northger saw
that he had all the land in his ward and governaunce at his
owne wylle he thought a pauer curd and to the Constans
the kyng that he myghte hym selfe be crowned and made
kyng of the land and let sende after a kyng of the
of the land of the land and the land of the land.

10
let hym so duelle. Bles hym as to be kept of his body as
he wolde. Wende eurygh the lād to ordeyne chynge that a
pateynt to a kyng. And this Wortiger honoure so mo
che the hundred knyghtes and so moche pafe hym of gold &
siluer and so rich. Je Welles wdes hors and othir chynge
plante. Wer for the he de hym more led than the did the
kyng. And Wortiger tolde hem of he most be kyng ye as
ie were churgh. wson he wolde make him nycht of the la
de. So at the laste churgh guth pifres that he had yene dar
gely they cried eurygh the conent that Wortiger were better
worth to be kyng than Constant. Verfor Wortiger ma
de semblaunt as he had bene. Wroth & departed thans fro
the court and said he must gone elles whidder for chynge
that he had to done. so the traitour said for enche for that
they sholl sle hym that is to say Constant. When this W
ortiger was gone it befell sone after that the hundred kni
ghtes of Pehites broke the dore of the kynges chambur &
ther they hyz slo w gen smyten of his hed and baw it to W
ortiger ther that he ducked. And when Wortiger saw what
hed he wepte full tenderly with his eye. And nochtles
he was some dill glad of his deth. And anone he take the ho
ndred knyghtes of Pehites and bynde hir for his behym
de hem and lede hem to london and ther they were damp
ned to the deth as fals traitours. And anone after all
the Britons of the lande by commune assent crowned Wor
tiger and made hym kyng of the lande.

How the wardyns that had the two children to
Repe that were Constantines sones lad to hem to li
tell Bretagne for the felon a fallencelle of Wortis
ger

Ca. quinquagesia qui.

This kyng Wortiger when he was crowned the that
had then ii childer. Keppng Randalph and G
en eurygh ordinare of Gosselyne that was bisshop of Lon

26
 When at his death durst not duelle in the lande Britayne
 then due had hem to the kynge of Lyncol Britayne for as
 moche as he tho wist the treason of Worricger that tho had
 made kynge thurgh Whom Constaunce his brother was
 layne wherfore the hundred knyghtes of Pehiers were
 put to death and here all the blame as that Worricger had
 not wist ther of nocht ther to consented And so the knyghtes
 of the Bochidren dreed lest Worricger wold put hem to the
 the churgh his treason & falsenesse as he had done his bro-
 ther before and therfore they were lad ouer in to Lyncol
 Britayne & the kynge hem receyued with moche honour
 lette hem to nourishe and ther they duelled till they become
 faire knyghtes and stronge & fers and tough to be avenge
 ged vpon the death of Constaunce his brother When they sa-
 we his cyme and so they did as ye shull here tell after
 that He was not longe after that the tydpyges ne come
 ouer se to the kynge of the hundred knyghtes of Pehi-
 ers that were dampned & put to the death thurgh Worricger
 in this land therfore they were wondrelly woth & wroth
 & that they wold bene avenge d of his kynnes death and
 comen in to this land with a grette power & robbed in ma-
 ny places & queld and did all the for we that they myghte
 when Worricger it wist he made moche sorwe and sorwe was
 aanoied And in an othir place also tydpyges came to him
 that Rual ambros and vter his brother ordeyned and
 asssembled a grette host for to come i to moche Britayne that
 is to sey in to this landes to bene avenge d vpon Constan-
 ce his brother death So that in one halfe and in that othir
 he was broughe in to so moche sorwe that he ne wist whi-
 der to vnde.

Now Engist & ythousland men come i to this la-
 nd to whon Worricger gave a place that called is tou-
 gh castle

C. quinquagesimo. vi

D in

And sone after this so the tydyngs come to Worth-
 ger that a gude maner of strangers were arrived
 in the countre of Kent But he wist noe whens they were ne
 wherfor they were come in to this land The kyng sente a
 none a messagier thider that somme of hem shold come &
 speke with hym for to wpe what folke they were and to
 hat they aged & in to what countre they wold gone Ther w-
 ere .ij. bretherne mastres and prynces of that strong compa-
 nie that one was called Engist and that othir horsse Eng-
 gist went to the kyng & tolde hym enche son wherfor they
 were ther arrived in his land And said Sir we ben of a
 countre that called is. Sayome that is the lande of Erma-
 nye wher I his so moche for to be that of the peple is so moche
 that the lande may nat hem susteyne The mastres & Pri-
 ces that haue the lande to gouerne and rule make to come
 before hem men and women that bolde ben among hē for
 to fyght and that best may emuall in to diuers landes &
 so they shull hem pue hors and harnaye Gremur And all
 thyng that hem nedeth and after they shal sey to hem that
 they gone in to a othir countre wher that they mo we liuen
 as hir auncestres did before hem And therfor Sir kyng
 yf ye haue ought to do with our compaigne we be come in
 to your lande and with good will ye we wyl serue and
 your lande kepe helpe and defende from your enemyes
 that ye we ne derh When Worthger herd this tydyng he
 said he wold gladly hem withold Upon couenant yf they
 myghte deliuer his lande of his enemyes he wold pueche
 resonable lodes wher they shold dwell for evermore Engist
 thanked hym goodly & in this maner he and his compaignie
 xi. M. shold dwell with the kyng Worthger & so moche they
 did churgh his boldnesse that they skured the lande of
 one of his enemyes So prynced Engist the kyng of so mo-
 che land that he myghte make to hym a Cite for hym and

for his wegne the kyng answered it was nae to done w
ith our counaill of his Dutona Engist prand hym effo
res of as moche place as he myght compose with a charge
of a shunte and ther upon he myght make hym a mas
ter & for hym to dwell on And the kyng granted hym fre
ly the nome Engist a full shunte & aue as much as
he myght all in to a chunge all a rounde and ther with
compassed he as moche lande as he made upon a fair castell &
then this castell was y made he he call y the chunge
fell for as moche as the place was marked with a ch,
ge.

Of Rome Ben that was Engistes daughter & to the
kyng Wotiger spoused her for her haue Carqu. Bij
Ben this castell was moled & full well armed
Engist prand y sent by letter in to the conent that
he came of after an hundred schippes fylled with stans
ge may that was bolde and well spgheing in all latine
that they shold bring with hem Rome Ben his dou
ghter that was the fairest creature that a man myght see.
And the people was comē that he had set after he to
ke hem in to the castell with moche Joye And hym selfe
upon a day went by to the kyng & prand hym ther w
orthely that he wolde come & see his ne we maner that he
had made in the place that he compassed with a chonge of the
shunte the kyng anon granted ye hys frely and with
hym went chadde & was well a payed with the castell &
with the fair wiche and to gedre ther they can & drou
sen with moche Joye And when myght come that the
kyng Wotiger shold go in to his chabre for to take the
his myght after Rome Ben that was Engistes daughter
one day a myp of gold in his hande and smilled before
standinge said to hym Dauid and the kyng wist nae
that it was a myp of gold he had sold answere for as
Dij

woche a hym selfe ne none of his Britons yit wold nede
Englisch speken ne onderstand it but speken the same
langages that Britons yit done Northkes a laetmer tol
to the kyng the full onderstanding ther of Wassalle and
that othir shold answere dynke haile And that was the
first tyme that was saile and dynke haile come vp in this
land & from that tyme vñ to this tyme it is well used in
this lande The kyng Worhter sa w the fairnesse of Rome
Wen his armes laid aboute hir neike & in Werelph kys
sed hir and anone nyght he was anamend vpon hir that
he desired to haue hir to wyfe & asked of Engist hir fadre.
And engiste graunted hym vpon chieftanant that the
kyng shold geue hyr all the coten of ket that he myght dwell
in and his peple The kyng hym graunted pryncely a wy
ch good will And anone after he spoused the damysell that
was woche confusion to hym selfe And therfore all the bri
tons become so woche for enche son that he had spoused a
woman of mysheloue wherfor they went all from hym and
no chng to hym coulde kepe ne helpe hym in chng that he
had to done

Howe wortiger that was wortigers lone was
made kyng a Engist drinen oute a howe Uortimer
was slayne

Ca. lviij
The Engist went in to ket & seised all the land in
to his hand for hym & for his men and became
a knall whill of so grette poer & so moche peple had that me
yft noe in knall tyme which were the kynges men & whi
the were Engistes men wherfor all Britaigne had of hym
dred & said amog he that yf they ne toke othir counail
were he all the land shold be betraied thurgh Engist & his
peple Wortiger the kyng had bigoren on his first wife in so
nes the yfste was called Uortimer that second Catagane
the endre passe The Britons cuncton by one assent chg

15

se Dortimer to his hie the soueraine & his counsaillers in
wery hartly & crowned hym & made hym kyng & wolde su
fer Dortiger no longer to wgne for enclaf of the Alliance
his bene Engist & hys The Britons chose a gret host to
drive out engist & his copanie of the land & pass hym in
thilles that first was in kee that he was lord The secud
as at Treforde & the ende was in a shire atchievall Enol
in a more And in this battail hym met Catagan & hisse
gistes brother so that ech of hem sle the othir But for as mo
che as the countre was geuen long before to hie the 23.
Dortiger tho he had spoused his wif in that he had made a fair
castell that me called hie castle after his o wne name
And Dortimer was so annoyed for his brothers dech Ca
tagan that he was de in such a maner wherfor anone he
let felle the Castell to ground And after that he nylt ni
ghte ne day till he had driven out Engist and all his peple
of the land And When Engist was driven a way none
ben his daughter made for wey no we and quene elyn spa
ke to hym that ben next the kyng Dortimer and pryncesse
Wyche hym and so moche she pass hym of yfres that he was
enpoisoned and died at London the for ywe of his wgn
and the he lieth

Ho be the Britons chosen an othir tyme Dortiger to be
ne hie kyng and Engist come in to this land apen & the
fougeren to god

Ca. liij.

Feer Dortimers dech the Britons bi his commun
ne assent chose made Dortiger hie kyng Upon
this edaunte that he shold neuer after suffer. Engist ne
none of his chifones to comen in to this land & When all
this was done Rome the Quene pryncesse let
ter to Engist that she had enpoisoned Dortimer & that Dor
tiger hie lord & pryncesse was de & requed & that he shold
come to this land well arraied with moche peple for to a
venge. hym upon the Britons and to Wyne this

lande apene And When Engist heard this tpydunge he ma-
 de grete Joye and appoynted ham hostely Rich. y. s. cou-
 sand man that were sougthty in every barre and come
 into this land And When Worther herd this that Eng-
 giste was come agene With a grete power in to this land
 he assembled his Britons and the Benet agene. Engist
 for to haue newe hym barre and his folke But Eng-
 giste drad hym for of the Britons For they had discom-
 fited hym before & had druen hym oute With strength W-
 her for Engist prynced a hys day and said he was net co-
 mery in to this lande for cofpyght But to haue his lan-
 de a yene of he myght acord With the Britons and of his
 haue grete The kyng Worther thurgh counsell of his Bri-
 tons graunted a hys day & thus yt was ordeyned thur-
 gh the Britons that the same hys day shold hys holde fast
 he side Salisburp Upon an hulle And Engist shold come
 thider With four hundred knyghtes Without moo And
 the kyng With as many of the Wyest of his lande And
 at that day the kyng come With his counsell a vit he o-
 rdynd Que Engiste had warned his knyghtes pryncely
 & hym commaunded that every of hem shold put a hys
 nyse in his hys And When he said fair Sire now is tyme
 to speke of hys & pryncery man anone shold drad the
 hys knyghtes & the Britons and so they quelled a thousand
 knyghtes & With moche for the many of hys Escap-
 yd & the kyng Worther hys self also was take and lad to
 Choncastell & put in to prync & some of Engiste me Tol-
 d that the kyng had hys hys all quyt & Worther also for
 to haue his lyste graunted he as moche as they wold aye & p-
 ofe Up all the lyste toures castles Cites & burghes to m-
 giste & to his folke & all the lyste shold this in to Walere
 then they had hys self And Engiste Wene thurgh hys lyste
 and fised all the land.

17
 At the year of
 the birth of
 the Virgin Mary
 the year of
 the birth of
 the Virgin Mary
 the year of
 the birth of
 the Virgin Mary

C. 170.

W hen Engist had departed all the land in this maner hit went, his men he deliured Wotiger out of prison and suffered hym self to gone whider he shal wolde & he nome his way and went in to Wales ther that his Barons ducked for as moche as that lande was stronge & byllyed to Wyne And engist neuer come ther ne lene we it neuer before that lande Wotiger helde hym ther with his Barons & aydwilfull that hym was best all for to do ne And they gaf hym counail to make a stronge castell that myghte hym self ther in kepe & defende pf nede were made i hast to were fre & began the werke vpon the hylle of Bigh but artois thus it befell all the werke that the mase made a day a doo it fell ake & wist not what it myghte be ther of the king was for aroid of the charge & wist not

to Done wherfor he let send after the Wyked clerke and al
so lurd men that wern thurgh ouer Wales that myghte
ne founde forether sholde tell wherfor the founda ment so
faillid vnder the werke and that they sholde hym telle w
hat was lost to Done And the wisest men lōge tyme had
studied they said to the kyng that he sholde done sette a chil
de borne of a woman that neuer had with men to done
that childe he sholde slay and temper with his blode the mor
tier of the werke and so sholde the werke euer endure wi
thoute ende

Howe the kyng lete letche gyllen thurgh all was
les for to speke with hym. C. lvi

Then the kyng herd this he commaunded his messa
giers anone to wende thurgh ouer all Wales to se
ke that childe yf they myghte hym fynde and that they shol
de bring hym forth with hym vñ to hym and in worded
in wicnesse of this tynge he had take hem his leue that they
ne wern destroubled of no man ne lette And the messa
giers wene thus and spode so fast that they come in to a
toun that was callid Harmaryne & as they passed for
th hit way they founde .iiij. children of yingyr age chid
den yfwr with lasty wordes & one of hem said to that othir
Donebarquod he ye done all wronge to childe or stafe w
ith me for ye haue ne wye ne rison as I haue Certes
Merl yn quod he of your wye ne of your rison I make no
force for me telle communeli that ye haue no thyng of god
almyghty sith ye had neuer fadre but euerl mā knoweth
well who is your moder The messagiers of the kyng wor
ter when they herd this tise sie wene the two gromes they
ad of hem that stonde byssides hem when this gyllen w
as done & also who hym nonisched & the folke hem tolde
that a gylgentil woman hym saw in Harmaryne that
was callid Gylgan But neuer myghte

man Witte who myght be the childes father When the kynge
messagers herd this tyding they went and to hys that
was wardyne of the toune & tolde hym the kynge Will
& his lre shewed hym therfor they went come tidder Mer
lyn and his moder among them sent before the wardyne
of the toune he commanded hym that they shold gone to the
kyng as it was ordeyned by his messagers Merlyn &
his moder went thur and comen by to the kyng & there
they were vnderfonge with moche honour & the kyng a
wed of that lady of that child was hir sone and who hys
lre The lady answered full tenderly weeping and sa
id she had neuer compaignie of ma wordely But Sir god
shew as I was among maydyn in my fathers chambere and
othir of greet kinage were in my compaignie that often times
were wont to play and to solace I selfe allone in my cha
mbre and wold nat gone out for brennyng of the sonne &
vpon a tyme ther come a faire bachelor and cerryed in to my
chambere ther that I was allone but he wold come in to me
and where I wistene neuer ne yet wote it nat For the do
re were fast lerrid & with me he did game of loue For
I ne had myse ne port hys to defende fro me & ofte he come
to me in that forsaid maner so that he begate this child one
neuer myght I wit what he was

Of the answered of Merlyn wherfor the kyng ayed to
hys wif myght not stonde that he had bigonne ner pro
d He Merlyn had herd all that his wif. Ca. lxiij
moder had said spake to the kyng & this maner sir
to be I was begot as ye no more forie fallid nought to po
we ne to nede othir to with but telleth me encheso wherfor
I am to go by brought & wherfor ye haue set after me ar
tis quod the kyng my wif conuillers haue do me to vn
dold that the mother of the child that I haue bygd befo
re be ampted by your blode or the foundemene

shall fall for evermore. The good manly knight
 said for my sake for to keep this your mother yet
 the king or altes shall never my mistal stand as my will
 unless done me to understande the answerer grete the
 king. The he said he him was before me the wise coun-
 sellor. I will prove that the say was well understood.
 When the wife was come then Markyn asked of the king. He
 each encheson to make the work stand and endure. All
 the wife was abashed and wunde was answer. Markyn
 the said to the king. Sir I shall all go to encheson the
 herfor your work enchesoned and may not stand. The
 is under the montaigne the that ye have begonne your
 to be a great pond of water and in the bottom of it pon-
 de under the water the king. ii. dragons the one is whi-
 te the other red the fygge to geve a pte your work.
 Do ye myne deare all your men come to the pond and do
 the your me take a way the water all out & the y of all se-
 the dragons as I have to be tolde that to geve fygge as
 pens your work. And this is the encheson with herfor
 the fundamane faileth. The king answere the king. But
 der till that men come to the pond and see done a way
 all the water & the the funder. ii. dragons as Markyn
 had tolde that grete fougeth to geve. The white drag-
 on assailed the red & laid on hym so strongly that he
 myght not endure but he was by hym and rested in the
 same place. And when he had a while rested he was by so
 as assailed the red dragon againe and held hym so so-
 re that he myght not avenge hym but he was by
 hym & rest. And after some space the white dragon & stan-
 gely foughte with the red dragon & each hym with hym &
 overcome the red dragon & the red dragon came againe.
 Of the significacion of the ii. dragons that were in the
 bottom of the pond the foughe to geve. Ca. Lij.

This knyght Vorzger and his men that saughe this
 battail had grete mervailles & praised Mervyn to
 telle hym what it myght be to hym. Sur qd Mervyn I shall y
 o w take the redde dragon & to kenech your self & the wy
 te be to kenech the folk of saxon that first yetothe & held i
 this lase that now a fighte nays po we & po we haue duns
 nen & enchaesed. But butons of your linage ouercome he
 & drunen hem a wape & sicken at the comynge a ren of the sa
 ponethy recovered this land & held it for evermore and
 drunen out the butes and dyd with this land his wyll &
 destruid cristendome thurgh out this lande ze had first
 joye with his comynge. Ene no we it is turned to po w gre
 te damages for we for the n. brethrene of Eostane the
 was kyng the wich ye be sike shulle come by for a quin
 zeme passed with a grete poer from krell britaigne & shull
 be a veuge the dech of his brother & they shul brene po
 we first with folke. And after they shull sike a grete por
 tie of Saxon & shull out drue all the remanance of the
 land & therfor abyde ye here no longer to make castell ne
 none othe. Werke but anone god wille. Where your life all
 for to saue to god I po we bide for truth I haue said to
 po we of idyng that shall befall. And vnderstoudeh well
 that Mervyn shall be kyng but he shall be empoye
 fond & lill tyme agne.

Of kyng Mervyn howe he pursued Vorzger
 ger a cugist a howe they diden. C. lvi
 m. Mervyn & his men & pted fro the kyng & turned a
 pen to karmadyn & so after tpyng come to the
 butons the Mervyn & dier his brother were arry
 ued at E. d. with a grete host. And the butons ano
 ne assambled hym & we to vnderfong Mervyn &
 were with grete noblesse and had hym to london and
 crowned the Mervyn and made.

hym kynge and viden to hym homage & he ayed wher Wer-
 ger that was kynge myghte foude for he wolde be a beged
 of his bretheres &ch and after he wolde be dem vpon pay-
 nyme And they told hym that Wortiger was in Wales
 so they ladde hym thidder Ward Wortiger wist wel that
 the bretherne come hym to coquer and fle to thes in to a
 castell that was called Gerneth that stod vpon a hygh
 montaigne and ther hym hel & Aurilambros and were
 his brether and his folk had beseged the castell full long-
 me for the castell was stronge and well arrayed so at the
 last they cost wildes and brend hous & man and all his ar-
 ray and as moche as was withyn the castell So that wor-
 tiger was bound amonge all othir and so died he wie mo-
 chel for he tho was Engist in hyne and signed ther and
 her & this tpyding and anone fledde and wolde haue gone
 to Swetland for to haue had socour but Aurilambros coe-
 his men mee with hym in the narrowe & pafe hym la-
 till and Engist & his men hem defended Welles that they
 myghte but he & his folke were discomfited and slayn
 And Gerta his sone flew vnto poelle and Aurilambros his
 folowed eguly Gerta a littill while agens hym stod but af-
 ter ward he putte hym to his mercy & Aurilambros bus
 derfenge hym and to hym and to his men he pafe the con-
 tre of Galt Wey in Swetland and ther they dwellid The
 kynge Aurilambros wer to curghoute the land and pue
 a way the name of Engisteland that Engist after lions
 me had called it before tho let he it call agene gerte Bris-
 taigne and let make agene churches houses of religion co-
 stles Cices and burghes and townes that the Saxonys
 had destroyed & come to londen & let make the Wals of the
 Cite which Engist & his folke had wast a dune The Bri-
 sons lad hym to the monce of Aubrian wher somme tyme
 me was a house of religion that th was destroyed curgh

pagines wher of a knyght was called Gylbert that some
 meane was founder of the house of chesham was cal
 led the mot of Grian and after was called Ambesbury
 a shall for evermore

By the curialambros did advise the land of gude Bris
 taine that was destroyed churgh sayons

On the kyng curialambros he amed and redresse
 the house of Ambesbury & there put moles but
 no be ther he nonnes a litle from the place that was cal
 led Salisbury ther the the sayones queld the batonow
 the Engist he shold have made a lute day in which the
 ther was slayne a M. lxxi. knyghtes churgh reason of en
 gist the kyng ther of had gude pitee thought to make a m
 de of he in a monument of stone that myghte adme to the
 world to end And of this thing they to the counsell
 that ther of was best for to done. The spake to the kyng
 the bisschop of london that was called Eustace that he
 shold inquire after Merton for he could best tell to the
 thing myghte be made And Merton after was sought
 & found and come to the kyng And the kyng tolde his
 his will of the monument that he wolde have made The
 answered Merton to the kyng and said Ther be a gude st
 me in Ireland and luge upon the hull of span that me
 called Ganeskall & if they were in this place as they
 be the be they wolde endure ever more in remembrance
 of the knyghtes that here be entred Per ma for godd
 the kyng as hard stones be in my land as in Ireland So
 the quod Merton But shall your land be none such
 For Ganeskall be for gude gods of hon selfe for as es
 very tymes that they were wounded in any maner que
 a day within the stones with both with & chace with
 the the with and the with sole. To be the be
 as for to seth the gude stones in Ireland

And this Britons had herd of this thyng they
 were of doubt among hem that they wol a gone se
 the the stones & nome the which he were the longes swyther
 to his hie deuetyne & yd. All men & Merlyn counsilled
 hym for to gone in to Ireland & so they did. And when
 the kyng of Ireland that was called Gullomer herd eel
 what strangers were arrived in his land he assembled a
 greet poer & foughte agens hem but he & his folke was di
 samfired. The Britons went before till they come to the
 mount of Aghian & clamed by to the mount. But when
 they saugh the stones & the maner how they stound they
 had greet mervail and said he were hem that no ma
 shold remene for no streng ne engynne so huge they were
 & so longe. But Merlyn thurgh his craft & quowneyze re
 muned hem & broughe hem in his schipes and come agene
 in to this land. And Merlyn sawe the stones that that the
 kyng wol dehaue hem & see hem in the same maner that
 they stoden in Ireland. And when the kyng saugh that it w
 as made he canked merlyn & wchylp hem he warded at his
 owne wyll & that place he call. stoukunge for evermore.
 How passent that was Worthger sone & the kyng Guil
 lomer come in to this land & so he a countour that was cal
 led Capa nposened the kyng. Quilambros. C. lxxij
 And men shal vnderfrend that passant that was
 Worthger sone lued in the same tyme & come in to
 this land a greet poer and arrived in the north countre &
 wolde bene a venge of his fadres dech Worthger. And stru
 ggle trusted byou the companie that he had broughe with
 hym out of the land of Germaine & had conquered all the
 northeden by to york. And when kyng Quilambros
 herd this he assembled a greet poer of Britons & wane for
 to besyghte hym. And he & his wyll was discensified the
 passant ascapd thens with some of his folke and fled.

[illegible]

followed that he shall have vii. fones & euery of hem shall
 be kyng & wne with moche honour & abyde yndenger
 but goth & yue battail to your enymies & fized. Wy
 th hem holdey for yeshull oucome hem & haue the Victorie
 Weer chailed herely Merlyn & nde his men & went to w
 ard his enymie & they fought to gedre Mortalye & so he dy
 scomfised his enymies all & destroyed & by self quelled pas
 sent that Was Vorfigers sone And his brede queld Em
 lmer that Was kyng of Ireland & all his men And W
 at anon after that battail toke his way to Ward Synthe
 ste for to done enter Aurilambros kynges was his bro
 ther But tho Was the body come to stökenge with mo
 che honour that he had done made in wmebrauce of the bri
 tons that the was slayn churgh rason of Engist that sa
 me day that they shold haue bene accorded & in the same
 place they intend Aurilambros the secde yere of his re
 gne Wichall the Wurschipp that mygh belonge to such a ky
 ng of whos soule god haue mercy. Of Weer pendrago
 and Weer for he was called so after ye shall hve how he w
 as ouer take with the gatte lout of Igerne that was the
 rle of Corno Wailles Wif

& For the lout of Aurilambros Weer his brother
 Was crowned & reigned Well and Worthely and i
 remembryng of the drago that he was liked to he le ma
 ke two dragons churgh counaill of his brede that one
 to be lout before hym Whene he went in to battail & that o
 the to abyde at Synthes in the bissoppes churche. And
 for that churson he was called euer after Weer pendrago
 And Owe that Was Engistes sone commended But Well
 Weer that was made nebe kyng and apens hym bega to
 men was & ordyned a gatte copanie of his frede & of his
 kyng & of Ossa his brother & had take all the lad fied
 for by to portre but the of portre fied fied a gatte
 E in

& hold not suffer her to come in to the toun neether to yel
 de the Cite to hem And he beseged the toun anon aghe
 & pafe ther to a ströge assaute but they of the Cite hem
 kepte well and strongly And when they herde that of the
 countessidder With a grette power for to helpe & rescue the
 toun and put a way the siege & pafe a stronge bataille &
 Oeta & his company hem defended as well as they myghte
 But at the last they were discomfited & the most part of
 hem queld and Oeta & Olla were taken & put in to pris
 son at London And weerthym selfe duckled a while at por
 kee after he went to London & at the Ester after sueng
 he wolde be crowne and holde a solemne feste & let somp
 ne all his Erles & Barons that they shold come to that feste
 & all who that had Wives shold bring ham also to that feste
 and all comen at the kynges commandement as they w
 ere commanded The feste was richely holden and all w
 erthely set to mete after that they were of estate so that er
 le Gouloys of Cornuwaill and Jgerne his wyfe weren at
 ether nepe the kyng & the kyng saw the fairnesse of that la
 dye that she had And was wyllyng for hir trauctee & of
 he made to hir nyght semblaunt in loking & laughing so
 at the last the Erle parayued the pryncesse & laughy
 ng & the queene bit were he & amoo d y f d that all i tra
 ch & tolke his wyfe & called to hym his knyghtes & were
 thens all i traich withoure takyng lute of the kyng The
 kyng anone sente after hym that he shold come agene & go
 not thens i despice of hym & the Erle wolde not come agene i
 no maner wise therfor the kyng was full wroth & in
 trach hym dyffid as his dedely enemy & the Erle went thens
 in to Cornuwaill With his wyf in to the Castell of kyn
 agell & the kyng let ordeyne a grette host & come in to cono
 aille for to destroye the Erle yf he myghte but he had put his
 in such a castell that was ströge & well armed of charyll

and told not yeld hym to the kyng The kyng anon bes-
ged the castell & the duelle & 8. dayes that neuer myght
speke & ever though Iohn ygerne & upon his laide so mo-
che bone that he myght what to don So at the last he called
to hym a knyght that was called Blfyn that was prue
with hym & tolde hym all his counsell & ayed of hym what
was best for to done Sir quod he wote send after Merlyn
for he can alle po we the best counsell of any men I yung-
Merlyn anon was sent after & come to the kyng and the
kyng tolde hym all his wil Sir quod merlyn I shall done
so moche thurgh craft that I can that I shall make po we
come this nyght i to the castell of Tynetage & I shall haue
all your wil of that lady 1 Go we vter bigateon I-
gerne that was the erles wif of cornowalle Arthur kyng

in Elyon thurgh craft that he coude cha C. lxxij
ged the kynges figure in to the liknesse of the erle
& Blfyn garlopes his chambir layne & to the figure Of
Iordan that was the erles chambir layne so that ech of he
was trasfigured to other liknesse And when Merl i had
so done he said to the kyng Sir quod he no we mo we ye go
ne so delyp to the castell of tynetage & open ette the & ha-
ue your wil the kyng tolde prauely all the host to goune &
led to a knyght that he moche loued & nede his way to ward
the castell & with hym Blfyn his chambir layne & merlyn &
when they come to the portier weete that it had bene hys
own lord & when they come we for to go to bedde The kyng we-
nt to bedde with Igerne the erles wif and bid with hir all
his wil & bigateon & spo his a soe that was called Arthur
spo the mo we the noble myghty kyng nede his leue of the
lady weete & to his host & the same nyght that the kyng
lay by Igerne i bedde y few we the erles wif the kynges
my pen after dyne to the castell & the erle & his me mau-
ly he dyed but at the last it befell so that after the assaunte

the Erlk hym selfe Was slayn & the Costill toke And the
 kyng anone turned agene to tynagell & spoused Igerna
 With mortal honour & made hir neuer & sone after tyme
 kede that she shold be deliuered & be a schilde for that was
 as called arthur and after he gate on hir a daughter that
 Was called Mupa & Whan she come to a genobely Was ma-
 ried to a noble Baron that Was called alch that Was led
 of hys Whēde lōge tyme had regned ther come vpon hym
 a greet sikenesse as it were a forweg in the wene tyme tho
 that had to liue Octa that Was Engisies sone & ossa his
 brother that tho Were in prison mē let hym gone for greet y-
 ftes that they hym gaf & Were With hym And Whan tho
 & his brethren Were ascapd & come agē in to hir oūne cō-
 tre they ordyned hym a greet host & a greet poer & begde to
 Wee estones vpon the kyng | How kyng Were chise &
 Lorde — hōd to kepe the land of britaigne Whiles that he Was ythe
 for as moche as he mygt not for his sikenesse Ca-septua. n

a And for as moche as kyng Were Was sike & mygt
 not helpe hym selfe he ordyned Alot sone of clepp
 that tho Was chosen to be Wardyne & chiuereyne of all his
 folke & he anone & his breidōs assenbled a greet host & pafe
 the aille to Octa & to his folke but Octa at the last Was di-
 scōficed hit befell thus after Ward chas this breidōs had
 indignaciō of alch & Wolte nat to hym lene attēcāt W-
 her for the kyng Was annoyed Fonder low he put hē in a
 litter in the host amōges folke & they lad hym to Verolop-
 ne that tho Was a fair cite ther that seie alboē Was mar-
 end & after Was that cite destroid With paynyms & thur
 and chidder they had sente Octa and Ossa and hir peple
 and entred in to the towne & let makefast the gates and
 ther they holde hym and the kyng come and hym besyged
 and made a stronge assaue but tho that Were With iust-
 muller — fies hym besyged the kyng he ordyne his goones & hys



Engynes for to batte the Welles and Walles Were so
 stronge that no thyng myght hym mysdo Occa & his pe
 ple had grate despite that a kyng lpyng in a litter had
 hym beseged and they taken counail amonges hem for to stru
 ke vp in the moor We and come oute & yene battail to the
 the kyng and so they diden and in that battail Were bo
 the Occa & Ossa slayne & all the othir that ascaped a lyue
 fled in to Scotland & made Colegrine hir Chpue tayne
 & the sayous that Were a lyue & ascaped fro the battail bro
 ughten agene a grate strength & amonges hem they seyden
 that yf kyng Wier Wm & they shold well conquer the
 land & amonges hem they thought inpoisen the kyng & or
 dynd men for to done this dede & gaf hem of yfres grate
 plente this thyng to done & they ordynd hym chidder W
 ard ther that the kyng Was durlpyng & clothed he in po
 uer We the better all for to spede hir liker purpose But
 Nocheles for all hir falsnesse & qnyntize they myght neu
 come to nygh the kyng but so at the last they aspyed that
 the kyng dranke none othir liout but ouly Wate of a ce
 re Well that Was nygh by sides & there fals chaitour Bru
 aday prauelych Wite to the Well & put theri poyse so that
 all the Wate Was enpoisened & anone after as the kyng
 had dwoult of that Wate he began to swele and soue after
 he died and as many as dwoult of that Wate deide also
 And anone as this falsnesse Was aspyed folke of the tou
 ne let stope the Well for eumar: When the kyng Was deide
 his folke bere hym to Seouenge With grete solempnyte
 of bisshops of barons that Were there that berde hym Rofi
 de Glanlambos his brother and after turned agene the
 uenethon and let sende after Arthur his sone & they made
 hym kyng of the land With moech reuerence after his fa
 ders dede the ydyng Of his regne. *vt p. 100*

the 4th of Aug 1706
Shrove of the 1706

How Arthur that was the son of Verc was raised
after his fathers death & how he dwelt with his & the ladyes &
cheldren of almayne out of this land C. lxxviii

W Hen arthur was made kyng of the land he was
but yth of age of 8 y^{er} but he was fair & bol
de & doubty of body & to make folke he was good & curto
ys & large of spedyng & made hyr well belued amog all
me thet that it was ned & whē he began to rigne he for
that sayd neu shold haue pen ne wst till that he had dri
ueh out of his lād & he assēble a gret host & fought w
ith colygine the which after tyme that ocm was wth the
sayd mayntened And this colygine was discomfited &
fled & y to porke & colke the count & the helde hyr & the
kyng beseged the count but he mygt not chynge spde for
the count was so strōge & chey withyme kept the count
well & orwold p^r & i the wene tyme colygine the count
to bladulf & fled hyr selfe to Cheldrike that was kyng
of almayne for to haue of hyr socour & the kyng assēbled
a grette power & coe & aruned i scoeland with v^c schip
pes & whē arthur wist of this tpydng that he had nat po
er & strengch pouowre to fighthe ayens Cheldrike he let
the sieg & were to Londō & sent anon his letters to the
kyng of a tēll Britaigne that was called heil his nephew
his susten for that he shold coe to hyr with all the power
that he mygt and he assēbled a gret host & aruned at fourch
mptō f Whā kyng arthur wist he was glad p^r no wth w
e^t ayens hez hem in seged with moche honour so that the
h hostis hez assēbled & taken hit way men to nyhol that
cheldrike had beseged but nougt yie takē f they come & p^r
cheldrike f Upon his peple or they it wist thet that they wth
e hem equaly assēbled the kyng & cheldrike his myght wth
ed hem mauly by hit power But kyng Arthure and his
men queld so many sayons that was neuer et was say

ne such slaughter And chel dril & his men that were last
 allue fleden a Wape And Archur hem pursued & drofe
 hem in to a wodde that they myght no fer the pass. Chel
 dril & his men sa we well that they were broughe i to mo
 che disce & hem' polden to Archur in this maner wise that
 he shold take hir hors & hir armur and all that they had
 they must only gone a fote in to hir schipes And so they
 wolde gone in to herowne lande & neuer come apan in to
 this lād And vpon assuraunce of this thing they geue hir
 gond hostages & Archur by counceill of his men graunt
 ed this thing & assyured the hostages And he vpon the
 othe went to hir schipes And whan they were in the shi
 pe he wyll changed as the duell ye wolde & they retour
 ned hir naue and come a yene in to this lunde and arri
 ued at Tottenesse & went out of hir schipes & nomme the
 land and clene robbed it and moche peple slew & taken all
 the armur that they myght fynde and so they went forth
 till they comen to Bath But the men of the toun shitt
 fast hir gates and wolde noe sufer hem come With yn the
 toun and they defended hem well and ordeply agens hez

So we Archur pafe batall to the sayones whē they co
 me & besiged the toun of Bath & he olicome c. lxxiiij

Then archur herde this tidynge he let bouge anon
 the hostages & left holl of Britaigne his nephew
 for to lede the marche to Ward Sweland Wyth half his
 peple & hym selfe went to helpe aske the toun of Bath &
 whē he come thider he gaf a strōge batall to chel dril & q
 to all must al the peple that he had for no mā myght hym wy
 th stōd ne edum onder the stroke of his swerd & ther both
 were slayn coligā & bladdud his brother & chel dril fledde
 the & wolde hane gōe to his schipes but whē he wist he
 tolong in luyghes to cōdre that was erl of corno Wail for
 to lūe & stope his comig & at his selfe went to ward chmar

che of Scotland for messagers told hym that the Scottes
 had beseged Hoell of Britaigne che that he lay sick and
 chefor he hastid hider ward And Cadoc purfued after
 Cheldrike & tolde hym et he myght come to his shippes &
 quel'd Cheldrike & his peple And When Cadoc had done
 this viage he hastid hym apne as feste as he myght to Was
 So Arthur & founde hym in Scotland che che had
 seued Hoell of Britaigne But the Scottes were all for
 ch in Mounaf And che they hel'd him a While but Ar
 thur hem purfued & chey fled thens in to Lymougne che
 Were in that contree. Ther & grete plenty of biddes & grete
 pléce of egles. har Were Wded to crie a figheto gedres & make
 grete noyse Whā folke come to tobbie che lād & Werren as
 moch As they myght & so they dyden for the Scottes Wa
 re so grete auencours che chey cou' call che che myght
 fynde i che lād of Lymougne Without any sparyng che W
 iche they chargid apne che folke in to Scotland for to Wete

How King Arthur aged of Merlyn the adventures
 of vi. che last kynges che Werren to regne in England &
 how che land shal ende

f It quod merlyn In che yere of Inuaracion of
 Jesu criste M. CCC. x. v. shal come a lambe oute
 of Wyndestre che shal haue a Wit to geve & che che
 & he shal haue Wateryn his herte & lyuiffe This lambe
 shal make many goddes wyffe & he shal haue pte the most
 pt of all his lyfe And he shal make one of the faitest pla
 ces of the world che in his tyme shal not fully be made
 anede & in the ede of his lyfe a Wolf of a fremd lād shal
 do hym moche harme and & for we churgh Were but Ale
 che ende lambe shal be master thurgh helpe of a rede fox
 che shal come oute of the north West and hym shal cō
 me and Wolfe shal be in Water and afere that tyme the
 lambe shal lyue

out one of his horses & then the said William Hunger &
 for want of good use of his goods & mortal of his land in
 the beginning of his reign shall be wasted. The goods
 shall go to France & shall open the door of his life and
 of his. In his reign the shall arise again in. Comen
 to the shall have fathers of other that of past shall be with
 out pen of the land & he shall be of the house of the and of
 the shall be shamefully by a law of the and after
 shall be made by the of men upon the coast of the sea and
 the shall be full of castles & many other counce shall
 be made by the. In his reign shall be the the the
 house & a family shall be done upon the coast of the for
 a field or dyne as a shield. And as the family shall be
 many. The house the for the family shall be called the
 the family. And the for the the shall be the good mo
 the the & he shall come out of the south west and of
 his the the shall be the good of his land till the
 the the the the shall be the the the the the the the
 he the the in a the the and the shall be the the
 the he had lost & more the to for a the shall come out
 of the North west the shall make the good for a the &
 he shall be the the of his men as the the the of the
 the the the first shall be in the for the the the the
 the the the shall be the the the the and after he shall
 shall come again in to this land. The the the the the
 to the the the to many on & so the shall be the the good
 the he shall be the the the the the the the the the the
 the good and the the shall come at the the the the the
 and shall be the the and for the the the the the the
 a the the the the the the the the the the the the the
 the the and the the shall be the the the the the the
 the the the the the the the the the the the the the
 the the the the the the the the the the the the the
 the the the the the the the the the the the the the

next that shall stonde upon a broken brugge on whom eche
 sonnes shall cast hir stones & many shall hym sell for verie
 that fro hym shall come In the same shall die for so we ga
 in a popl of his Land so that many landes shall lene on
 hym the more holder after ward & eche wo o wres shall do
 moche harme to the forsaide flour of lyfe & hir shall be in
 distresse so that she shall passe ouer in to fraunce for to make
 paye hir wene chyn good & the flour shall be the shal duel
 to all a tyme that hir seed shall come & seche hir & they shal
 be till a tyme that they shall hym eche with grace
 & they shal seche eche o the and shall put hym to despitous
 to ch & after shall this goode lene brought to disce & gate
 augnyssh & in for we shal lene all his lyfe.

a For this Boote shall come oute of Bynde son a bo
 what shall haue or haue of whete a hons herre &
 a pitous & byng his visage shall be wste to hke me his bast
 shall lene franching of chris to hym that lene a chris his
 worde shall be gospel his being shall be make as aombe In
 the first pte of his wgn he shal haue gate payne to Jus
 se he am ehat lene In new de And in his tyme shal his la
 de be multiplied with aliens And this low churchfres
 masse of heres that he shal haue shal make Woltes become
 lates and he shal be called church out the world boor of
 holpnesse fersensse of nobilite and of mekenesse and he
 shall done mesamblg all that he shall haue to done By do Bur
 gh of Iherusalem and he shall whete his eare upon the pates
 of paris and Bpouin. Landee Spaigne shall tumble for
 drede Castaigne shall were In fraunce he shall pue his
 Byng his grante shall rest in Englonde softlyt Ol
 magne shall quake for drede of hym This boote shall be
 mantellies to 17. countes of Englonde and shall make
 the River Renna by ch blood and by ch Byngne

flour de lyfe

30
he shall make many men red & he shall get as moche
as his Gynestres diden & it that he & his shall be
enies & he shall put a land in to gette subuertine & af-
ter it shall be reduced and not in his tyme This booke after
he is ded for his doughtynesse shall be entered at Coligny
& his land shall be than full filled of all good

a After the Booke shall come a lambe that shall haue
feet of ded an hede of bras an hert of a lyge a lyp
and an eyre & in his tyme his land shall be
pres the first yere of his regne he shall make a cite that
the world shall see ther of This lambe shall live in his ti-
me a grete pr of his lande thurgh an hydous Wolfe but he
shall recover it & geue a lordship to an Eagle of his lande
& this Eagle shall well gouerne till the tyme that prides
hall hym ouercome Alas the for we for he shall dye Of
his broethers suered & after shall the lande fall to the forsa-
id lambe that shall gouerne the land in pres all his lyfeti-
me & after he shall die and the land be full fylled Of all
maner good.

a After this lambe shall come a molde Warpant
fed of goddes mouth a captyf a ward an hore
he shall haue an Eldre & lyne as a gode & Regnauon
shall fall vpon hym for synne In the first yere of his regne
he shall haue of all good geete plenty in his lande & to ward
hym also & in his lande he shall haue geete prising till
the tyme that he shall suffer his people synne in to moche pri-
de without chastisynge Wherefor god wull be woth Then
shall aryse by a dragon of the north that shall be full
fere & shall meke were apon the forsaide Molde Warre &
shall geue hym battell vpon a ston. This dragon shall ge-
de apon it in his companye a Wolfe that shall out come of
West to begynne Whereafore the forsaide Molde Warre in
his hert & so shall the dragon and he hym & his wiles to ge

In the day shal come a lion out of Ireland the shal fal
 in company with him & than shal treble the land & that
 than shal be called Englonde as an aspen with in the cy
 me shal castles be felld adon upon champaigne & it shal be
 me that sentent shal be drie for the bodys time I shal fal
 dre than the ny-chief shal in Englonde shal mine In
 blood & ghte dird shal be and angust the shal arise
 After the molder warpe shal the and the dragon The l3
 & the Wolfe shal shal dune a way and the land shal be
 without him the Molder Warpe shal haue no maner pa
 tr sauf out a schipe wher to he may wende And after
 that he shal gone to lunde whan he see is wiche drabe And
 after that he shal geue the chand pr of his lunde for to ha
 ue fourthe part in pres & aft and after he shal lue in for
 We all his lye tyme And in his tyme the hote lates shal
 lundownen wold & after that shal the Molder Warpe die
 aventurely and so shal the for We for he shal be
 drapne in a fild of the for his seed shal become fadels in
 strange land for iunior And than shal the land be de par
 ted in th parties that is to say to the Wolfe to the dragon
 to the lgon and so shal it be for iunior And than shal
 this land be called the land of conquest And so shal the
 westfull limes of Englonde mde How Arthur ouer
 me Guplomen the Was lving of Ireland and so the sco
 tes lcomen his men

C. septu. vi

The Guillemore the Was lving of Ireland had
 rydunge the lving Arthur Was enend at gla
 sterbury he ordyned a guth power of Iassmen & come to
 the for wiche Iassmen & come in to weland ouer the
 for & arrived faste by the that lving Arthur Was with his
 wost & anon as he wiche the of he bet to warde lving and
 pafe lving lundre and ouercome hym anon & the And
 Guillemore fledde by the lving men spynn to Ireland And

When this disconfiance was done arthur turned hym a
 yene that that he was in to the place that that he had desce
 ede Swetes & Wolde hane hym alle slayne but the bisschops
 pre Alldates & ocher folke of the cōm and ladies open hē
 come before kyng Arthure & cried hym mercy and said gen
 til kyng & myghty haue mercy & pite of Be And as your
 selfe ben of the aghe la we to hold & mayntē castel dome
 full with dishonour it holde he to quēte hym that bytue in
 almyghty god as ye done & for goddes loue haue mercy &
 pite of vs & suffer vs for to lue for we haue had moche for
 we & pyn for the sayons hane many tyme thurg our lon
 de passed but that is noghe y no we to go we for often tye
 nies they haue done vs for we & disese For our castelles
 they haue taken & our bestes slayn and eten & moche lare
 me they hane vs done & yf ye wolde no we vs quēteit w
 ew none honour to a kyng to quēte hym that euen hymmer
 cy for y no we ye haue y done & vs ouercome and for the
 loue of god suffer vs for to lue and haue mercy of cō
 sten peple that belue in crist as ye done When kyng Ar
 thur herde this for we he had pite of hym & gaf hym lye & l
 me and they fyll done to his feet & birome his kygmen & he
 toke of hym homages And after that kyng Arthure tur
 ned ayeen wich his host and come ayeen to portle and then
 alode during that viage And the gaf he all legers to Al
 lorch that had spoused his suster and ocher yfere gath pte
 it and the was Ba Wen his wifin due of yonge age and to
 all his ocher men that hym had serued in his wem he gaf
 rich yfere and he thanked hym moche of his good seruer

So we kyng Arthure spoused Cunow that was Cun
 nows wifin Erle of Cornowaille & after he cōquēde Of
 Guithmer all Ireland

C. lxxv. vij.

Then Arthure had brought his land in pte and
 wst and good state and wst was in every countre

the nonne he and wedded a Wyf that was called Gu-
 nor and made hir quene a fair lady and a geyll that Ca-
 dor the Erl of Cornuaille had longe tyme norished In
 his chambre that was his owne cosyn but neuer they had
 childe togedre and nochtles kyng Arthur lued hir won-
 der well and dely And anon as Wynter was passed he
 he assemble a grette hoost & all his barons & sayd that he w-
 olde wende in to Ireland for to conquer the land and he
 taried not longe that he ne passed ouer in to Irlande and
 Guikomer the kyng he assemble a grette hoost and pas-
 sail to kyng Arthur But Guikomer was disconsided
 and yelde hym to the kyng Arthur and bicom his man &
 to hym did feaulte and homage and of hym he helde all that
 land fro that tyme for ward And after passed kyng ar-
 thur furthymore and conquered Guiland & Ylland &
 toke homages of folke & of the land & ther dueked yij. yere
 in pees and wigned with ioye & myrthe and werred no
 maner man ne no man Upon hym And he bicom so con-
 tope & large & so honorab. that the Emperours coute
 of Rome ne none thurgh out all the worlde was not ac-
 comped to kyng Arthur that any man wist ne none so
 well prised And ther for the best knyghts of all Maner
 londes come to hym for to duelle and hym wsepued wyth
 good Wyll and merris And all the knyghts wern so go-
 od that no man kne we the werst and ther for kyng Ar-
 thur made a rounde table that when they sheld sytten to
 the mete all shuld be alchere and euenly serued at the ta-
 ble that none myghte make awaunt that None wer shere
 than othe And kyng Arthur had at that table Breys
 Freysmen Normans Flemynghes Burgouners Flaunders
 Loherms and of all the landes a this halfe monce of gor-
 ge And of his landes of Britaigne and of the grette co-
 netaill of Walys and of Ireland And of Scotland &

14
shorly telle of all the landes that Wolsey Burehshipp and
chualarie seche comen to kyng Arthurs court

Howe kyng Arthure come in to fraunce and con-
quered that lande of Froll that was Rouayne and
hym queld C. lxxviii.

It befell that kyng Arthure thurgh counceyll
of his barons and lordes wolde go to conquer
in all fraunce that tho was called Salle thurgh Romaines
that tho had that land in hir power and in hir lordshipp
and the romayns had take that lande to a noble knyght
and worthy of body that was called Jwelle & when he wiste
that Arthure come he ordeyned an host and a grette power
fough with the kyng And he and his folke were discomfy-
ted and chynnes they fled to Paris and entered the to-
une and closed the pates and after hem herde Arthure wiste
that Jwelle was gone to paris he pursued after and come to
the & hym beseged but the cite was so stronge and well a-
rayed and tho that were withyn defended hem well & ma-
ny kyng Arthure duelled there more than a moneth and
after was so much pray in the cite and dispendeth all his
vitayles that were withyn and so grette hunger became a-
monge them that they desired wonder chylde withyn the ci-
te for hunger and comen to Jwelle and prayed hym to be
accorded with kyng Arthure for to have paye and then wol-
de geve hem to hym and the counse also Jwelle saw that no
longer he nor myghte holde the toune agens his will & trust
gavel upon his owne straungers and sente to kyng Arthure
that he shold come fighte with hym body for body & so shold
they spee fraunce but wene hem & so kyng Arthure anon gra-
unted it & wolde nat that non of his peple shold take the
for hym And upon the mor he soche comen well armed
withoute Paris that they shold fight & anon they sa-
myghten to gedres so fersege & so well they foughten In

both sides that no man coude seme the better of he And so
 it befell that frowe gaf Arthur such a stroke that he lye
 led to the grounde wolde he neld he & as frowe wythdrew
 his sword he wounded kyng arthur i the forche & hac the
 blood fell a done by his piene his face Arthur anon ster
 re by brailly Why he fete hys hirt as a ma that semed al
 most dede & he toke Tabourne his good suerd & dro we re
 Upon high & pafe frowe such a stroke & hac thet with the
 clafe his hert done to the shol dres so that his helme myze
 nat he his warrat & schafille a done de in the place & the
 of the cite & made gate for we for frold anon enuechon yet
 to hem to kyng Arthur & the toun also & become his men
 & did to hym homage & faulte & he vnderfenge hem & to
 ke of hem good hostages & kyng Arthur after that went
 forth with his hoost & conquered Augie & Angiers Gswi
 ne Pehis Nauerne Burgoyne Berry Lothorne Taryn
 & Pichers & all the othir land of fraunce he conquered hol
 lyche Whiche had all conquered & taken by homages & feau
 tis he turned agene to paris and ther he duelled longe tyme
 & ordeyned pres longe tyme ouer all the contrey & churgh
 ouer all fraunce And when pres was made ou all churgh
 his noble knyghthood that he had & also for his owne wor
 thynesse and no ma was he neuer so grette a lord durst nor
 mine was agens hym nochtir to arise for to make the land
 of fraunce i quyt and pres he woned ther ix. yere & did ther
 many grette goodes and wroued many proude man and
 kepte auncie & hem chastised after his deservise.

So kyng Arthur auailed all his men that had en
 uailed in his seruice

C. lxxix

And after ward it befell thus at esmy ther that
 he helde a fest at Paris richly he gan auance his
 knyghthe for his seruice that had hym helde i his conquest
 he pafe so hrofti ward that was called Raye Rugger &

F iiij

Angiers And to Beddeler his brother he gave Normans
 dyce that was called Neustre And to holdpue his chā
 burlygne he gave Flaundres and Maer and to Doull his
 cousin he gave Colbygne And to Richard his Nephew he gave
 pountis And to all othir he gave large landes & fees after
 theyr Writ of estate & When Arthure had thus his knyghtes
 fessed at a uenall nepe after sueving he come agene in to Bri
 tayne his a Wue land And after at Wyndesore nepe
 he Wyng by counsell of his barons he wolde be crowned kyng
 of Blomergon & helde a solempne feste and let sompnyng
 ges Elys & barons that they shold come thider euenechone
 Ther was scater kyng of Sweland Cadwal kyng of so
 uth Wales Guylomer kyng of north Wales Madoc kyng
 of Ireland. Malmaguse kyng of Guernsey. Achilles ky
 ng of Isele and Alch kyng of Denmark. Bone was ky
 ng of norwep & hys cousin kyng of Denkyng. Cadwal ky
 ng of Isele. But rygne Mordach erl of Corn Waller man
 tan erl of gloucester guer don erl of Wyndesore Boell erl
 of herford Dracy erl of Oseford. curfall erl of Barke
 Jonas erl of chester Eneall erl of Dorsette. Symon erl of
 salisbury Wodech erl of. Caisterbury Jugerne erl of che
 chester. Mall erl of lycester & the erl of Warwyke & ma
 ny othir rich lordes. Barons also the comen that is to
 say dypon donand & geues & many othir that he had
 nempned. Weren at that feste & many a fair feste kyng Ar
 thure had holde before. But neuer none suchne so solempne
 & that lasted y^e 3. dayes With moche honour & myght.

Of the latter that was sent from the cite of Rode for pris
 to kyng Arthure

C. lxxx

The vij. day after kyng Arthure satte at his mette a
 monge his knyghtes and among hem that satte a
 the feste aforthe hem come in vij. eldren men of age wylle &

ried and courteously salued the King and said they come
 from Rome sent as messagiers fro the Emperour and to
 be to hye a letter that thus moche was to Wylfred Grece
 by Dometrix Archibishop that thouware on this hardie W
 ith open in thy herte to make open Wre & contrarie apens be
 of Rome that o Wey all the world to deme for thou hast neu
 gie before this tyme proued ne assaid the sturges of the
 romans and therfore thou shalt in a littell tyme. For
 Julius Cesar conquerd all the land of Britaigne and
 toke the of treuge and our folk haue it longer had and
 no the church thy pade thou wichest it Wre for Wre
 maunde the that thou it yelde apene & gie last thou more
 folp done that thou hast slayn frolle that was our lord of
 fuma all Wiche wronge & therfor all the comunes of Rome
 warnen & comaunde the upon the & lyme that thou I last
 be at Rome amende to make of thy mysdoes that thou hast
 done And yf it so be that thou come nouze we shall passe
 the hyke of Joye Wiche sturges & we shall the sette Wre o
 ut thou may be founde and thou shalt nat haue a fote of
 land of thyne owne that we ne shall bestowe & after Wre
 Wiche thy body we shall done our Will when this lre was
 rad and all men ic heed thy Wre anoyed all the Wre at
 that solempnitie & the Britons Wold haue slayn the messas
 giers sue the King Wold not suffice hem & sayd that the
 messagiers shold haue none harme & no we by wison non de
 ferue but comaunded hem to be Wurschip fully serued &
 after mete he wold counail of Kinges erles and barons what
 answere he myght geue apene to the messagiers and they co
 milled hym at onis edat he shold assemble a grette po Wre of
 all the landes of which he had lordship & manly anenge
 hym upon the Emperour of the despier that he had set hy
 such a lre and thy shoren by god and by his Names
 that thy shold hym pursue and brene as meche as thy

Fin

This my lord
 of the King's
 to the King

myghte & said that they nold neuer faille kyng Arthure,
and rather to be dede & they let write a letter to sende to the
Emperour by the same messagiers in this maner

Of the bolde answer that kyng Arthure sent to the em
perour of rome & to the romans C. lxxvi

W Understondesth amonges yo^r We of Rome that I am
kyng Arthure of Britaigne & feely it hold & shall
hold & at rome wastely I will be nat to pene yo^r cruage
but for to ayeu cruage for Constantine that was elynges
sone that was empour of Rome and of all the honour that
shee to belonged And Maximian kyng conquered all fra
unce & Almagne & mont Jope passed & conquered all lū
bardie & thesee y. Wem myne aunceltes and that they hel
de and had I shall haue thurgh goddes Wyll.

Of the auerens that Arthure did to the emperours mes
sagiers of rome C. lxxvii

W Then this letter was made & anseld kyng Arth
ure to the messagiers pafe grete giftes and after
that the messagiers toke hit leue and Vene thens and come
to the curre of Rome ayeue & tolde the Emperour by W.
orehly they were Underfongen and whiche a nalle compa
nie he had hym to serue and to be he was mortally serud
than the Emperour or any kyng luyng in the world &
When the Emperour had sapue the letter & herde that w
as ther pya and sa w that Arthure wolde nat be ruled after
hym he let assemble and ordeyne an huge fest for to dystreie
kyng Arthure yf that he myghte And kyng Arthure as tou
ching his poer and parthe ordeyned his poer and luynghees
of the rounde table.

Of the luynges and luydes that comen to helpe kyng ar
thure agens the Emperour Ca. lxxviii

e The kyng of Swelande and of Ireland and of que
tland and of denmarke and of Almagne euey of he

had y^m men the Duc of Normandie Gascoyne Flaunde
 Depite and of Bologne had iij^m M^m Geryn of Chartres
 had y^m Hoek of Britaigne had vij^m m^m e hym selfe of hooz
 Breiland vij^m m^m and of Grelastres e of archiers e of
 ocher folk in sooe that no man coude hem nombre and
 then all went wyth for to wende kyng Arthure his land e
 Gynnon his wife toke to hem one of his nephews that
 was a wys knyght e an hardy that was called Mordred
 but he was nat all to we as y^e shal see after wards kyng
 Arthure toke all his waulme to this Mordred sauf only
 the crowne And after that kyng Arthure hadde his host e
 went to southeampton there that the shippes were broughe
 and the folk assembled e they w^en hem to the see e had go
 od wynd e wether at will e also sone as they myght they
 arrived at Harfleur And as sone as they myght they
 went out of hir shippes e spredden all the contree

So the kyng Arthure foughte with a geaunte in spayne
 that was called Dinabur that queld Elyne that was
 kyngs sone of Kene Britaigne C. lxxxiii

kyng Arthure had not duelled in the contree but ali
 the while that menne tolde hym that the was co
 men a geat geant in espayne e had maistred fair Elyne
 that was sone to the kyng of Britaigne e had broughe hir wyf
 an hyl that is called the mouer of seint Gerard e that
 was no mayne that contree so bold ne so hardy that durst
 with hym fighe ner come n^eer the place that geant du
 elled e he was called Dinabur that moche for we w^ed in the
 contree When kyng Arthure herde this tydyng he called li
 ey and Bede were e commaunded hem to do p^rue y^e and
 espye wher the geant myght be found e they comen to the
 Rynge ther that men sholde gone to the mouer that
 was all enclofed aboute with water And yit is and ever
 shal be And they

[illegible]

they comen agene to the host they tolde wherfor they hadde
 trouthe & she wed to him the heid & every man was gladd
 Joyfull of the worthynesse that kyng Arthure had done
 that was his lorde And Boel was full for he full for his
 new that was so loste & after when he had space he made
 a fair chapel of our lady on Elgins tombe

Thy kyng arthur gave bataille to the empour in the
 hiche bataille the empour was slayne C. lxxxv

a Rehur & his peple had tyding that the Empour
 had assailed a gate wether as well of of samis as
 of papynus & cristen men wher off the nobles was lxxxv
 M. hors men & foot men Arthure and his peple ordeyned
 fast forth in his way to wether the Empour & passed Nor
 mandie and fraunce by to Burgoyne and wold euen ha
 ue gone to the hoost for men tolde hym that the Empour
 host wold come to luan The empour and his host in the be
 gynnynge of August tmeued fro rome & ca forth right the
 way to ward the host comyn kynge Arthurs spies & saia yf
 that Arthure wold he shold fonde ther fast by the Em
 pour: but they said that the Empour had so greet power w
 ith hym of knyghtes of the lande and of papynus yfow and
 also casten peple that it was but greet folie to kyng Arth
 ure to meete wether hym for the spies tolde that the Empe
 our had v. men or by agens one of his kyng arthur w
 as hold and hardy gefer no chynge hym dismayed & said
 go we boldly in goddes name agens the remains that w
 ich hem be samis & papynus that no maner trust they
 haue to god but only upon his sturges So we no we & se
 ch hem whar they be in the name of Almyghy god & slee we
 the papynus and casten men that ben cunnies wether hem
 for to destroye cristen men and god shall be helpe for we
 haue the ryght And therfor haue we trust in god And
 do we so that the ene.

¶ Hen the domaine Wist that the Emperour Was
de they for Dole the felde and the paynys of
so And lyng Arhent.

after hym chawd till it was nyzt & so many of hem quel'd
 that it was wonder to telle & the curued kyng Arthur a
 pye tho it was nyzt & thanked god of his victorie & In the
 mor wele he wolde see all the felde for his knyghtes that he
 had thet loste that is to say Gurnal erle of maule Bede Were
 & Ray and Agiers erle of Flobigne Wyegeth erle of Baac a
 loch erle of Wynchestre Eursall erle of chestre & after that
 in erle of Flaundres thes were the grette lordes that kyng
 Arthur left in that bataille amonge othir worthy knygh-
 tes & soe he let entier in abbies by thet dem somme he let be
 borne in to his owne cōtre & the Empours body he let ta-
 ke & pue vpon a beere & sent it to Rome & sent to say the ro-
 mals that for Britaigne & France wiche that he hadde othir
 eruage wold he non pay & yf they ayed hyz any othir ex-
 ages nyghte suche eruage he wold hem pay The kyng let be
 a key to lienen his owne castell & ther he was entred & li-
 gier was borne to Flobigne ther he was lord & holden w-
 as borne to Flaundres and ther he was entred & all the o-
 thir he let entier wiche moche honour in abbies & in houles
 of religion in the cōtre ther that they were wiche & Arthur
 hym selfe soionned that same yere in Burgoyne wiche
 his host & thoughte the same yere for to passe the mo-
 unte of Joye & haue gone to wiche all for to take the cite and
 haue pue the romals in subiectid but thet they had thraunt
 mordred hym lē as after ye shall her.

So w mordred the traitour to whom kyng Arthur to-
 ke his land to kepe and his Cstelles and held ye agens
 hym

C lxxxvij.

Thē kyng arthur had callē to mordred his reauē
 to kepe & was goē agēs the epour of rōe & was
 passed the for mordred anon toke homages & frauces of alle
 hē that were i this lāde & wold haue had the lāde to his
 & vse & toke castelles aboute & let hē come & affect this

fallenesse he did an otheie grette wronge for apens the lorde
of cistenece he toke his o wne emes wife as a traitour shold
e ordyned hym a grette host apens Arthure comyng to hel
de the lande apens hym Wyth stronghe for eamow and to
sle kyng Arthure yf he myght e send by the see e land e
like assemble papynys e cristen peple e he sente to sayones
e to danops for to helpe hym e also Mordred sente to chel
drick to done ma to come to hym oute of Saxoyne that was
as a Worthye duke e byhet hym yf that he broughe Wyth
hym moche peple he wold graunte hym in heritaige for euer
more alle the lande from beyonde Humbra By to scotland
e all the lande that Engist had of Wotiger yist When that
he spoused his doughter e Cheldrill come Wyth grette stronghe
e poer of peple e Mordred had assembled also in his halfe
that they had yll m-of stronge knyghtes When that they had
nede

How Arthure enchaunted mordred the traitour e ho
we he was slayne e also kyng arthur wolided to dethe.

W Then this tydunge come to kyng C. lxxxviij:
arthure ther that he was i burgoyne he was full
for anoied e colde alle fraunce to helpe for to slepe Wyth halue
det of his me e prynced hym that he wold it slepe till he cōe
apen for hyz selfe wold wed in to britaigne e auēge hym
ypō mordred that was his traitour e forth wēt his w
ay e cōe to wichestrand e made his me gone in to schipe e
wold haue arriued at sūde wiche e broughe Wyth hym a gre
te host of fraunce also Wyth his o wnelāde but er that he my
ght cōe to lōde Wyth his peple that were comē ouer of his s
chipes mordred was comē Wyth all his poer e yafe a
stronge battaille so that kyng arthur lost many a mā er that
he myght comē to lōde for the was Gawe his nephew slayn
e anguissell that helde scotland e many otheie wēt of kyng
arthure was full forye but after that they were cōde to lōde

mordred myghte not aynes hym endure but anon he was di-
 sconfited and fled & thens the same myghte with his men
 & hym the morne to loundon the of the cite wolde not suf-
 fer hym to come in & from thens he fled to Wynchester and
 ther he helde hym with his peple that with hym come kynge
 Arthure leete take the body of Ga Wen his wyf and the bo-
 dy of Manguissell and let hym be borne in to Sweland In
 to hit owne countre & ther they were entred & after anon
 kynge Arthure namme his wey to destroye Mordred & fled fro
 thens in to Cornewaile the queene Guinevere that was kyng
 Arthurs wyf that she sojourned a while & had that
 mordred was fled thens that he was & myghte not endure
 aynes kynge Arthure she was for adrad & had quite dore &
 wist not what was best all for to done For she wist well
 that hir lord kynge Arthure wolde never of hir have mercy.
 For she grete shame that she to hym had done & nomme
 hir wey pruely with in .j. men with oute mo & come to a
 nitione & ther she duelled all hir lyf that neuer was seyn
 amonge folke hir lyf during Arthure wist that mordred
 was fledde to Cornewaile & he send after his men in to
 Sweland & Northumberland In to humber & he assable fol-
 ke withoute nombre & comen fro thens in to cornwaile to
 seche & pursue after mordred & mordred had assable to
 hym all the folk of cornwaile and had peple withoute
 nombre & wist that Arthure was comig & had leuer to die
 & take his chaunce longer fle and abide & gaf an hard bat-
 tle to kynge Arthure & to his peple so that so moche peple
 was slayn what of that on half & In that othir that no
 man wist who had the better part but so it befell at the last
 that mordred was slayn & all his folk & the good chival-
 lers that kynge Arthure had gadred & norissed of his ladys
 & also the noble knyghtes of the round table that so moche
 was praised thurgh out all the world were there.

Arthur & arthur hym selfe Was Bounded to the Sea But
he the hym he borne in a skiff to a surgie to the head of his
Bounde & put the bierds suposen that he lyue in another
land & that he shal come yet and conquer all Britayne
But with this is the prophete of Merlyn he said that his
Seh shal be doubting & said soch forme ether of put haue don
See & shulle for a more as me saith Fur myn byt nat We
ether that he lyuech or is dede. At that Was borne to ar
lone the xxij. yere of his agte after the Incarnation of our
lord Ihu crist D.C. and xlviij. yere To the King Ar
thur deliuered the wgaume to Constantyn the sone of Ca
dor his Nephew C. lxxviij.

Then King Arthur Tiste that he myght no longer
wgaume he came bi some hym Constantine that
Was Cadur sone erle of Corowaille his cousin & to hym bide
he all hym waulme & to hym said and had hym ether of to
ben King till that he come a peneser as much as he had no
neir of his body begoten & gude harme Was it that So
noble a King & so doubte had no child of his body begoten
But all thyng that god Wull haue done must by done
his name be blessed withouten ende Amen

To the King Constantine Was Berred of Mercurius &
Jones

This Constantine Was a noble knyght and a wor
thy of body & the ij. sones that he mordered had he
gotten had grete myght Constantine that the Was crowned
King & so that they begonne to mine Tere agens hym & as
sembled a grete host of men that Were bi fore by the men
deide & had bene dinnen a way & that by a more so the
church all that land that one by the other had hym to lo
don for the the Tere & that other to Wyndesore but C
stantine come to London & shew hym that Was there after
he Wite to Wyndesore shew hym that there Was also so

in the last part

From the MS. of the

MS. of the

MS. of the

MS. of the

MS. of the

MS. of the

MS. of the

MS. of the

MS. of the

MS. of the

that his enemies Were dede And When Constanti
ne had reigned Worthely in yere he died & lieth at London
Of the knyghts Alderlyght and of Edell C. lxxxv).

A Far kyng Constantines descher Were ii. kny
ges in Britaigne the one Was called a delbraghe
the Was a danow & helde chedre of Norfolke & south
folke that oche hight Edell & Was a bried & helde nyghol
Londres & all the land by to humber Thise ii. knyges
fast werred to gedres but after they Weren accorded & lo
wed to gedre as they had be borne of a bodi The kyng Ed
ell had a suster the Was called Or Wenne & he gave hi
church grette frendship to kyng Alderlyght to Wyfe & he
legate on hir a doughter the Was called Argeneil & in
the nyght after come vpon hyr a stronge sikenesse that ne
dre he must die & he sente to kyng Edell his brother in la We
that he shold come & speke with hym & he come to hym by
th good Will & so praid he the kyng & coniuerted also in the
name of god the after When he Was dede he shold take Or
geill his doughter & the land & the he kepte hir well & no
nister hir in his chamber And When she Was of age she shold
be married to the strongest & Wurchiest man that he myght
fnde and than he shold geue hyr land agene & he ge
guarnteed it & by oth confirmed his pmaier And When Al
derlyght Was dede & entred Edell to be the the damisell Or
geill & notified hir in his chamber and she become the fai
rest creature that myght lye or any may fynde

So the kyng Edell married the damisell to a knaue of
his lychene C. lxxxvi

the kyng Edell the Was vnkil to the damisell
Argeneil & thought so the the he myght falsly ge
ue the land from his new for euer more & falsly payens hyr
the thought to disayue the damisell and so made hir to a
knaue of his lychen the Was called Cutan and he become

Conan
Conan
the Worthiest & strongest man of body that any man was
in any land that eue lived & to hym he thought hit shoulde
ly haue married for to haue had hir land after ward, but
he was eue disceyued for this Curan that was haue her
kes son: that was kynge of Kyrtellane & demarke & this Cu
ran conquered his wifes land & she the kyng Edelf that was
as his wifes vncle & had all hir land as in an othe place
with all her mortowyn & he ne regned but in .xv. yers for say
ons & danors hym queld & that was grette harme to al Bri
taine & Britons lawe hym to stonhenge and ther they hym
entered with moche honore

Of kyng Conan

Ca. lxxxviii

a After this Curan reigned Conan that was liued
in that was a wonder proude knyght & regned
& wold haue no maner due but euer he was medelyng with
his peple & toke his vncle with werra & queld hys .ij.
chil dren the sayones werra a yens hym oft tymes but
hym ouercome at the last & so he was in pces all his lyf tyme
and he regned .xiii. yers & after he died and lyeth at
London

Of kyng Cortis and of Burmonde that comen thurgh
he the paynyms in to Britaigne

Ca. lxxxix

a After this Conan reigned his cosyn Cortis that was
as biated of all his peple and no thing he loued &
this Cortis lost all Britaigne thurgh werra and in hys tyme
felle that grette myschance in Britaigne that cristendom was de
stroyed and all the Britons were driven oute and the land
to sayons as ye after wards shall see for in that tyme there
was a paynyme that was called Gurmold that was the
kynges sone Dauides of the paynyms folke that had a
waulme after his fadre & was kyng sauf he began a th and
yaf it to his brothe & said that he wold neu be kyng but if

he misse geth a conquerer a name in a strange countre For
 he was bold and excheitunge of body and of hyr profeci
 er. Merlin and said. that he shold be a Wolfe of the see & he
 let assemble paynyms. Bygoute nombur and let a parill
 shipes and went by many byndes and take homages and
 franchises of many. and so he went by the see and conquered
 many dyvers lands so that he come in to Irel and a con
 quered that land that ofte tymes wead byon batons and
 batons byon him & ofte women & ofte lysten; and yue
 hostages to batons & so they sent to Gurmound the: that
 he was in Irel and that he shold come in to Britaigne and
 helpe hem a gylt the batons. to helpe hem deliuer that land
 of hem and they wolde hym wolde gladly for his lord; for
 he was a paynyme and they were paynyms and the bat
 tons were casten. Wel ought he them for to helpe so as they
 were of one laide. When Gurmound herd this prayer he bas
 ted hym as moche as he myghe and stoued in scotland &
 comen to Northumberland the: that the sayens were duel;
 lye. & they conformed the counaunt; biewene hem that
 was made by othes & by hostages for to be hym to we say
 & holde hym forbið & pay to hym treuage by yere Tho he
 gan the sayens & the Affricans to destroe wylde & brenne
 houses and destroe all thyng in as moche as they myghe
 and spare neither man woman ne child ne lard ne lorde
 that of the quene & cast a downe houses castelles & chur
 ches & so put they all the land in grette destructione as son
 as they myghe. then they fledde then as wel po as rich
 byshops abbottes chonons. & all othe grette & smale some
 in to the Britaigne & somme in to wintreale. Al the that
 chippes myghe have
 Tho the kyng Gurmound drofe the kyng Cortise to Chi
 cherster and queld the batons and though quentile ge
 te the counte.

Capitula lxxxv

Enter the kynge falye chens in to Chichester chace
Was a good Cite and a stronge & chere helde by
xx daies. And thes Surmond is sayed. But the Cite
Was so stronge that he myghte not take that Cite by no ma-
ner engyn that he myghte done. So by thoughte they opon a
grete queyntise for to breake the towne they made engins
With grete of nettes and tolken pieces of cunder and of fi-
re and bounde it to the sparres feet and after ward the
hem flie and they anoue right falye and lodged hem in the
towne ther that hir nestes were. and in skilles and in eu-
eryng of houses. and the fire began to brenne brent all the
towne. & When the Britons saw that in every side they hid
hem oute & fauze but anay they were floyne and dis-
comfired and Whiles the bataylle dured the kynge pryncely
hid hym and stalked a waye in to Walles and men with neuer
wher he bycome and so Was the towne of Chichester taken
& destroyed. And after went Surmond and destroyed Cys-
tees and townes that neuer were after ward made agayn
as it is seyn yie in many places.

Howe this land was clepyd England for the name of
engist and how many kynges were made after in the
land

Capitulo lxxxvi

When Surmond had destroyed all the land churgh
oute he gaf the land to thes sayons a wote the toke it
With good wyll for the sayons luyg kynne had desired it
for as moche as they were of Engystes kynne that first
had all the land of Britaigne and the he hem he called
Englissmen for enchesom of Engistes name. And the
land the he calle it England in his langage & the folke
he called Englissmen for as moche as in his kynne it
was called Engistes luyg. When he had conquered it of the
eiger that had espoused his daughter but from the tyme
that bruce come fyrst in to england this land was called

bataigne & the folk batons But sith the tyme that this
 Gurmond of fones conquered it & gaf it by to the saxons
 & they anon aȝhe changed the name as bifore is said And
 when this was don gurmodd passed ouer in to fraunce &
 coquered many landes & distruied all cristen peple ther that
 he com & the saxons dwellid in this land & begone fast it
 to in habite at hir owne wyll & they wolde haue made new
 kynges & lordes but they myȝhe neuer assenten to haue on
 ly oþing for to be to hem entendaunt & therfore they made
 many kynges in dyuerse Shires as it was in Engestes
 tyme The first kyngdome was kent & that oþer southse
 re & the thirde Westsexe & the iijth estsexe & the v northumber
 lād & the vi estangl that is to seyn morethfolk & fourthfol
 & the vij mereborethe that is the tithdom of nichol hūepng
 done herford gubchester Wynchester Ware Wilke & derby & so
 departed the englyssh all england in vij parcies And af
 ter that it be fel that the kynges werid of the tyme to godw
 & euer be that was strongest bynōme hym that was feblist
 & so it was long tyme that they had no kyng crowned a
 monyes hym ne no cristen man was the amonges hym ne
 costendome noȝer But þen paynymes till that saint Gre
 gorie was pope of rome that had seyn childe of the nacion
 of england in the cite of rome that þen wonde saint crea
 tures & had gatte wyll & desir hym to beholde: & ayed of the
 marchauntz Whenus they were of what nacion & men
 told hym that they were of england & of englyssh they were
 called but they & all the peple of england were paynymes
 & belued noe byn god. *Quod* saint Gregorie well
 mo be thei be called englyssh for they haue the visages of
 Angles & therfore wel ouȝte they to be cristen And for
 this tuchson saint gregoir saint Sime Augustyn in to en
 gland and el good man with hym that were of good life
 and hely men to preche and teche & to conuert the Englyssh

peple and hem eurne to god. and that was in the viith yere
that seint gregorie had bene pope that is to say after the In
carnation of our lord ihesu crist & C lxxxviii yere as the
crowicles telleth

God seint augustin baptised & conuerted kyng aldelbryght
and the bisschoppes that he made his scholares. Ca lxxxviii
W hen seint augustin come fyrst in to Englonde he
arrived in the Isle of Cenece and so passed forth &
come in to Caunterberie ther sojourned And kyng aldel
bryght of kene that was of the kinage of Eugist fair & n;
derfong seint Augustin & his scholares with muchel honour
and hem foud all that hem neded & ferehermore he gaf
hem a faire place that no we is called the abbey of seint
Augustyns in whiche place he lieth hem self shewed this
kyng aldelbryght was a good man & with good will herd
seint augustins predicaciōs. and gaf hem lue to preche
thruogh all his land of kene to tūne and conuerce to him
all the peple that he myghte. Je he fell so after ward thruogh
goddis grāce that in liell tyme the kyng hym selfe was
conuerted to god & all his peple of his land was baptised
And in the mene tyme Whille the peple turned hem to god
Seint Augustin come to wuchestre. & there preched godis
word. The paynyms therfor hym feared and cast on hym
reithe willes. so that all his mantell was longed full of
reithe wille & for more despise they cast on him the guttes of
reithe & of filth wherfor the good man seint austyn was
fore annoyed & greued & praid to god that all the children
that shold be borne after ward in that cite of wuchestre most
have willen. & When the kyng with a herd of this tounge
as that was fall thruogh seint austyn prair: he let make an
house in honour of all myghty god wherin women shold
bedelivered of hir children at the beugges ende in which
house yit woman of the Cite lene delivered of child. When

seint gregorie had herde telle how the englysshmen were tui-
 ned to god & conuerted he send to seint austyn his pallone
 by a bysshop that was called Paulyn & made hym pmar
 & Erchebissop of England & send word that he shoulde
 ordyne & make byssopes in the land & anon as Austyn
 had the pallone of the dignite of the Erchebissop he made
 n byssopes of his felshewe that come with hym fro Rome
 that one was called melic & he dwelled at london and thas
 othr was called Justyn that held the dignite of wichester
 & this byssop melic the went to pseyche in to Essex & has-
 tised the kyng of the countee that was called Sic Wich this
 was kyng al del baghars cosyn his fustres sone This Justyn
 went to pseyche in southeose & turned much of the peple to
 god and seint austyn went hym self pseyching thurth out
 England

So the seint Austyn went in to Waller the that the bri-
 tons were and the they hold nat be obedienc to the Er-
 chebissop of Cantebury Capitulu pe bin
 to Hen all England was baptised & turned to god

Seint Augustyn Wendyn to that land the that
 the Britons were & for to keep hym from Englysshmen that
 is to segneyn to Wales and the he founde monkes & abbeis
 & by byssopes. for the Britons destroyed all way the cristen
 peple the seint Austyn had conuerted & said to the byssopes
 that he was a kyng of wme & pmar of all england & that
 they shold be all ason to hym be obedienc & they said that
 they nold. But to Erchebissop of Carlion & said they nol
 neuer for: no maner thyng bene obedienc to the englysshme
 for the englysshmen they said ben ou: aduersaries & our en-
 myes & have dūne vs out of our owne cōtry & we ben cristen
 men & euer have bene & the englysshmen haue euer ben pay-
 nyms but no we lath that they ben conuerted. Seint Aus-
 tyn mize of hym none answere haue othir wyse but sayde
 G in



apertly that they nold neuer hem make to hym ne to the
pope of Rome And seint Austyn turned agayn to the kyng
Gildbricht that was kyng of Kent & told hem that his
folk nold nor be to no man obedient but to the Archbis-
shop of Cantuar. And when the kyng herd this he was for-
annoied & said that he wold hem distour & fene to Olfred
kyng of Northumberland and that was his fadur that he shold
come to hym with all the power that he might & that he shold
metch hym at Aynstir and from thence they wold gone into
Waller and destroye the Archbisshop of Cantuar and all
the that had refused Seint Austyn

How kyng Gildbricht and the kyng Olfred queld
Brecmalt that was a kyng of Britons that helde the con-
trey of Aynstir

Capitulum lxxxix

He he fell so; that ther was a kyng Briton that
hede the contrey of Aynstir & all the contrey aboute
named Brecmalt. and this Briton herd that the two
englyssh kynges wold mete ther at Aynstir for to wende in
to Walles He let ordeyne all the power that he had for to
fighe with these ii. kynges but he was a boyled hym for
his folk that he had been slayne & hym self fled & left his
landes for evermore. & these ii. kynges Gildbricht & Olfred
duelled a while at Aynstir & departed the landes amonges
hem & taken homages & fealties of folk of the contrey. And
after they wenten to Ward Waller & the of Walles had herd
telle of this confiture that Brecmalt had at Aynstir & was
wonder fore adrad of the ii. kynges: & none & chese amonges
hem good men & holp of heremites monkes & prestres
& of ocher folk grece plantee that wenten thatfoote & well
werd for to have mercy of the ii. kynges But the kynges
were so sterne & so wylded that they nold neff speke with
hem but queld hem treichon. And as for for we for they ne
spared hem no more than the Wolf dothe the shepe but he

Bangor

King of the Britons of euenelond for all West then married we had
 to him come that is to Understonde & E. & pl. & after ward
 the King was for them to laugon for to quell all the
 that they might then fynde of the Britons & Benet Britons
 that he had assembled & destroyed all his poore for to fynde
 with him the was the & same in Wales that was called
 Rhodri of come Walle that for tyme was lord of Wales
 him but the King Alred had druen him in to Wal
 he & peny him hawke: at that battelle was King Alred
 King slaine Elfrid wounded for & forsoke the felde & the
 most part of his peple slayng Elfrid fled in to northhumber
 land that was his owne land. And after ward the peple
 of liastre shire made with strange Case Wan that was his
 cnyghts sone King of liastre & he after reigned nobly and
 so Cad Wan King of liastre and. With gite honoure
 Elfrid King of northhumberland were frendes & of the de
 late time after was his Wene Edwyn & Cadwalyn that
 were with his sone.

Capitulum Centesimo

And after that this battelle was done the breires of
 (Rhodri) & Wene & comen by to liastre & made
 Cad Wan that was Benet's sone King of liastre: of
 all the countre & he toke homages & frautes of all the folk of
 the countre & after that he assembled a grette host & said he
 wolde go in to northhumberland to destroy King Elfrid &
 slay him if he myght & when he was comen thider frendes
 Wene so his Wene him & made him accord in this manere
 that Elfrid shold hold all the land from humber by to scotland
 Cad Wan shold haue all the land a this side humber by to the
 south: & after that they became good frendes all his lyfe
 during & lived togedre as they hadde in burghen & this El
 frid had a sone that was called Edwyn that had & held all
 the land of northhumberland after his faders deeth as his fa
 ther had hold all his lyfes tyme & Cad Wan had an othe

hne ehar was called Cadwalyn ehar hel to his fader land
as he it helde. Whilke he was a life & they lived to gedre as
they had be buehryn: And ehe hure last die & one hyn but on
ly n ym. And after began deha die & one hyn eharst a lly
eher enuions wofyn of Cadwalyn ehar was called Brys
ens so ehar they assmblida gure hostyn boch parties. & at the
last it be felle ehar Cadwalyn was & scowfied & Edwyn
hyn pursued & drose hyn fro place to place so at last he slyp
in to Jeland And ehis othir destured his land & cast a do
une castelles & bent his maners & departed all Cadwalyn
land amoge his fander & long tyme after come Cadwa
lyn apene from Jeland with a strong po wer. & in plogne
bataille quelled Edwyn & all his fander shupes. and name
ly eho ehar withold his landes eharst Edwynes gife

How kynge Of Walde was quito eharst kynge Cadwa
lyn and Peanda and how Of Walde was seint Of Wal
de brocher signed after him and queld prade. Ca. C. i
Wode. hyn ehar Edwyn was slayne Offas his so ne In
sertolle ehe Werre agens Cadwalyn his Emc so
echar this Offris sidd during the Werre & after the & eth of
Offris eho signed a genepll cristen man ehar moche lured
god almyge. ehar had all the land of northumberland
by herytage ehar was called Of Walde. and he was kynge
of all ehar land. But for as moche as he was fander to Ed
wyn & helde a gure part of the land of Cadwalyn ehe
same Cadwalyn bentd vpon hyn & drose hyn to Ward
sweland And when Cadwalyn sa we ehar he nold noe a
hyn Cadwalyn nold no longer hyn pursue but toke som
me of his folk to prade his brocher in la we & pmyng Pea
da to pursue Of Walde till ehar he were take & slayne & cad
walyn eurned home apen when Of Walde herd the tpydng
echar Cadwalyn eurned home apen he Wold no longer fli

but also Meanda & gave him battail & Meanda was dis-
 comforted & fled & come againe to Cadwalyn & said that he
 wold neuer hold o foot of lond of him but of Wex so that
 he wold a bruce him of Of Wold Cadwalyn he assemble
 a gatre host for to fize with Of Wold so that he & wandacom
 by to northumberland & gave battail by to Of Wold & in
 the same battail was Of Wold slayne & his heire smyte of a
 aff he was encird at the abbeie of Wardeney in which place
 god hath wrought for hym many a fair miracle both ther &
 elles where. And anone Of Wy his brother seised in to his
 hand all the land that was of Waltes & the folk of north-
 umberland loved hym wonder wel & helde him for his lord
 but he had men of his kyn worthe y nowe that Woldes hane
 departed the lond & they werd to gedre & for as moche as
 they were nat strong y no the they comen to Meanda & pra-
 yed hym of helpe & socour & byghet hym of that lond largely
 upon couenane that he wold hym gyde & helpe & counayll:
 Meanda herd his praiere & so spake with the kyng cadwalyn
 that he shold ordeigne a gatre host & fast ordein him in to nor-
 thumberland for to fize with Of Wy. And Of Wy was a
 meke man & moche loved pees & charite & praid Meanda of
 loue & pees & proferd him of gold & of siluer gatre plante
 And this Meanda was so proud that he nolde graunte him pe-
 es for no man thing but for all thing he wold with hym
 fight so at the last ther was sed day of battail. & Of Wy ever
 had truste upon gode & this Meanda trust to moche upon his
 pyde & upon his host that he had & to gedre they smyten egu-
 ly but Meanda anone was discomforted & slayne & this
 was after the incarnation of our lord ihu crist vi. C. l. d.
 pere & this of Wy the kyngdome by him yow & alpyng that was
 called Of Wyne that was Meanda is now werd upon the
 Of Wy & to gedre fougben but Of Wy had the victon of of
 Wy & of Wy was discomfited & slayne & herth at cennemere

This was the
 end of the
 story of
 the
 king
 of
 the
 north

This was y^e last :

King of Britons
was gret
foure of corn
& veruile & dep
of many women
Bette
of y^e king
of Britons

How King Cadwaldr the last of Wales sons
signed off his father was the last king of Britons Ca c h
Gave the Duch of Cadwaldr signed his sons Ca
dwaldr well & uofelpe his moder was the sister of
King Manda & When he had signed y^e year he fell in to a
gret syknesse & then was ther so gret discord betwene the
lordes of the land that every on turned upon othir & put
in that ymn ther fell so gret Dych & scarce of corne and
othir vittailles in this lond that a man myghte goo in Dais
or in frow to toun to toun that he shold nat fynde to bye for
gold ne for syluar but wyne ne none othir vittaille wher
with a man myghte lyue. But only the peple lived by wyde
of herbes for othir luyng had they none so moche was it fa
lled aboute fiffthe wildeffes & all othir thyng so that pe
to this mayfauenture ther fell so gret mortallite & pestilence
among the peple. By the corruption of the air that the luyng
peple ne suffised nat to burye the dede bodies. for they dyd
so sodenly both gret & small lord & seruant thing goyng
spakig so that neuer was herd of more sodenly dyth among
the peple. For he that went for to burye the dede body. Wych
the same dede body was buried they that myghten fere fled
den & forsoke hir landes & houses as well for the gret hu
ger dwyth & scarce of wine & othir vittailles as for the ter
rible mortallite & pestilence in the land & enteyn to othir
landes for to save hir lynes & life the land all deserte. and
Wast so that ther was not any man to trowaille till the
lond ne ere ne so we so that the land was theryne of we
nes & all othir fruities for defaulte of tillers & this mys
ueneu redured y^e year and moe that no man myghte ere
ne so we.

How Cadwaldr went out of this land in Arll Dymyng
Cadwaldr sa w the grette hunger mortallite and
pestilence and the land all pour & falleng wynde

Wych
of y^e king
of Britons
of y^e king
of Britons

& after this he & his folke passed. and so we also the
 most part of his land all wasted and void of wylde beas-
 tyll. and his folke we were left on lyue. & passed
 out in to that strainge with a litell nauye by to king
 Alayne that he moche lured that was his wyf: and that
 his fader had moche lured in his tyme And as they sailed
 in the see he made grete lamentacion & so did alle the that
 were with hym: and said.

Dedisti nos dñe cany oues escay in gētibz dispersisti nos
 And then began Cadwalon to complayn hym to
 his folke pitously and said Alas said he to ye
 Wrecches and Captyf For why for our grete synnes of
 the Whych we wolde nat amende ye Wyll. We had space
 of tyme to come by on this mysaventure Whi-
 che chaunce ye oute of our owne malme and propre soye-
 ty and oute of which some tyme romayns Sweetes Sayde
 ne dantes myghte nat eylen But bute wat a Baillye it
 no we to ye that before tyme of thises haue gotten many
 othe landes sich it is not the Wyll of god that we abyde
 & dwelle in our owne lande God that is Wretyng Iugge
 that all thynges shold be done or made he
 seche that we wolde not sene of our synnes and that our
 enemyes ne myghte not be ne our signage eylen fro & oute
 of our malme he wolde that we amēd ye of our folies &
 that we sene our propre defaultes & therfor hath he shewed
 to ye his wrath & will chastise ye of our mysdoes Sich
 that he woth ye withoute bataille of strength of our enemy-
 es by grete companyes wrecchidly to lure our owne earl me
 & propre lād. Turne agayn ye romayns turne agayn ye
 swetes turne agayn ye sayons turne agayn ye frausers
 no sheweth to ye he hat agne all these the which poue
 ye mighte neuer make these ne yet poue ye be lath nor
 no put ye in eyleucon the pouer of the King almighty

155

Whom We haue ofte offended by our feltes the which We
wolde not liven by ell he chastised us by his dyaun power
et Amonge the wordes & lamentacion that the kyng had wa
ladie made to his folk they arained in full bountie and
come to kyng a kene before said And the kyng rewarded
hym with Joye and made hym to be serued wondur nobel
and then he dwelled longe tyme after. The englysch peple
that were left on lyue and were aschaped the great hunger
and mortallite lyued in the best wyse that they myght and
moche peple spronge and come of hym And they send in to
Saporne were they were borne to her fadres for men wo
men & children to wstow the aites with peple and other wu
nes that were all boide of peple and for to labour & traualle
& tillen the erthe When the Sapons had herd this tpydng
they comen in to this land wondur chyllie in grete compa
nies & lodged & herburghed hym self in the countre all aboute
where they wolde for they founde no man hym to lette ne
withstonde And so they wopen and multiplied gretly &
used the customes of the countres wher of they were comen
and the lawes and the langage of hir owne land And
they chaunged the names of aites townes castles and bur
ges & gaf hym names & called hym as they be now called
And they helden the Countres the lawages lordshippes &
twes in maner as the Britons before tyme had compassed
hym: And among othir grete companies that come fro ger
maine into this land came the noble queene that was cal
led Seyburga with man and woman withoute nombre
and arined in the countre of northumberland and toke the
land from alborne in to cornewalle for hir and for hir
folke for ther was none that myght letten hym for all.
Was desolat & boide of peple but it were a fe fewe
batons that were left in mountaines and wodes by
ell that tyme. And fro that tyme forth lysten

Britons this royaume for all dayes and the Englyssh pe
 ple begonne to wigne & departed the land bit Wene hez and
 they made many kynges aboute by diuerse parties of the
 lond as here bene deuised the fyrst of Westsey the second mer
 chantes the thirde Estangle the fourth kene the fyfthe
 southsey All thes reigned in this land after Cadwaladur
 Was passed out of this land and dwell ed in liell Britani
 gne With kyng Alepne his cosyn and the frende And
 whan he had longe dwelled there and had knowynge that
 the mortalite and pestilence was ouer passed & that the lō
 de was replenysshed of Aliene peple he thought to turne a
 yene in to his owne lande & prayed kyng Alepne his co
 sin of socour & helpe that he myght be restored to his propre
 royaume & fyrst dignite and kyng Alepne graunted hym
 his praiser Than did he appaunt hym to take his Waye
 Viage in to this lande & prayed god Almyghty Duoultly
 that he wolde make to hym demonstracion of his prayer i
 to this land Were to hym plesaunce or none for agayne the
 Wil of god Almyghty he wolde no thing done whan he
 had thus duoultly made his praiser a Vois fro heuen to his
 said & had hym leue that Jouncey a Way in to Englonde
 that he go to the pope of Rome For it was not the Will of
 anmyghty god that Britons regne no more in Britay
 gne ne neuer recouer this land By to the tyme that The
 prophete that merlyn said before be fullfilled & that shal
 de neuer bene By to the tyme Were comen that the reliques
 of his body shull bene brougth fro Rome & translated i Bry
 tayne And whan the reliques of othir saintes that haue
 bene hid for the persecucion of the paynyme folk shull be
 found openly shewed than shal they recouer hir land a
 yene whiche they haue so longe tyme lost thurgh hir deserz
 as whan Cadwaladur had herde this answeere he Olerz
 Wailes greatly And tolde yt to kyng Alepne

Then King Alayne did send for the clergie of his land & made hem to bringe the stories and prophesies that Merlin the wylde hadde said in his prophesies & When he knewe that the prophesies that fystome had prophesied of the kyng & of this prophesies accorded to the diuine asure that Cadwaladre had herd he counsailed hym to leue his peple & his naue & submyt hym to the disposicion of god and done all that the angel had commaunded hym Then Cadwaladre called ynor his sone and yborp his cosyn that was his sisters sone & said to hem & also said to my folk and my naue that iehere all redy & paie in to Wales & be ye lordes of Britons that no dishonour come to hem by interuption of the paynyme folke for the faule of Britons And he hymself left his traume of Britaigne & his folk for euermore and toke his way to Rome to the pope Gregorius the which he worshiped by moche & so he was confessed & toke penance for his synnes & he had not long dwelled there that he died the vij. kalends of May the yere of grace D. C. lxxv.

Now King Offa was souerayn aboue all the kynges of England & how euer y kyng werred vpon othir c. c. ij

It befell so that all the kynges in that tyme that were in the lond as they of Westsexe Merchenische Estangle of Kent & of southeaxe & of othir costes that were vpon othir & he that was most myghty benomme the lond of hym that was most feble but ther was a kyng amonges hem that was called Offa that was seint Olwals brother this Offa conquered all the kynges of ethelands & reigned aboue hem all & so grete was the were in euery cōtre hit wene kynges that no man myghte wite how the lande went but abbotes Priours & men of religion to steepe the lynes & the dres of kynges & how long euer reigned had & in what cōtre & what maner euer kyng died & of bisshoppes also & other of made grete booke and he

all the canons and the good King Edward had that
 in his word & let hang it at Wyndesore and let ye
 be called in to a piller that men myght see it wme
 as it is it chene so that every man myghte it see & the
 King like for the in his the King of all the Kinges that
 were within England

So the King of Northumberland Osbryght forlag
 the Wyse of Guerne toward the King with power & strength. & c. in
 And thus ye shal in the same tyme that there was a
 King in Northumberland that was called Os
 bryght & sojournd in pothe and this King went hym
 one day in to a house hym for to disport and when he co
 me agayne he went privately in to a good man's house that
 was called Guerne And the good man of that place w
 as gone that tyme to the see for often tymes he was wo
 und the aspie a waite churche and woldours that ofte ti
 mes were bound to come in to the land to woldour hounne &
 the The lady that was this Guernes wife was a w
 onder fast woman & welcomed the King with muchel ho
 nour & worthely hym served in all thyng When the King
 had eten he tolde the lady by the word & had hir i to a cha
 ber & said that he wolde speke with hir a couceill and all
 the folke from the chambur made wide sauf only the la
 dy & he bue the lady wist not wherfor he yd till that he
 had done with hir his will And when he had done this he
 returned agayne to pothe And the lady helpe the w
 or for wepyng for the de that he had ydone And
 when hir hed was comen home & so he hir wep & such so
 he & morning make he asped of hir what she had done &
 when she made suffoe. Sir yd she quenealy and fals
 ly the King Osbryght me hath done shame & vilapne
 agens my self and tolde hym to be he to the King had

His forlayne Wicheſtrenghe. Wherfor ſhe ſaid ſhe had liued to
die than lye. For ſhe ſtill qd ſhe for a yere ſtrangeſſe
liueſſe is liue. For ſhe e therfor of me ſhall thou neuer the
laſſe be liued e namely for thou haſt tolde me en weſt and
of al myghty god graunte me yf I ſhall the well auen
ge. This Guerne was a gude man and a myghty lord e
was well belued e gude frendes had and he ſent for the
greateſt lordes of the land e to hem made his complaint of
the diſpice that the kyng to hym had y. And ſaid the
he wold bene auenged to ſo thet ever ye were e all his
frendes counailled e graunted to wend to ward yore the
that the kyng was. And Guerne tolde his meyne e come
to the kyng. and when the kyng hym ſaw he called hym
courteuſely Guerne by name e Guerne hym anſwered e
to hym ſaid Sir I yow diſſe e yet I y ſeueres ſome
ges e londes e as moche as I haue ſold of yow e ſo fre
this eyne for ward I will neuer of the no the yng hold and
ſo he departed from the kyng withoute more ſpache or any
bydyng e toke theue of his frendes and went to denmarke
and playned to the kyng Godryne e tolde hym of the diſ
pice that the kyng Of ſwagh to hym had done of his Wiſe e
prayed hym of ſowre and of helpe hym to auenge. When
the kyng Godryne of denmarke and the danys had herd the
plaint of this Guerne e of the prair that he had thet he
re wold be glad in here for as moche that thet myghte find
cauſe for to gone in to england for to were ypon the En
gliſſen and alſo for to auenge Guerne of the diſpice
that the kyng had done to his Wiſe and for as moche as
Guerne was ſibbe to the kyng of denmarke. And none thet
he ordeyne a gude liſt of man and he ordeyne ſcipes e a
moche as was neede to that viage and when alle the hoſt
as a redy the kyng made his i. Swetheren chieftaines that
were noble knyghtes and ſold that one was called hys

gite and that otheir hubba

How the danops toke yorke & quelled the kyng
 Dagge and after ward kyng Elle

Ca. C. iij

Then all thyng was a wyde tho þ. backen to the le
 ue of the kyng Godwin that went to ward the see
 for to wende in Englonde as fast as they myghte spee no we
 is Guerne so well comforted & fast hied hym with the da
 nops that they hene arrived in the northconter and comē
 church oute holdernesse & destroyed all the countre and bred
 tounes & tolded folke and quelled all that myghte be take
 all that they come to yorke And when kyng Osbyrht sa w
 hy come he tolde his peple that he had and come oute o f the
 Cite & saughe with hem but no so pson he nat apens hem
 and moche was the peple that ebe was slayne in bothe par
 tis And kyng Osbyrht hym selfe that was slayne and
 the Cite akone was take & the danops wenten in & ebe
 was also an othe kyng in Northumberland that Guerne
 nis funder had chosen and helde hym for kyng a ma that
 was called Elle for as moche as they wold not to kyng
 Osbyrht hene intaundant for the despire that he had done
 to Guerne his cosyn. Hit befell thus that the kyng elle was
 gone to wode hym for to despoite and of venison somdel he
 had to hand as he sat in the wode at mere to a hynghe he
 said We haue wel y sped and moche venison taken & with
 the wode that com t a ma & to hym said yf yf so moche of
 venison had some an hundred tymes so moche more ther
 apens yf haue lost for alle this countre the danops haue re
 ce and take the Cite of yorke & apens yd we shall it hold
 the next yf shall nate come theryn And for soth they ha
 uen slayne the kyng Osbyrht And when kyng Elle the
 þ. warden herde he let assemble all the folke of the countre

h n

And ordeyned all the poer that he myghe haue and wolde haue gete the counce of porke with strong but the danois comen out anone and pafe hym to taill & quelled the kyng & the most partie of his men that he had bought with hym and the same place that they were slayne shall eue: be called Ellicost & that place is a litell from porke. And tho a boe the danops neuer til they had conquered all Nor: chumberland & in that coner they made Warwys & Wet forche in to the land & taken Noehpungam & thet they aby dene all the Wynter and diden the so: we that they myghe & after when somer tyme come they remeued from Noehpungam and come in to Nichol & to lynchep and to holand. For no man myghe hem withstod so moche poer & strenght they had

Wherfore Edmont the kyng was married Ca. C. 9
a Also for as the danops passed from coner by to coner & euer more burning & robbing and seised all that they myghe till they comen by to chertford And in that coner they founden a coste kyng that moche loved god & his werkes that was called Edmond And he was kyng of Northfolk & southfolk. This seint Edmond kyng ordeyned as moche folk as he myghe & fought with the danops but he and his folk were discomfited & the kyng hym selfe dauen by to the castell of farnelgum ham And the danops hym pursued and comen by to the same castell and when kyng Edmond saw that the castell mygh not hem withstand he come agens hem with whiche the danops first spoken And anone they axed of hym when kyng Edmond was no defence qd he when I was in the castell thet was the kyng And when I went oute of the castell he went out also and whether he shall ascom or die all goddes Wyll more yt he when seint Edmond had nempned god by that they wiste well all that yt was he hym self

The first part of the story of the life of King Edmund

And anon hubba and humbar nommen hym and said
 that he sholde god forsake and all casten la we as many o
 the had done hym before And seint Edmond said that
 he wold neuer but rather he wold suffer deeth for goddes
 love and his la we to keep to nomme the kyng Edmond
 and counseil hym by to a creche and made hir archiers to
 hym shete they as was till that his body be shotted as full
 of arrowes as an yverstone is full of prickles But for all the
 payne that he had he wold never god forsake and in the sa
 me payne and harmene he died & betoke his soule to god &
 when they so to that he was & the kyng smyten of his heade &
 this maner was seint Edmond martyred

So to hubba and hungar toke the counte of Redyng
 Ca. C. vi

By hym seint Edmond was martyred hugar and
 hubba went thence with all hir danows by to we
 dyng And as they went thidre ward they brendes tou
 nes and Cites and quelled all casten peple that wold not
 god forsake & cast a downe churches & comen to Redyng
 & toke the counte and the helde him till that the kyng edelf
 of Westsex come thidre with all his power for to take the
 counte Tho comen out the danows for to geve battail to the kyng
 edelf & at that battail was quelled an tith of danows that
 was called Eildred by the mo: he comen the kyng Eildred
 & his brother Alund with a stronge power and a grette host
 and the kyng edelf comen apene that had foughten the day
 before to that battail And the danows the comen oute for
 to fight with hem and the battail was wonder stronge for
 many a man beether slayne And the danows that day
 had the victorie and the kyng Eildred and his brother
 were discomfited Dne the .iiii. day after was
 the danows And the Englyssmen foughten togeder on a
 the tme byn Eildenne And the was slayn a kyng

of Denmarke that Was called Rofing and diij. mils Of
 quete po Wer And that day had the danops flame for they
 Wer druen yn to Englyfshel. And the yd. day after the
 danops and the englyfshmen & the danois fouge an ocher
 tyme at Rfing and then Wer the Englyfshmen difcomfy
 ted and from thens a danops that Was called wynter Wer
 to wyng With his host & eftwied all that he myght take
 And kyng eldred foughe With hym but he Was woned fo
 therfor he Was d. and he had nat wined but y. ym &
 lieth at Wouburne

¶ Of kyng Alured and how the danops i his tyme per
 ied hym of mercy that they must gone oute of the land

Ca. C. viij

¶ After the dech of chys Eldred wined his bucher
 Alured that Dolfynes Was called Tho Wene
 the danops and affembled hym and Wente for to feche alu
 red that tho Was the neyke kyng of fouche. and the thep
 founden hym at Wilcone With a littill ppl & Nothles he
 faughe With hym but at the lafte he fled & thens fe d the fel
 de and Wente in to Welfey & ordyned fo moche ppl of his
 owne maulme and alfo of ocher fohill that he had a ftrons
 ge host fo that the danops had no poer agens hym to ftende
 And he come to london With his host and the Wer the ra
 nous fojourned and the Wold he have foughe With he
 but the danops durst not With hym fyghe but praid hi
 of pce and that they must gone apene yn to hir owne q
 ete and neuer more in to england for to come ayne any har
 me to done And vpon this couenaunt they fhold yene hym
 to plagge good. hostages, and fuch as the Englyfshme Wold
 aye

¶ So W hnbta and hungar Were quelled at Chipenham
 and how the danops brought hir kyng to our kyng

Ca. C. viij

And the same day that the Danes departed from
 London so fast they ridden both night and day
 until they were of going all that they wold by to Exeter
 and taken the the count and the castle from them the king
 Alured herd the riding anon he let make the hostages and
 went from them to Exeter With all the power that he had
 And when the Danes herd tell of his coming they wold
 for them in to Westfere and comen to Chipenham and there
 they diden moche harme in the countrey they robbed felles &
 broughte hem in prison ¶ The king Alured him pursued &
 come upon hem and fersely hem assailed and there were
 slayne both Hubba and Hangan his brother and Bner
 ne Bocard and in this battaille was moche folk slayne
 & moche in that ochie but the grete of the felles left With the
 Danes for as moche as the king the comit with his
 company the king basted hym as moche as he myght for to
 went agene and when the Danes founden Hubba his body
 lyingg & the they entred it and made upon ye a grete hege
 and at that place Hubba was and so it is called in to this
 day And that place is in Shireshire The Barons somer set
 up a steeple and dorset herd tell so that the king was
 discomfited and ordigned all the power that they myghte
 have and comen to the king wher he was and thanked god
 that they had hym founde althow for they had went that
 the Danes had hym slayne To none they a counsell the
 king and his barons that they wold gone and seche the da
 nes with hem all for to fighten and so they ridden all that
 nyght hem all for to seche and comen anon to a boute pry
 vate Abingdon that that the Danes were the king the
 Alured and his barons assembled and there assailed the
 Danes sorely and there gaf hem a strong battaille and the
 Danes wold put of hem longtyme that no man wold
 in þe hit þe more þe wold slayne ¶ But thus is

As fell as god Wold that the kyng Alured had the Victorie
With moche honour for the Danois Were so drue that the
he Wist Whid he for to come and yd daies the kyng he
pursued at his Wille that glad and faine they Were for to
spoken of pres and of accord & token hym good hostages &
said that they wol'd nether more speyn hym Were ne no
hues were And more ouer they beghite to the kyng Alur
ed that they Wol'd gone and bring hir o Wne kyng By to
hym and that hir king and they all shold be baptised and
Upon this condicion kyng Alured hem graunted bys &
kyngme And said to hem that they shold gone hir kyng for
to seche and at a cer tain day to comen agene that to hem
Was sette And so they Wente forth fast and comen agene at
hir day that Was assigned And all the Danois broughe
hir kyng With hym The kyng Alured anon lete hem be
baptised and hir names change so that the kyng of Dano
is called Was Athelston and yd of his fela Ws names be
changed also and the othe Were baptised to the ryghe
helene And alle this Was done at Westmynstre And after
that the kyng Alured helde With hym kyng Athelstone &
all his Danois yd daies at founre With moche solermy
te and pafe hym grette yf as after that they hem baptised
and so they departed Tho Was kyng Alured all at the Wld
he had his enemy es overcome and that they Were turned to
the ryghe helene of Olmyghe god

¶ So W the Danois comen in to fraunce With Garmod
comen agene in to Englobud & of the deth of kyng Alured

Ca. Cij
And thus it befell after ward that the Danois of
Northumberland that Wen paynys come With
a grette strength & an huge host of frua that is to Wydriffe
& With he that Were in to fraunce With Garmod of aut
fride When he had coquered englobud & it pafe By to the say

ons & the other comen fro France arrived in host & sent in
to Northumberland that they shold come to him: When the
ii hostes were come & assembled anone they went to West-
minster pple of Englonde from place to place & diden mo
che for the the fell thus as almyghy god wold an hard
chaunce in Englonde For the good kyng alured that was
woned to abate danows with in the mene tyme This kyng
Alured wned xxx. yea & a good kyng had bene and wif
coude chastise his enmyes for he was a good clerk & let ma
ke many booke And a booke he made of Englysh of auens
tures of kynges and of battelles that had bene done in the
land & many other bekes of gestes he let hem write that
were of gret wysdome and of good lernyng thurgh whiche
ch booke many a man may hym amend that will hem take
Upon loke Upon whiche soule Almyghy god haue mercy
And this kyng Alured kech at Wyndesore
Of kyng Edward that was kyng Alured sone Ca. C. x

Almyghy god
have mercy

And after this Alured wned Edward his sone
that was a good man & a wyse that was called
Edward that was wonder curteis The danows did mo
che for the the land & his pite increased and gan for to wye
from day to day for the danows comen ofte with his compa
nyes in to this land & when the kyng sawe that he might
no better done he namme & was with him & graunted he his
wys And nochtles the danows durd nat long that the
danows ne begonnestrongly for to wye upon the Englysh
men & did hem moche for the whiche kyng Edward did as
semble a gret host for to fight with hem And the this kyng
Edward died when god wold This kyng Edward re
igned xxiii yea & lieth at Wyndesore beside his fader
Of kyng Edward sone of edmonde & edred & of edwines
his brother

Almyghy
kyng y. m. w. w. w.
kyng y. m. w. w. w.

For this Edward signed Rethelston his son &
When he had signed in. per he held battail agens
the Danes and drew King Canute that was King of
the Danes and all his host thre the for and wisted by scot
land and hymne strongly the contra all apen. And after
that the of Cumberland and the scottis of Westmerland he
gonne to Berw upon King Rethelston And he hem yaf so
stronge battails the he quelled so many of hem that no
man coude telle the number of hem and after that he was
gued but in. per & he was in all y. & he litch as malz
mesbury And after this Rethelston signed Edmunde his
brother for as muche as King Rethelston had no son. &
this Edmond was a worthy knyght and a doughty man
of body and a noble knyght and the in. per after that he
was King he went over humbre in thise place he found
in knyghts of danes that one was called Enedaf & that
other Regnane This King Edmond drof hem both fro
the land and after went and toke a grete prayn Cum
berland This Edmond ne signed but Wygham and litch
at Clastebury And after this Edmond signed Eldon
to his brother that a venged. edward his father of hys mys
myces that hym quelled and after was a he seised Northum
berland in to his hand & made the scottis aboth and he
he yn to his wyf And the secunde y. per that he had signed
com Arnalaf guyen that was King of Wyman and
seised all Northumberland and he to that land y. per &
after that com King Edward with a grete poe and drof
hym out of this land & this King Edward was a noble m
and a good of whos goodnesse some dunston preached and
this King Edward signed in. per and litch at Wygham
stre And after this Edward Edwyn son of Ed
mond his brother reigned and was a special m to lord
god & the peple for he hated folk of his othe lād and lōd

And thus the king men And sette well by holy church
 in a toke of helpe church all in four that he myghte ha
 in the was good shame and bidde to hym selfe & wull
 in his soule and therfor god wold not that he shold nas
 no longer than in pen and bidde & liche at Wyndesore
 Of Edgar edgar that reigned a long tyme of swete
 and of wales & so he was begilled church taking
 of his wife *Canis no dunderlo*
 And after this Edgar reigned Edgar his Bro
 ther a man that much loved god & ples and holy
 church also And was a worthy lord bold & myghty and
 magnified well this land in ples And this Edgar w
 as a king a long tyme all the kynges of swete and of wa
 les from the tyme that Arthur was a yong & neuer was
 his kyng of his ples And this Edgar was sainted war
 his fader & when Edgar was his was the that was seie ed
 was more & ended he liche spelle of the fairnesse of es
 the that was Ogarus daughter a baron of deneschire
 was so fair a woman that all men spelle the of he cal
 led on of his kyngs that he much loved & trusted spon
 sed hym So god he to the noble baron Ogar of den
 schire & seie of his daughter so fair as men spelle of & of
 he seie I will haue her by to my wife This kyng the
 that was called edel wold bene forth his way And come
 the that the lady was & the he seie her so fair he thought
 he had her hym selfe to byr and ther of spelle to Ogar
 his fader Ogar was an old man & had no moore chylde
 but only her & seie that edel wold was a fair pöge kyng
 & seie & the was well rich the kyng thought this daug
 ter shold be he married well liche spon hym & graunted
 by his daughter of the good lord the kyng wold seie ther to

*Edgar was a
 king of swete
 and of wales
 in my ples*

*Edgar was a
 king of swete
 and of wales
 in my ples*

10
This edel Wold came agene to the kyng & told hym that he
Was fair yowthe & by to see but she Was wonder beful
The answered the kyng & said that he toke but littel charge
Sir qd Edel Wold the she is his fathers hir and. I am
nat riche of landes & yf ye Wold consente & grunte that I
must hir haue than shold I be rich y no be In goddes na-
me qd the kyng I answeyrt her to Edel Wold than shold he
mochte the kyng & Went agene in to Denensham & spoued
the dam. self & in that contry he dwelled and thus he dwelt
Upon a tyme that he tolde his couaill & all this thyng by
to his Wyfe so that & I what maner he had begylled his lord
the kyng that Wold haue had hir to Wyf And anon
as she is Wist she lued hym neuer more after Ward as she
had done before This lady conceived by hym a sonne &
when tyme Was that the child shold be borne Edel Wold
came to the kyng and prayed hym to haue a fone of hir at
fourston the kyng hym grunted and let call hym Edgar
of his owne name And when this Was done he thought
that he Was spake y no we of the kyng that not Wold be
ue taken his Wyfe for as moche as his lord Was a . Joly
man and a namorous.

Ther was the kyng Edgar Wedded Estal after the dede
of Edel Wold Ca. C. viii

e Thus it shal that all mē & kyng Edgars court
the spoken & said that edel Wold Was trechely &
sauced thurgh the mariage of his Wyf & yit they said he
Was a baad an hūdrd fold more for he had spoused the hy-
est woman that ever Was seynt And the kyng herde this
so moche of hir haute he thought that edel Wold had hym
wecepd and begylled and thought princely his here that he
Wold gene in to Denensham as ye were for to hunt. For
the here And for the hynde And othe Wyllde bestes and

ftes and than he sholde se the lady or he departed thence
 nes and this lady was dwelling at a maner besydes the
 forst the that the kyng wol dwelle & at that maner he w
 as herburghed all nyght and whene tyme come the kyng
 sholde sope & the sounes shone the kyng asked after his Goss
 syppand after his godson & edel wol d made hir come befo
 re the kyng and Nothelkes pf it othir myght haue bene she
 sholde not haue comen in his sight by his wyll. The lady
 well comed the kyng and weelg hym cussed & he nomme
 his the sonde & the nege by hym her sette & sojopd they to
 gedre And the was a custome and an vsage in this land
 that when a man dwelleth in to an othir the drynker shold
 sey Wassyl and that othir sholde asure drynkebaill & the
 did the kyng and the lady many tymes & also kyft And
 after sope whene tyme was gone to bedde the kyng went
 in to his bed herthyng and lyna vpon that ladies fairnesse &
 the was ouercom for hir loue that hym thought that he shold
 die due of hir & he will he had vpon he moone the kyng Ar
 rose & in the forst went hym the to disport with hertes &
 hynners and all othir wylde bestes and of the hertes grece
 plente to that lady he sent and thines he went to solace
 & speke with that lady whilles he dwelled in that conent &
 after that the kyng amended thynnes and thought how he
 myght best deliuer edel wold from his wife as he had hym
 first defauid and the kyng anone after viij. dayes lee
 origne a parliament at Salisbury of all his baronage
 to counail to haue and for to ordeyne how the conent of no
 thumberland myght best ben kepte that the danops comen
 not the the land to destitue And this Edwold come al
 so to the kynges parliament. And the kyng sent by
 ed porke for to be he posses that thus it befall that me
 that he wold him not shewe hym by the way & anone as the

lyng heere that he was deid he let find after the lady Es-
told that she shold come to the Cite of London and ther be
wedded to the lyng with grette solompnitye & wurship an
held a solompne feste and he wern a crowne of gold. & the
quene an othir And seint dunston amowhe came vñ to
the lyng into the chamber and founde the lyng aledde
& the quene al so yfow And seint dunston axed to she was
the lyng answered this is the quene Estaldr & the arche
bisschopp seint dunston said that he did grette wronging and
apens goddes Wyll to talre a Woman to Wife whos child ye
had talre at the fonsstoun and the quene for that word ne
uer after lued seint dunston & nothelkes the good man
warned of that folk to lue but his warnyng a vailed
hail for the lue hit wene hym was so moche The lyng he
gate vpon this Woman a sone was called Eldred & the
this child was vi. yers old the lyng his fader died & a
lue that tyme he had wigned & vi. yers & leech at Glafte
burp.

Of seint Edward the martir to Estaldr his stepmos-
ter let hym quelle for to make Edward his oWne sone
lyng

Ca. C. xiiij

And after this Edgar wigned Edward his sone
that he legate on his first Wyfe that Will & no
bely gouerned the land for he was full of all maner .of
goodnesse & had full holly lyfe & aboue all chynge he lued
god & holly chyrche & the quene Estaldr his stepmother let hir
sister eueleson to make hir oWne sone Eldred lyng &
thus was he slayne as after ward ye shull here his lifel
thus on a day that the lyng Edward wene in to a wood
for to play i the southe betwixt a toun that is called
Warham in which founte was grette plenty of herres and
spundes And as he had bene a while the hym for to
play he thought vpon his brother eldred that was with his

more the quene for place Was myghte the foreste thou-
 ght for to gone chider and visite & see his brother and to
 be with hym due a keill meyne and Went hym the to-
 ward his stepmoders house that in that tyme sojourned in
 the Castell of corse and as he rode in the chikeness of
 the Wode to aspie his game it befell that he Went amys &
 lost his meyne that with hym come & at the last he come ou-
 te of the Wode and as heid aboute he sawe the fast beside
 the maner that his stepmoder dwelled in & thepderward
 he Went alone & anon it Was told the Quene that the
 the kyng Was comen alone withoute companie and the-
 for she made Joye & no we & thought to that she myghte
 done that he ner slayne as pravelich as she myghte. And a-
 none pravelich she called to one of hir knyghtes to whom
 she had told moch of hir counceill he Went hym and both
 they comen to the kyng and wurtounly hym assayed. &
 the kyng told that he Was come hir to visite and also for
 to speke with Edward his brother The quene many tyme
 unto hym thanked & hym praid for to alize and herburg
 with hir all that myghte The kyng said that he myghte noe
 but as yet he wolde Wende By to his folke yf he myzt her
 fynde And when the quene sawe that he wolde nace abide
 she praid hym that he wolde ones drynke & he graunts
 to hir and anon as the drynke come the Quene drauke
 By to the kyng & the kyng took the coupe and set it to his
 mouth and in the ment tyme Whiles that he dranke the
 knyght that Was with the quene with a puse (more even
 the kyng By to the head & then he fell a done dede of his
 palfrey By to the chere the quene for this dede gaf to the
 knyght gold & siluer gude plenty & of othir nesses y no
 be And the knyght anon as this Was done he went his
 ouer the see & so escaped he out of this land wher this kyng
 to Ward the Was made he Was the pen of leue. after

The kynge of the kyng
 Edmunde may 21 21 21

our had Ihsu crist in C-lypy-ron and he had wned. y^e
p^{er} a an halse and heth at Glapstonsburg *Sh. 1. 1. 1.*

Of kyng Eldred & h^e W^h kyng S^Wyn of Denmarke
he held England and h^e W^h Eldred that was seine. Ed
ard his sweher Baanae helued in his maime & therfor he
fled in to Normandie Capitul Censimo damoquitho

For this kyng Edward wned Eldred his swe
ther and seine dunston couned hym & this seine
dunston dyed soon after that he had forpene the quene his
empace Estal d^e for enchison that she was cause of kyng.
Edwards d^e & seine dunston had his asspled & p^{er}naunc
his emopued & shelpued after cast l^ose & clene This kyng
Eldred Wedded an English woman & on his bigate Ed
mond Janside & an othir sone that was called Edwyn
And after died the quene his modir And in that tyme co
me in to England S^Wyn that was kyng of Denmarke
for to challenge and conquer all that his aunchies had he
for that tyme & so he conquered & had it all at his appung
For the good exle Curberc of lynchsey & all the p^{er}ple of
Northumberland and almost all the g^{er}te of England helde
Wich S^Wyn that was kyng of Denmark for as moche
as they loved not kyng Eldred for enchison that his good
sweher Edward was slayn falsly for enchison of hym
& therfor no man sette bute l^oth by hym therfor kyng
S^Wyn had all his wille and toke all the land & Eldred
the kyng fledde tho in to Normandie & so spake to the duke
richard that the duke gaf his suster Emma to Wyse Wy
the which he bigate in sones that one was called Alured &
that othir Edward And when S^Wyn had conquered all
the land he reigned nobely and lived bute 3 yere and
died and l^oth at porke

So the kyng Eldred came agene from Normandie &
h^e W^h knoghe the Danys reigned & of the W^{er}re h^e W^{er}re

hym and Edmond Janside

C. C. p. vi

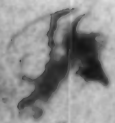
Here the death of S. Wyne that was a danys he
 noghe his sone duelled in Englon and Wolse
 haue the kyng & the come agene Edward ouer of Normandie
 with moche myle & with a flog mynys that knoghe durst
 nat a byt but flog thes in to denmarke. The kyng El
 derd had a peny his manne & helpe so gude lordschip that he
 began to sefwe all the that helpe S. Wyne that was dano
 is agens hym. And after ward come agene this kno
 ghe from denmarke with a gude po wer so that kyng El
 derd durst nat with hym fight but fledde fro thes in to
 londen & the helde hym the come knoghe & hym beseged so
 long till kyng eldwid died in the cite of londen & lyeeth at
 seint paulus & he wigned in .x. yers

Of kyng knoghe

Ca. C. p. vii

Here the death of this Edward knoghe that was
 a danois began the for to wigne bne Edmond J
 an side that was kyng eldwid's sone by his first wif or
 dyed a gude host & began to wene upon kyng knoghe &
 so he did many tymes & ofte and the wene was so stronge
 & hard that wender it was to wite & the Quene emme that
 duelled the at Westmynstir had gude dour of hir ii. sones of
 the wene Edward & Edward left they shold be skollid &
 myl done thurgh the this wene wherfor she sente hem ouer see
 into Normandie to the duke Richard hir vnell & the the
 duelled in fauour and presonge tyme. This Edmond J
 side & knoghe wened strögly to gidas but at the last the
 wene accorded in this maner that they shold spare the w
 aume bne wne hem and so they didn & after they becomyn
 good frendes & so well lured that they becomyn f. wome bne the
 in & so well lured to gidas as they had be bne hem gied
 of a lode and of one moder yborne

of the J. Edward of londen



✓ Tho the kyng Edmond Irenside traitourly War slayn
thurgh a traitour that was called Edrich of Stratton

Ca. C. p. viij

And after the reigned kyng Edmond Irenside. &
knoghte the danows but thus it befell off ward
that in the same yere that they were accorded & so moche Lo-
ued to gedre wherfor a false the traitour had enuie by to
the lorde that was his benehime friend hys whos name was
as Edrich of Stratton that was a grette lord that was Ed-
mond Irenside man and of hym held alle the land that he
had & Notwyles he thought his lord to betray. And make a
noghte kyng of the land in entere wehly to bene auauenced
& with hym bene wel beloued wherfor he prayed his lord ed-
mond Irenside vpon a day with him for to euen and to duel
he & the kyng courtously hym graunted and to hym came at
his prayer & at the mete the kyng. Whiche was serued with
diuerse meates and drynkes And when nyght come that he
shold goo to bed & the kyng toke his owne meyne & wente
in to chamber & as he lokked aboute he saw a wonder fair.
Image and well made & in semblant as it were an archieue
with a bowe bent in his hand & in the bowe a fine arrowe kyng
Edmond wente the nexte mornynge he beheld what it myght be
he & anon he sawe hym smote thurgh the body and ther
shold the kyng for that enny was made to quelle his owne
lord traitourly And when kyng Edmond thus was dede
& slayn he was reigned but y. yere & his peple for hym made
moche for we & his body they buryd into Glasterbury & ther
they hym entred And this false traitour Edrich anon
went to the queene that was kyng Edmonds wyfe that wyfe
of his lordes wyfe anon he nomme from hir yfones that
were fair & yong that his lord had vpon his goyn that on
was called Edward & that other id wyfe & had hym with
him at londen & toke hym to kyng knoghte that he shold do

With him what his Will was & told him so & quietly
he had quelled King Edmond for encison & bur of him
so that King Anoght all England in his power myght
have. ¶ O then false traitour hast thou my true brother.
slayne for encison of me a man that I most loved in the
world No we he myne he I shall for thy treuante the
ell & ward as thou hast deserved & anon he hym take & bled
fonde & fast in maner of a traitour & he cast hym in the
Thames & in this maner the false traitour ended his life
The King nomme the h-children & took him to the Abbot
of Westminster to ward & to keep till he wylt what was
left with him to live.

¶ Now King Anoght sent King Edmond's sones for in
denmark for to live & to be they were said Ca. c. vij
¶ It tofoll sone after ward that King Anoght had
all the lande in his hand & spoused the Quene &
me church cosene of his Barons for she was a fair wo
man that was Elvedis wife & the dukes suster of Nor
mandie & they lived to gedre With moche love as a son wol
d the King ayed upon a day counail of the quene what
was left to done with the sones that were Edmond's
¶ Sir qd she they be the right heirs of the land & yf
they be they shuld go to go to moche for the With were &
therefor he send him in to a sturgh land a ferre to somme
man that many him tofoll & tofoll the King anon he
call a denys that was called Walgar & comanded him
that he shuld take the h-children in to Denmarke & so do.
& ordyn for thes men they her & moo & ydngs of him his
said this Walgar gladly pour comanderment shal be done
& anon the h-children & led him in to Denmarke and for
as much as he so & that the children were wode fair & al
so much as he had of him gude yit & rough and told nat he
shd beure he hem to the King of Hungary for to norice for

this Walgar Was Welkand Wen Wich the kyng & Wel:
Edward Anone the kyng a yd Whens the children Were &
Walgar told hym & said they Were the right heirs of Eng
land & ther men Wold him destwice and ther sir to go to
they becomen merey and helpe for to sech and for soch if they
mo be lpuen your men they shull becomen and of go to they
shull holde all hir land ¶ The kyng of Hungary hym Vis
desfenge Wich mochel honour and sette him Worch by to be
nelepte ¶ And thus it befell after Ward the Edwyneche
yeger brother died & Ed Ward the Elder brother lpued a
fair man & a strong & a large of body and gentill & cou
tys of condicions So that all men hym loved and this e
d Ward in the cronicles is called amonges englysshmen E
d Ward the outlawe And When he Was made kyng the
kynges daughter of Hungary so moche hym loved for hys
godness: and his fairnesse that she made & called hym hir
dekyng The kyng that Was hir fader prapued Well the
loue that Was hir Wene hym to and had none hir lue that
daughter & the kyng Donked his daughter to no man as W
ell as he did to hym that she loved & he hir and he gave hym
Vn to hym Wich good Will & Ed Ward hir spoused Wich mo
chel honour the kyng of Hungary sent after all his fawor
nage & made a solempne fest & a ryche wedding and made
all men to vnderstonde that he shold be kyng When that he
Wen dede & therfor all they made gude hope & of that ty
pyng they Were full glad This Ed Ward lpued vpon this
lady a sone Was called Edgar dekyng & after Ward a du
ghter that Was called Margarete that after Ward Was que
ne of Scotland & by the kyng of Scotland that Was col
led Malcolyn she had a daughter that Was called maude
that quene after Ward of Englund churgh kyng Henry
that Was the first sone of the conquerour that hir wedded
& he lpued on hir a daughter that Was called maude that off

Was Emperesse of Almayne and of this maun come the
 kyng of England that yn to this day is called here the
 Emperesse sone & yit had this Edward another daughter
 by his wife that was called Cristiane she was a nonne.
 ¶ The kyng knoght that was a proude man cōquered nor
 weg & so he became after ward meke & myld. Ca. Cxx
 n O be hant ye herde of Edmōdes sones Wiche Jure
 & that kyng knoght Wiche that had bene dē as he
 had cōmaunded Walgar before & this knoght had in hys
 bond all England & Denmarke and after that he went
 to Norweg that land to cōquer but the kyng of the land
 that was called Olaf come with hys peple & wande hys
 land wel he haue kept & defended so ether he faughte with
 hym till at the last he was slayne in that battail and the
 this knoght nōme all that land in his bond And when
 he had cōquered Norweg & taken frautes & homages ther he
 come after agyne in to England & helde hym self so gret a
 lord that hym thought in all the world his pe was no mā w
 as a become so proude & haughty that it was gret wonder &
 so ye shal heere upon a day as he had herd messe at Westmyn-
 ster & wold haue gone in to his palays the water of the
 champe so woftefully agens him come that all most thinge
 touched his foete ¶ The said the kyng with a proude herte
 I cōmaunde the water to turne a peny or elles I shal the ma-
 ke. The water for his cōmaundement wold not sparn but
 shod ouer in his moue & more the kyng was so proude of
 herte that he wold not flete the water but also stille In
 the water & so the water with a small peny that he helde
 in his hand & cōmaunded the water that it shold wende no fer-
 re but for all his cōmaundement the water wold not w
 so but turne way more & more an hight so that the kyng w
 as all wet & stood depe in the water & when he saw that he
 had abyde ther to long & the water wold no thing done hym

commaundment the sone he Wichord he hym e the stode he.
 Upon a stone e helde his hōdes an hight e said this word
 in heing all peple This god that maketh the set thus arise
 an hight he is kyng of all kynges e of myghtes most e I
 am a captyf e a man wylle he may neuer die e all ehyng
 doth his commaundment e to hym is obedient To that god
 I pray that he be my warrent For I knowe which me captyf
 folle e of no poer e therfor I will go to come Wich out a
 ny lāpunge me wyllednesse to punyshe me to amende
 for of that god I clayme my land for to hold e of none
 othir And anone made wylle his līr e hym selfe to Rome
 Wichoute any lāpunge e by the weye did many almesse &
 dees e When he come to Rome also And When he had ben ther e
 for his synnes done penance he come agene in to Englonde
 e become a good man e an holy and līfe all maner praye
 e stoutnesse e līved an holy līfe all his līfe after e made
 in Blesses of seint benet one in Englonde and that othir
 in Norwiche for as moche as he līved specialy seint benet
 before all othir seintes And moche he līved also seint Ed-
 mund the līving e ofte he gaf grette pītes to the poore wher
 for it was made ryche e When he had wgned xx years he dyed
 e līethat Wyndesore

¶ Of kyng Harold that līver had gone in fote than ryde
 an hore Capiulo Centesimo Vicesimoprimo:

This knyght of whom we have spokē before had ii fōes
 by his wyfe emme that one was called hardylyng
 ghe e that othir harold e he was so līght of fote that me cal-
 led hym comelich harold barfoot e this harold had nothīng
 the condicions e maner of kyng knyght that was his fa-
 der for he see but līttel pīce of chivalrye ne of courtlye nor
 thir of wurshipp but only by his owne Will And he līved
 so wylled that he wylled his moder Emme e she wente out
 of the land in to flāndres e then dwelled Wich epe the wyfe

A Carole yyy
m xxyx

67

he after this was neuer good but sic bene hym and his
brother for his brother him had tolye & when he had reigned
yete a litle more he died & heeth at Westminster.

Of King Harthknoghe that was barons brother Cas
pious Ceneimo yon

For this baron barfoot reigned his brother barth
nought a noble knyght & a worthy & moche loved che
valant & all manner goodnesse And when this barthknoghe
had reigned a litle while he the conquer his brother barth
& smyte of his head that was his brother at Westminster &
he cast the head in to a gonge & the body in to chample & af
ter come fiffars and toke the body with his nettes & up
fete & bren hym to seine clementes church and there hym be
ned And in this maner avenged hym barthknoghe of his
brother for in none otheir maner he myght be avenged this
King Harthknoghe was so large puer of mete & drinke
that his table was sette every day in tyme full wyth ry
ch meetes and dances for his owne meyne and for all that
comen by to his court to be rychely served of all meetes
And this King Harthknoghe sent after Emme his
moder and made hir come agene in to England for she was
druve out of England whils that barth barfoot reyg
ned thurgh wuntill of the Erlk gode Wyne that the was
the grette lord of England next the King and most myge
to that he hold thurgh all England thurgh his com
mandement For as moche as he had spoused the daughter
of the good King Knoghe that was a danys which dou
ght he had by his first wyfe And when this Quene
ordred out of England and come to the Erlk of flann
dres that was called Balde Wyne his wyf he founde hir thur
all churche that he neded by to the tyme that she went a
gaine in to England that the King Harthknoghe had sent for
her that was his sone & made hir come agene with moche

Richard 6 yoy
my kynne

Honour II This kyng hardynoght when he had reigned 3
yere he died and lech at Westmynster.

Of the Villainie that the danows did to the Englysshmen
wherefor from that tyme after was no danows made kyng
of Englonde.

Capitulo Centesimo xxviii.

For the death of this kyng hardynoght for as moche
as he had no chylde of his body begot the Erles

and barons assembled & made a counaill & never more af-
ter no man that was a danow though he were never so good
he a man amongest hem he shold never be kyng of Englonde
for the despite that the danows had done to Englysshmen.

For ever more hereafter hand if it were so that Englysshmen
and danows hapten to mete upon a brygge the Englysshmen
shold nat be so hardy to mete ne stea a foot but stand stil

till the danows were appeased forch And more over if
the Englysshmen had not abhored to mete hir lordes to done
reuerence vnto the danows they shold have bene heren and defen-

ded and soch maner despites and Villainie diden the danows
to our Englysshmen wherefor they were driven out of the
land after the death of kyng hardynoght was ded for they

had no lord that hem myght maynteyn In this maner
decided the danows Englonde that never they come agene the
Erles & barons by hir comune assent & counaill senten

vy to normandie for to seeke the hertug of Aquitand
Edward that was dwelling with the duke Richard that
was hir uncle in entene for to crowne Aquitand the eldres son

with hym make kyng of england & of this thing to make
he an uncle the Erles & barons made hir orde but the will
Gods wyne of Westmynster falsly & traitourly brought to sue

the hertug anon as they shold come in to Englonde in
meant to make his son barold kyng the which son he had
begot upon his wyfe that was kyng hardynoghts daughter

that was a danow And this son was prynces lye by

in to southe Hampton for to meete the in batelien When that
 they shold come to land. And thus it befell that the messa-
 gers that went in to Normandie founde not but only.
 Alured that was the elder brother for Edward his brother
 was gone to hengerie for to seeke with his cousin Edward
 the outlawe that was Edmondes sone with the French the
 messagers told & said to Alured to what the erles & barons
 of england sent after hym & that he shold chace such a come i
 to england & vnderfenge the name for king bartholomew
 was de & all the danis driven were out of the land.

How God wone the false traitour to the Alured & the
 Gildesdone When he come fro Normandie to bene king
 of England & did him bene married in the Isle of Ely

Ca. C. xliii

When Alured had thus trespunghe thanked god &
 in to ship went with all the shipp that he myght &
 passed the see and arrived at southe Hampton the that Go-
 the wone the traitour was Alured the traitour: so with a
 he was come he welcomed him & vnderfeng hym with mo-
 chell Joye and said that he wold lede hym to london ther
 that all the barons of England hym aboute for to make
 him king & so they went in his ship to ward london and
 When they come vpon Gildesdone the said the traitour Go-
 the wone to Alured take heed aboute pothe both on the lyste
 the & on the right the & of all ye shall be king & of such an
 hundred thousand the so: the Alured I helpe pothe if ye
 king I shall ordeyne & make such lawes when of god and
 all folke shall in hem hold will payed No we had the trai-
 tour commaunded all his men that were with him that
 when they were come vpon Gildesdone that they shold
 the after that were in Alureds companye that come with
 him from Normandie & after that taken Alured and his

hym in to the Isle of Elg & ther put out both his pyty of
his herte and after ward hang him by to deeth & they dyd
so for they quelled all the communitie in. Then in wom
ber of gentylmen thare were women with Alured from nor
mandie. ¶ And after nomen alured & lad him in to the
Isle of Elg & put out his pyty out of his herte & wnt hys
wombe & nomen the chief of his boles & put a stake in to
the ground & an ende of the boles ther to fastened. & wth
nedles of Iron pricked the good childe and so made hye go
about the stake till that all his boles were drem
all out. And so died the Alured thurgh cursyn of the Er
le Godwyn. ¶ When the lordes of England had herd and
wist how Alured thare shold have bene hit hyng was put
by to the deeth thurgh the fals traitour Godwyn. They
were all wonder wroth & wroth be wnt hym god & by his
holp names that he shold die in more werse deeth than dyd
Edmunde of struttone that had betraied his lord Edmond
¶ wnt & they wolde have put hym to deeth. but the chiefe
traitour fley thence in to Summarie & ther helde hym in
prys & more & lost all his land in England.

¶ Of hunte Edward the confessor thare was alundre ben
ther how he was hyng of England. Ca C. xv. b

¶ And when this was done all the barons of england
senten an othe tyme in to normandie for thare Edward
shold come in to England wth moche honour. And
this Edward in his childehode loued almyghty god and
hym dmad. And in honeste & chynesse lad his lyf and ha
ted synne as deeth. ¶ And when he was crowned and anno
uned wth a royal power he forgaue nat his good maners
and condicions that he fyrst used & forgaue nat all good
customs for no maner honour ne for no richesse ne for no
maner highnesse but euer more & more pefe hi to godnesse &
well loued god & al myghty & loued god & his church p

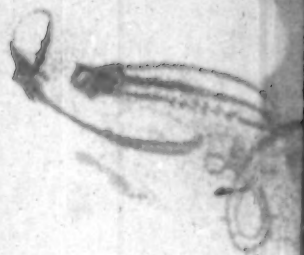
king a maner chynge & pour me also and he mouned & hel
 & as they had bene his othere brethren & to hem of a pafe-
 gate a messe With good Will

¶ Of the fyrst specialer
 that god sithed for seint Ed Ward due by his lyfe

i e he fell on a day as he went from the ca. x. vii
 church of Westmynstere had he a messe of seint Jo-
 han euangelist for as moche as he loued seint Johā euange-
 list more specialy after god & our lady than he did any o-
 thir seint and so ther come to hym a pilgrime & pruned his
 for the loue of god & of seint Johā Euangelist sone good hym
 for to proue & the kyng pruned toke his ränge of his spynge.
 that no man pruned it and pafe it to the pilgrime & he hit
 vnderfenge & went thence This kyng Ed Ward made
 all the good lawes of England that yit benemost holden
 And was so mercyable and so full of pite that no man
 myghte be more

¶ How the erle Godwyn came agene in to England &
 had agene all his lād and after Ward seint Ed Ward wed-
 ded his doughter Ca. C. xxvii

B In the erle Godwyn that was dwelling in den-
 marke had moche herd of the godnesse of kyng Ed W-
 ard and that he was full of mercy & of pite And thoughte
 that he wold gone agene in to England for the seche & to
 haue graue of hym and that he myghte haue his land agene
 in pite & arriued hym as moche as he myghte & put hym to
 Ward the second come in to England to london ther that
 the kyng was that tyme And all the lordes of England
 And helde a parliamēt ¶ Godwyn sent to hem that w-
 ere his frendes And were the most grettist lordes of the
 land & pruned hym to be seche the kynges graue for hym and
 that he wold his pite & his lād graue him his enemies lād
 by hym And the kyng to seche graue & anone as the kyng



him so he apelled hym of trespas & of the Trech of Glouc
his brother & these wordes by to hym said traibour god by
ne qd the kyng I the apelle that thou hast detained & slay
ne my sweeter Glouc Certes sir qd God byne saue your
grace & your wies and your widschipp I neuer hym detrai
ed ne shal him & ther for I put me in ward of the coure
No be fair lordes qd the kyng ye that been my lieges Erles
& barons of the land that ben by all assembled full well
ye haue herd myne Appelle & the answer also of God byne
& therfor I byll that ye a ward & weth right I the Erles
& barons tho doo ben him all to gedre for to done this a w
ard by hem selfe & so they spoken diuersely amoges hem for
somme said ther was neuer aliance by homage sermeit ser
uise ne by widschipp betwene God byne & Glouc for whi
ch theyng they myghte hym doo be & at the last they & by
sed & demed that he shold put hym in the kynges mercy all
to gedres I the spake the erle herich of Couer a good
man to god & to all the world & told his wison in this ma
ner & said the Erle God byne is the best founded ma of en
gland after the kyng & well myghte ic not bene gain said
that without wil of god byne Glouc was neuer put
to the weth therfor I a ward as touchyng my part that
hym selfe & his sone & every of us yn Erles that bene bys
funders bend before the kyng charged with as moche gold
& siluer as we moche ben by bene our hundes & payyng
the kyng for yene his wille byll to the erle God byne &
we put his homage & his land yeld agene I And all they
accorded by to that a ward & comen in this maner as ye
aboue said trespas of hem with gold and siluer as moche as
they myghte ben by ben before the kyng & they said
the forme & the maner of his accord & of his a ward The
kyng hold not hem gape say but as moche as I they
ordyned he graunted & confirmed And so was the Erle

God Wynt accorded With the King and had apene all his
 land And after Ward he loved hym so Well and so Wyfely
 that the King loved hym wonder moche and With hym was
 as full pure And With hym a litell ymcke King loved
 hym so moche that he spoused Ed Wyntes daughter & made
 hir quene And nobles for all that the King had a wife
 he loved tute more in chastite and in chynesse of body Wit
 hout any fleschly dede wyng With his Wyf & the quene al
 for his halfe Lad holp lyfyn yere & did And after Ward
 the King lived all his lyf Without any Wyf The King
 past the erldome of Wyntford to Harold that was Ed Wy
 ntes sone & made hym erle & so Well they Were beloued bo
 the fader & he & so prync With the King both the fader & the
 son that they myghte done What theyng they Wold by nyght
 For apes nyght Wold be no theyng done for no maner ma
 so good & en be he Was of consaunce & therfor our lord Jesu
 crist gave spycialy love to hym the ded

¶ So the King Ed Ward saw Wyntes King of denmarke
 drenched in the seyn the sacrament as he stode & herd his
 masse

Ca Cxxviii

¶ It befell Upon dyffonday as King Ed Ward herd his
 masse in the grette church of Westmyster nyght at the
 quene of Ihu cristes body & as all men were gathered in to
 the church & comen to the auter sacringe for to see the King
 his hōdes lyf & pōtir & a grette laughter toke Up therfor
 al that about hi stode grette goe wonder & after masse
 they aged Wyntes Kinges laughter Was fair lordes qu the
 King Wyntes pōtir that Was King of denmarke was I to
 the see With al his poer for to haue comen I to englad Wyntes
 to haue Wyntes & I sawe hym & all his folk drenched in the
 hōh see & all this saw I the quene of Ihu crist body bit
 the the pastes hōdes and I had ther of so moche Joy
 that I myght not my laughter Withholde

¶ And the Erle leueich besydes hym stodes after leua

don and openlych he sa w the forme of hys lurne in to a k
knesse of a childe yonge & toke by his ryght honde & first
blessed the kyng & aft ward the erle & the erle anon turned
hym toward the kyng to make hym see that holz sighte and
tho said the kyng sir Erle qd he I see well that ye see ca
red be god that I have honoured my god my sauour & by
fibilz I haue cast in foure my name be blessed
in all wordes Amen

¶ Tho w the kyng that seint Edward had yene to a yow
pplgyme for the lue of god & seint: Johan Euangelyst
come apene by to kyng Edward: Ca. Centesimo vint
mo nono

¶ His noble man seint Edward wned yij. yew &
thus it is told by a yme before it he died that
ii men of Enlond were yene in to the holz land & had by
done hir pilgrymage and were going apene to hir othe
conter ¶ And as they were in the wey they mette a pilg
me that coureosly hem salued and aged of hem in what
land and in what conter they were borne And they sayd
in Eng lund ¶ Thoaged he who was kyng of Eng lund &
they answered and said the good kyng Edward haue fel
de tho said the pilgryme then that ye come in to your con
ter ayen I pray you that ye bold gon by to kyng Ed
ward and ofte ymes hym greet in myn name And ofte y
mes thank hym of his greet courtesye that he to me hath d
ne and namely for the ring that he gaf me then he had be
de messe at Westmynster for seint Iohannes lue Euang
gelyst and nomme the the ring and toke it to the pilgry
me And said I pray you be for to gone and let this ring
and take it to kyng Edward and tell hym that I haue ge
hym And a full rechet gifte I tell hym ye be for to
yon the xij. day of schall come to me and euer more dachel
blisse withouten ende ¶ Sir said the pilgrymes then

The Ryme
of the
Pilgrimage

happ e in what place is your dwelling. Fair frandes qd
he I am Johan the euangelist e am dwelling with almy
ghty god e your kyng Edward is my frande e I haue his
specialy for mychson that he hath euer lpyed in chennesse e is
ane maid And I pray yow my message all for to done
as I haue to yow y said ¶ When seint Johan Euangelist
had thus hym charged sodenly he dyed oute of his sighe
¶ The pilgymes the thanked Almyghty god e went forth
in his way ¶ And when they had gone iij. in myle they
bygone to the Wyke And sawe a house for to wite and
so they fyll a slep And when they had slept well one
of hem awoke e lifte vp his heed e looked a bouthe e said vñ to
his felawe Arise vp e wende we yn our way What sayd
that one felawe to that othir Wher be we now Certes sa
id that othir it semeth me that this is nae the same countre
that we laid vs in for to wite e slepe For we were fro the
rusalme but iij. myles ¶ They nommen vp his wordes
and blessed hym e went forth in his way e as they went in
his way they sawe shepherdes goyng with his sheep that spe
ken none othir langage but Englyssh ¶ The frandes qd
one of the pilgymes that comen is this e who is lord ther
of And one of the shepherdes answered this is the countre of
kennet in England of the which the good kyng Edward
was lord The pilgymes thanked to almyghty god e seint
Johan Euangelist e went forth in his way e come to Ca
sturbury e two channes in to london e ther they founde the
kyng e told him all fro the beginning vñ to the ende as
much as seint Johan had hym charged e of all thynges so
they spakke by the way e tolde the kyng to kyng Edward
e he vnderfeng it and thanked Almyghty god e seint
Johan Euangelist And the made hym a way every day
from day to day for to vnder take of this lyf When god w
old for hym sen

that was Comondes Iustices so to be King for as moche
 as he was most kyndest knyghtes blyde of the name Due
 Haroldus sonne churche the erle Godwynne & the strength of
 his fader godwynne & churche othe gathe lordes of the roys
 aune that was of his kyn and by to hym selfe seised all
 England to his hande and anon he crowne hym King af
 ter the entremunt of seint Edward II This Harold that
 was godwynnes sonne the seconde yere after that seint Edward
 was dede wolde have gone in to Flaunders but he was dri
 ven churche compell into the countrie of Pounceys and there
 he was take and broght to the duke William And this har
 olde went to that Duke William wolde have bene a ven
 ged upon him for trechison that the erle Godwynne that was
 as Haroldus fader had requyte alund that was seint Edward
 his brother and principally for trechison that Alured was
 quene Emmes sonne that was Richardus moder duke of nor
 mandie that was apell to the duke William II And nothe
 les whanne the duke William had Harold in prison and by
 the his port for as moche as this Harold was a noble kny
 ght wife & worthy of body and that his fader & he were ac
 corded with good King Edward and therefore wolde not
 mysdout hym But all maner chynge that he were hem
 ben spousyd and ordeyned Harold by his good wyll & wo
 n upon a blythe and upon holy saintes that he sholde spouse
 & wedde Duke Williams daughter after the deth of seint Edward
 & that he shold be felyd wene his trust for to keep & sa
 ve the realme of england to the profit & a valantage of duke
 William II And when Harold had thus made his othe by
 to duke William he let hym go and gave hym many exche
 quers And he to went chynne and comyn to England &
 anon he was in this maner when seint Edward was dede
 and as a man falsly for he was he crowne hym King of
 england and falsly Duke the realme that he had made he

142
fore With Duke William Wherfor he Was With him Wonder
Wroch and Wote that he Wolde Vpon his beneauaged What
euer so him befell ¶ And anon dult William he assemble
a grette host and come in to England to auenge him Vpon
harold and to conquer the land if that he myght ¶ And
in the same yere that harold Was crowned harold batshen-
ge kyng of Denmarke arriued in scotland & thought to ha-
ue bene kyng of Englonde & he come in to englonde and quel-
led & woked and bestried all that he myght till that he come
to portes & ther he quelled many men of armes a thousand
and an .C. pusies When this rydinge come to the kyng he
assembled a strong poore and Wene for to fight With harold
of Denmarke and With his owne honde him quelled & the
dancis Were discomfited & tho that lifte al put Wyth moche
for We fley to hir shippes And thus kyng harold of Eng-
land quelled kyng harold of Denmarke.

¶ Tho William bastard duke of Normandie come in to
England & quelled kyng harold Ca. C. xxxij.

¶ And When this battail Was done harold became . So
proud & Wolde nothyng part With his peple of this
that he had gotten but held it all to Ward hymself Wherfor
the most partie of his peple Were Wroch and from hym &
parted so that only With his life no more but his saundiers
¶ And Vpon a day as he sat at mete a messagier come to
him and said that William bastard duke of Normandie
Was arriued in England With a grette host and had taken
all the lande aboute lastyng and also myned the castill-
Whenne the kyng had herd this rydinge he Wene thepder
With a litle peple With all the fast that he myght for a lye
all peple Was With hym life ¶ And When he Was comethid
to he ordeyned for to geve battail to the duke William but

the duke ayed hym of cheser in chynge if that he wolde ha
ue his daughter to wife as he had made and swow his othe
and hysghe or that he wolde hold the land of hym in treu
age or that he wolde termynne his chyngeburghe hant
¶ This barold was a proude man and astoute and trus
ted wonder moche vpon his strength and fanghe with the
duke and with his peple but barold and his men in this
bataille were discomfited and hym self was ther slain &
his baronage was ended at conbrigg in the seconde year of
his reyne vpon seint Eustace day and he lieth at Walegha
¶ Of kyng William bastard and how he gouerned hym w
ell & byself and of the bette his bene hym and the kyng
of france
Ca E xxviii

B Hen William bastard duke of Normandie had con
quered all the land vpon Eastmase day the nyge
supper he let crowne hym kyng at Westmyster and was
a worthy kyng and gaf to Englyssmen largely londes &
to his knyghtes ¶ And after ward he went ouer the see &
come in to Normandie and ther duelled a whyle and in the
seconde year of his reyne he come agene in to Englonde and
dwoghe with hym maude his wife and let crowne hir quene
of Englonde on Wichefsonday ¶ And the anon after the
kyng of Scotland that was called mancolyn began to stri
ue and warre with the duke William And he ordeyned hit
to ward Scotland with his men both by land And
by see for to testre the kyng mancolyn but they were ac
corded and the kyng of Scotland become his man & helde
all his land of hym And kyng William reassured of his
his homage & come agene in to Englonde & wha kyng Wil
liam had he kyng & vii year Maude the quene died on W
som kyng William had begoten many fair children that is
for to seyne Robert curthose William le Roue Richard also

that wife Henry Beauchere and gaude also that was the
Erls Wife of Belesnes and othe in Tougheers and af-
ter his Wifes dech grete Scharre began he bene him and the
Knyng of fraunce philip but at the last they werre accorded
And the duelled the Knyng of England in normandie e
no man him werred and he no man longe tyme And the
Knyng of fraunce said Upon a day in some of Knyng Wil-
liam that Knyng William had longe tyme lye in childe bed
and longe tyme had asked him ¶ And this word come to
the Knyng of England ther that he lay in Normandis at
Roen and for this word was choill paid and the wonder
wreth to ward the Knyng of fraunce and soon by god that
Whan he was anse of his gyfyn he wold light a thousand
candels to the Knyng of fraunce ¶ And a none he assemble
a grete host of Normandis and of englyshmen And in the
beginning of herest he come in to fraunce and brend all the
counes that he come by churche all the contree and robbed
and did all the euill that he myghte churche out all fraun-
ce and at the last he brend the Cite of Mandois and com-
maunded his peple for to be wode and as moche as myghte
burne and hym self helpe ther to all that he myghte with
a good wyll ¶ And ther was grete feare what of fire that
was so grete and of the sonde that the was wonder foot
that all stuffed hym selfe to come and falle in to a grete sil-
nesse and Whan he sawe that he was so stronge sick he ordi-
ned and assigned all Normandis by to Robert curthous
his sone and all England to William the Roue & biquet
to Henry Beauchere all his tisor And tho thus had don
he vnderfenge all the sacraments of holy church and dride
the xxij yere of his wyne and lynch at Caen in Norman-
dis

Henry Beauchere
William Beauchere
Henry Beauchere

Of King William Ross that was William Bastard
 dus son that destroyed houses and houses of Religion
 for to make the new forest
 Capitulo Centesimo trigesimo quarto

And after this William Bastard wroght his son Wil-
 liam the Ross and this William was a wonder co-
 rruptions man to god and to holy church and sette amende
 and make the house of Carbis that the papynys had de-
 stroyed ¶ This King William destroyed holy church and all
 his possessions in what part he myghte hym fynde And the
 for that was so much that he went hym and the Erche-
 bisschop of Canterbury Anselme for meison that he
 byrnamme hym of his wickednesse that he destroyed for
 holy church And for enche sorow of the King to hym bare
 grete wrath and for that cause he exilled hym ouer of the
 land And the Erchebisschop the went to the court of Rome
 and ther dwelled with the pope ¶ And this King made the
 new forest and cast and destroyed by his houses and lye-
 houses of religion all for to make his forest lenger and bred-
 dy And he was wonder glad and proud of his work
 of his forest and of the wild bestes that were there yn that
 it was miruail for to wyte so that many called hym keep-
 er of Bodes and of pastures and the lenger that he lived
 the more he liked he becom both to god and to holy church
 and to all his men ¶ And this King let make the grete
 hall at Westminster so vpon a day of Wifsonday he helde
 there yn his first feste and beheld aboute and said that the
 saluen was to lye by the hall wyl And at last he becom
 so concumous that all chynge that pleased god displeased hym
 and all chynge that god loved he hated deadly And so ge-
 tefull that he damed and met vpon a nyght a knell or that
 he dyed that he was full of blood and bled a grete quantite

Will. 2.

of blode and a streame of blode lepe an high to Ward huen
more than an C. Berchem and the clennesse of the day Was
turned all in to darkness And the firmamens also And
When he a Woke he had grette drede so that he nyght What to
tune and tolde his dreame to meny of his counsell And
said that he had grette drede and suposed that hym Was so
me myschaunce to come And the seconde nyght he before a
monke dreamed of the houshold that the kyng had to a church
Which moche peple and he Was proude that he despised all
the peple that Was with hym and that he nomme the yma
ge of the crucifye and shamyly bore it. With his ceech.

And the crucifye mekely suffred all that he did but
the kyng as a Wode man wnt of the Armes of the cruce
fye and cast it vnder his feet and defouled yt and there
Was it all abrode and a grette flamme of fire came out of the
crucifyes mouth of Which came meny meny had grette dre
de The goodman that had dreamed this dreame had sold
it to a knyght that was most prync with the kyng of
all men and the knyght Was called a murtherer and
the menke and he tolde the dreame to the kyng said that
it shold beken othir thing than good and Nochtles the
kyng laughed ther to in and littill see ther of And thou
ght that he wolde goe hunt and play in the forest and his
men hym counsellid that he shold not that day for no ma
ner thing come in the Wode so that he bode as some before
me But anone as he had then no man myght hym lette
that he helde gone to the Wode for to haue his disporte

And so it befell that one of his knyghts that sighe W
alte Till Wode haue shote to ar here and his ar We glau
fed vpon a branche and the knyght mysauenture smote the
kyng to the herte and so he fell done & deo the wounde
Withoute any Worde spelyng and so ended his lyfe. and
it Was no grette wonder for the day that he did he had lit

2. Willing to accept
 from you, and all day
 long. ~~Handwritten~~
 & to be paid to the company
 75

9

५६६-३०११

Heh: 1
pene the duke his brother a thousand pounde every yere & w
hiche of hem longest lived shold be the other his and so the
Wene hem shold be no debate ne strife ¶ And when they w
as thus accorded the duke Wene home agene in to Norma
die & when the kyng had reigned in yere the threys age
the debate bit Wene hym the Erchebischopp of canterbury
Anselme For cause that the Erchebischopp wold nat gra
unte hym for to take taliage of chyrches as his Wille and
therfor chifone the erchebischopp Wete over the see to the cite
of Rome and thes duellid with the pope ¶ And in the sa
me yere the duke of Normandie come in to England for to
speke with his brother And amonge othir thynges the du
ke of Normandie forpase to the kyng his brother the forsaide
a thousand pounde by yere that he shold pay hym And with
good love the duke Wene the agene in to Normandie

¶ And when the y yere Wene a gonne churgh the Enticement
of the duell and of liether men a gonne thes arose bit Wene
the kyng and the duke so that the kyng churgh conceyall
Wene over the see in to Normandie ¶ And when the kyng
of England Was comen in to Normandie all the greeke
Se of Normandie turned to the kyng of England and
held agene the duke hit o Wene lord and hym forsake and
to the kyng him yelded and all the good castelles and tow
nes of Normandie And sene after Was the duke eaken &
had with the kyng in to England and the kyng let pue
the duke in to prison And this Was the vengeance of
god For when the duke Was in the holy land god gave his
such myghte and honour that therfor he Was chosen to
be the of Jerusalem kyng and he wold nat be it aut for
soke ye and therfor send hym that shame and despise for to
be pue in to his brothers prison

¶ The sene kyng Henry all Normandie in to his hand
And held bit all his lyf des tyme and in the same yere

me the bisshop Anselme from the coure of Rome in to
 Englonde agene And the kyng and he were accorded
 And in the yere next comyng after the began a gre
 te debate betwene the kyng Philip of fraunce And kyng
 Henry of England Wherfor kyng Henry went In
 to Normandie and the were was strong betwene he & wo
 And the died the kyng of fraunce and Lothys is sone w
 as made kyng anone after his deche And the were kyng
 Henry agene in to England and married Maude his daug
 ter to Henry the Emperour of Almaine

Of the debate the was betwene kyng Lothys of fraun
 ce and kyng Henry of England and how kyng Henryes
 in sones were loste in the high see
 Capitulo Centesimo xxxvi

¶ When kyng Henry had bene kyng. xviij yere a
 tate that Arros betwene kyng Lothys of fraunce and
 kyng Henry of England for encheysen that the kyng had
 sent in to Normandie to his men that they shold be his hel
 pyng to the Erle of bloyes as moch as they myght in de
 trayng the kyng of fraunce and that they were as redy
 yn to hym as they wold ben yn to hir owne lord for en
 cheson that the Erle had spoused his suster Dame Maude
 for which encheson the kyng of fraunce did moche sorwe
 to normandie wherfor the kyng of England was wonder
 wofe and in haste went ouer the see with a grete power
 and come in to normandie for to defende that lande and
 the were betwene hem lasted ij yere till at the last they
 foughten to gedre And the kyng of fraunce was dys
 scowfied & synch scaped a day with moch pyne & the moste

part of his men were take and the kyng did witte hym
that hym liked And somme of hym let he gofalych and som
me let he put to the deeth But after ward the kynges be
was accorded And when kyng Henry had solych all the lād
of Normandie and scowfited his enemyes of frenche he
turned agene in to England with moche honour And
his wyf William archbyschop wolde come after hit fader
and went to the see with a gret companye of peple but
euerthey myght come to lande the ship came a tye a weke
and brake in to peces and all were drenched that were
theryn sauf o man that was in the same ship that asca
ped on this was on seint katherine day and there were the
names of hym that were drenched that is to say William the
kynges sone Richard his brother the Erle of Chester of
tonell his brother Gifford knyght Walter emerye God
fayr archbyschop the kynges daughter the Countesse of Wey
ches the kynges nece the Countesse of Chester and many
oother when kyng Henry and oother lordes arround were in
England and herde theseynges they made forwey no
we and all his myghte and force was turned in to mo
nyng and forwey

And when the Emperour came agene in to England
and to the was after ward wedded to Gifford the Erle
of Angoy

And when that nyght was agene that the Erle had du
elled with the kyng the Erle was the firs the kyng
began to weete upon hym & did moche harme in the land
of Normandie and toke there a strong castell & ther he duel
led all that yere and the come to hym tpyng that Henry
the Emperour of almayne that had spoused maude his dau
ghter was dead & that he duelled no longer in almayne & that

the Wolfe come again in to Normandie to his father And
When he was come to hym he hadde him And
come again in to England and made the Englysshmen do
oche and fauer by to the Emperesse And the first man
that made the oche was William the Erchebyschop of Ca
untherbury And that oche kyng David of Scotland and
after him all the Erles and barons of England Also af
ter the noble man the Erle of Angou a worthy knyght se
to the kyng of England that he Wolfe graunte hym for to
haue his daughter Maude the Emperesse And
for encheison that his first that he was a noble man
the kyng graunted hym and consented ther to And then
me he his daughter and had her in to Normandie and co
me to the noble knyght Erle Gaufrid and he spoused the
for said Maude with moche honour and the Erle begate
by her a sone that was called Henry the Emperesse so
ne And after when all this was done kyng Henry duel
led all that yere in Normandie And after that longe tyme
a greuous siknesse toke hym which was the doud And
this kyng Henry reigned xxxv. yere and iij. monethes and
after he doud as before is said in Normandie and his herte
was interred in the grette church of our lady in Rouen And
his body was brought with moche honour in to Englad
and buried a Redyng in the Abbey of the which abbey he
was begynner and founder

Who the said kyng Henry susters sone was made
kyng of England Ca. C. xxxv. iij

a. For this kyng Henry that was the first was
as made kyng bys nephew bys susters sone Ste
phen Erle of Belegne For anone as he her
de the thyng Of his Uncles death he

passeth see and come in to England church council &
strength and helpe of many greet lordes in England ag-
tins hir othe that they had made to Maude the Emperesse to
be the maume and hecroune Stephen kyng of the land.
And the Erchebisschop William of Caunterbury the
first made the othe of fauour by to Maude the Emperesse
see thecroune vpon kyng Stephen his heide and hym and
nointed and bisschops Roger of Salisbury magnify-
ned the kynges partie in as moche as he myght. The first
yere that kyng Stephen began to reigne he assembled a
greet host And went hym to Scotland for to haue
werred vpon the kyng of Scotland but he come agens
hym in pees and in good maner and to hym trustid but
he made to hym none homage for as moche as he had made
homage by to the Emperesse Maude. And the iij yere
of his regne Maude the Emperesse come in to England
And to began debaite bytween kyng Stephen and Maude
the Emperesse. This Maude went by to the Cite
of Wyke and the kyng hir beleged longe tyme. And
myghte not spede so well the Cite was kepte and defen-
ded. And also that was Wyke in the Cite queneleke as
caped a way withoute any maner harme and also that the
kyng the Cite and backed cheryn till candelmesse. And
also come the Barons that helde with the Emperesse that
is for to say the Erle Randulph of Cheshire the Erle
here of Gloucester hughe bygon Robert of Meilek and
broughte with hem a stronge power and foughe. With the
kyng & roste hym a greet barailleyn. Whiche tyme kyng
Stephen was taken and set in prison in the castel of
Bristol.

So Maude the Emperesse went fro Wyke for to
to Osenford and after she escaped to Salisbury and
there she was and dyed that she had.

I Henne the kyng Was take and broughte in to War
 & in the castell of Busto We this maude the Em
 peresse anone Was made lady of england and all men hel
 p her for lady of the lande but the of kente helde With the
 kyng Stephenes Wife and also William of pwe and hys
 aunty helpe hem and helde Werre pens Maude the Empe
 resse and anone after the kyng of sweland come to hem With
 en huge number of peple and to Went they pfer Vn to Wi
 chester the the Emperesse Was and wolde haue take
 hir but the Erle of Gloucestre come With his power and
 saughe With hem and the emperesse in chement Whille the
 the battaille dured scaped fro thes and Went Vn to Open
 ford and there hir helde And in that battaille Was the Erle
 of Gloucestre discomfited and taken and With hym many
 other lordes ¶ And for his deliuerance Was kyng Ste
 phen deliured out of prison And When he Was deliured ou
 t of prison he Went thens to Openford and beseged the Em
 peresse the Was the at Openford and the sege endured fro
 Michaelmasse Vn to seint Andrewes eyde And the emperesse
 the the chech hir all in With Lynney cloth for tene hysen the
 she nat wolde hene knowe for in the same tyme Was moche
 snowe and so she al capud by the chample from hem a Way
 the With hir enemies And so thes she Went to Walling
 ford and there hir helde And the kyng wolde haue beseged hir
 but he had so moche to done With the Erle Randulfe of che
 shire and With Hugh biggote the stronglich berad vp on him
 in every place the he ne diste dudar for to turre And the
 Erle of Gloucestre halpe hem With his power

HoB Gaufrade the erl: of Anglon pafe vp Vn to hen
 the Emperesse foue all Normandie

Capitulo Centesimo quadragesimo

And after this the king came by to Bilton & Bole
 haumade a Castell there but the come to him the Er
 l of Gloucestre with a stronge power and almost had tak
 the king but yet the king escaped with much paine and
 William marshall the was toke And for this delivrance
 the pafe by to the Erle of Gloucestre the good Castell of
 Iherborne that he had take And this was done the
 Erle Robert and all the kinges enemies wente to faying
 done and begonne the for to make a stronge Castell but
 the king come thider with a stronge power and drofe
 him thence in that same year The Erle Mandeville of chester
 was accorded with the king and come to his court at hys
 commandement And the Erle wente saulesch to come
 and the king anon he take hym and put hym in to pry
 son and must never for no thing come out till that he had
 payd by by to the king the castell of Mychel the which
 he had take from the king with stronges in the xij year of
 his reigne And gauforde the Erle of angien pafe by by
 to Henry his sone all Normandie And in the year that
 next sude dride the Erle Gaufride And Henry his sone
 the anon turned a gnie to Angien and there was made
 Erle with much honour of his lath of the land and to
 hym diden feaite and homage the most part of his lath
 And also was this Henry the Emperesse sone Erle of An
 gebe and duke of Normandie In the same year was ma
 de divorce bye betwix the king of fraunce And the Queen
 his wyfe that was ryghte hie of Gascoyne For much
 son that he was knowed and proued that they were sy
 be a myght of blode & also spoused his Henry the emperesse son
 erle of Angoy & duke of normandie and dake of gascoyne
 The xviij year of this king stephen this Henry come to

gland with a strong power and began for to warre upon
 king Stephen and toke the castell of Malmesbury & dyd
 moche harme and the king Stephen had so moche warre that
 he myght whidder for to wen he but at the last they werre ac-
 corded churgh the Erchebisschopp Thobald and churgh o
 this worthy lordes of England upon this condicion that
 they shold depart the waume of England bichene hem so
 that Henry the Emperesse sone shold holde halfe have all
 the land of England And thus they werre accorded And
 was crowned thurgh oute all England And when the accorde
 was made bichene the lordes king Stephen become so sory
 for cause he had lost halfe England and fell in to suche a
 maladie & died in the xij year viij. Welles & v. day of his
 myght all in warre and in content and he lieth in the abbey
 of Finesham the which he let make in the vi. year of his
 myght

Of king Henry the seconde that was the Emperesse so
 in the tyme saint Thomas of Caunterbury was chauncellor
 Ca. Centesimo qdagesimo pmo

And after this king Stephen married Henry the em-
 peresse sone and was crowned of the Erchebisschopp.
 Thobald the xij day before Eastermasse And in the same
 year Thomas Becket of London Erchebisschopp of Caunter-
 bury was made the kinges chauncellor of England The se-
 cond year that he was crowned he let cost a Toun all the ne
 be castled that werre longly to the crowne the which king
 Stephen had given to dyverse men And hem had made
 de Erles And barons for to holde dygh hym And to
 helpe hym agynst Henry the Emperesse sone

And the iij. year of his myght he put under his ovi lord
 ship the king of Wales & in the same year when the king of

Henry the second
 was crowned

Scotland had in his oVne hande that is to seyn the Erl
of Barklde the castell of Banburgh the ne castell vpon
epne and the Erldome of Lancastre

¶ The same yere the kyng With a grette poore Wene in to
Walys & he caste a downe Wodes & make Weyes and made
stronge the castell of Rucland haspyn Werke & amonge the
castelles he made an house of the temple ¶ And in the same
yere Was richard his sone borne that after Ward Was Erl
of Oynford and the fourth yere of his regne he made gau-
frid erl of Britaigne & in that yere he chaunged his money
& the vi. yere of his regne he had an huge hoste Wy to wolu-
se and conquered it ¶ And the vii. yere of his regne he made
hauk keth Erchebyschop of caunterbury ¶ And the all the
Cite of caunterbury all most church mesciuf Was burned
¶ The ix. yere of his regne Thomas haker his chawncellor Was
chofen to be Erchebyschop of Caunterbury ¶ And vpon
seint barnardis day he Was sacred & in that yere Was bor-
ne Alitmore the kynges daughter ¶ And the x. yere of his re-
gne seint Edward the kyng Was translated With moche
honour ¶ And the xi. yere of his regne he held his parliament
at Noreshampton & from thens fled seint Thomas Erche-
byschop of caunterbury for the grete blatre that Was hit
Wene the kyng & hym for yf he had bene founden in the mor-
ne he had be slayne & therfor he fledde thens With in fela-
Wes on foot only that no man vilt vher he Was & Went
ouer the see to the pope of rome ¶ And this Was the pryncipal
mischon for as moche as the kyng wol & hamper clerkes
to seke that Were a thine of feloun Without any prynci-
ple of holy church ¶ And the xii. yere of his regne Was bor-
ne Johan his sone borne ¶ And the xiii. yere of his regne he
maide the Emperour that Was his moder ¶ And in that
same yere Was Johan his daughter borne the xiiii. yere of
his regne the duk Henry of lagons spoused ¶ Maude his

Doughter And he begate on hir iii sonen II Henry Othus
e William And in the 3 yere of his regne And the good
Eke Robere of Ghuresse that founden the abbey of n^o
nes Eton II And in the same yere Marke kyng of Iheru
salem conquered Babibigne the 21 yere of his regne he the
croune his sone Henry at Westmynster e him crowned Ro
gier Erchebisschop of york in larpnyng of thomas Erche
bisschop of Caunterbury Warfor the same Rogier Was
cursed of the pope

II Of kyng Henry that was sone of kyng Henry the
Emperesse sone and of the debate that was bitweue
him e his fadre while that he was in normandie
Capitulo centesimo xliii

a Feer the comynge of kyng Henry the sone of kyng
Henry the Emperesse sone at same Henry the Em
peresse sone Went out in to Normandie e the he lerne
Elmore the Doughter of the Dolfyne that Was kyng of al
magne And in the 3 yere that the Erchebisschop seint
Thomas had bene outeladed the kyng of fraunce made the
kyng e seint thomas accorded And the come Thomas the
Erchebisschop to Caunterbury agene to his owne church
And this accorded Was made in the begynnyng of adu^e
And after Ward he Was quelled and married the 3 day
of Cristmasse the the next come II For kyng Henry the
the 3 yere seint thomas Erchebisschoppe 3 yere Cristmas
he day as he sat a mete e thes wordes said that yf he had
any good lynynghe Rich him he had he many day passed a
benged 3 yere the Erchebisschop Thomas II And anone
Sir William baron II Sir Hugh morvill Sir Willia
macy And Sir magnold siez Dese lere sone in Englyss
pauely Went In to the see e comen in to Englynd to the
chyrch of caunterbury e him the the married at seint
Dunstons in the modern church e that Was in the yere

of Incarnation of Ihesu crist m. C. lxxiiij. And ano
ne after Henry the new King began for to make warre
vpon Henry his fader the vpon his burthen also And
so vpon a day the King of France & all the Kinges sonnes
& the King of Scotland & the grettest barons of england be
marish apens the King Henry the fader & at the last as
god wolde he conquered all his enemyes And the King
of France & he were accorded and the fere King Henry the
fader specially vnto the King of France and praised him
bretely for his doo that he wolde send to hym by letters the
names of hem that begonne the warre vpon him And
the King of France sent apens to him by a letter the na-
mes of hem that begonne the warre The first was Jo-
han his sone & Richard his wyf & Henry his sone the
new King the was Henry the King wonder woth & cur-
sed the time that euer he hym bigate And while the warre
dure Henry his sone the new King died lowe wynting
his mysdo & most for we made of ouer man for cause of seie
Thomas archbishop of canterbury And praised his fader with
muche for we offere mercy for his trespass & his fader for-
pafte him & had of hym grette pite after he died the grette
pity of his regne & such as riding

How the cristen lost the holy land in the forlond
Kinges tyme through a fals cristen man that become
a sarazene

And while the King Henry the emperesse sonely
ued & signed the grette bataille was in the holy lode
he went the cristen man & the sarazenes but the cristen men
were the quelled through grette treason of the rich tithes that
old haue had the wife the quene of Iherusalem that some
tyme was called by the name of the quene of Iherusalem
but she forsoke him & toke to
his lord a Kinge a worthy man that was called Sir En-
gels Wherfor the rich tithes was woth & vnto anothre

h soldyne that was souden of habibogne & become sam
me & his man & forloke his castle & all cristen la. We
and cristen men with nee of this deede but went for to
had grete helpe of him as can we be woned to haue before
when they come to the battle this halfe cristen men cut
and by to the samer & forsoke his owne nation & so we
the cristen men ever quelled with the samer and thus
the cristen men slayng put to horrible deeth & the Eke
of the usalam & ferdinand and the holy crosse borne a day the
king of fraunce & all the grete lordes of the land let the cros
be for to go in to the holy land And amonges hem wente
Richard kyng hartes for a first after the kyng of fraunce
that toke the crosse of the Erchebischopp of toures but he to
ke that the viage at that tyme for nicholson that he was let
by other maner wyse & nedes to be done and when kyng
henry his sader had dyed god by grace & monethes & in
days he died & lieth a foure hundred

Of kyng Richard that conquered all the holy lande
that cristen men had

After this kyng henry dyed Richard his sone
a stronge man & a worthy and also bold & he was
crowned at Westmynster of the Erchebischopp Baldwyn
of caunterbury the iiij. day of septembre and the iiij. yere
of his tyme kyng Richard him selfe & Baldwyn the Er
chebischopp of caunterbury & Hubert bischopp of salisbury
& the Audolphe Erle of Gloucestre & other many lordes of
england went in to the holy land & in that viage dyde
the Erchebischopp of caunterbury And kyng Richard
by reason in to the holy land & left not all the cristen come forth
in this way by to apas & to the cyties with grete force & so
when kyng Richard went forth to hard the holy land & ge
t to them as moche as the cristen men had in the before & co
quered the land agene through grete myghte sauf the holy

Rayn p. 211
177

cross & When kyng Richard come to the toun of Acre
for to get the citie a gret debate arose betwene him and the
kyng of fraunce so that kyng of fraunce went agene in to
fraunce & Was broght to ward the kyng richard but
kyng Richard went agene he toke the cite of Acre And
Whene he had taken it he buell ed in the cite a Wyll but to
him come to pynge that the cite Johan of Ousford his brother
Wolfe have seised all england in to his hand and nor
mandie al so & Wolde crowne him kyng of the land And
Whene kyng Richard herde this endynge he went agene
to ward Englonde With all the spede that he myght but the
duke of Gestracke met With him & toke him & brought him
to the Empour of Almaine & the Empour brought him
in to his prison & after ward he was & lived for so huge a
mansone that is for to say an hundred thousand pound &
for Which mansone to be paid the citie of London of england
was moche & made in to money & all the monies of the citie
of London & given all his houses & church in London to sell
he to selle & the mansone for to pay

How kyng Richard come agene from the holy land
a avenged him of his enemies

Whiles this kyng Richard was in prison the kyng
of fraunce Werde Upon him strongly in Norman
die & Johan his brother Werde Upon him in Englonde but
the bisshoppes & barons of Englonde Withstood him With all
the power that they myght get & euen the castell of
Lewes & othir castelles & the forsaide Johan saw that he had
no myght ne port agene the barons of englonde for to fight
but anon went him ouer the Wy to the kyng of fraunce &
Whē kyng Richard come out of prison and was & lived
& came to englonde anon after Candelmass in gret haste
he Wē In to northyngham & the castell of northyngham to him
was godely & the dysceyned to him his brother & the other

him held & after he went vnto the cite of Wyndesore &
 after he let him crowne kyng of Englonde & after he went
 to Normandie for to werre vpon the kyng of fraunce And
 the kyng of fraunce come with vii. C. knyghtes to ward ge
 for & the kyng Richard meet him and to wolde haue peue
 hym bataille but the kyng of fraunce fledde & an hundred
 knyghtes of his werre take & ii hundred stedes were craped
 with yern & anone after went kyng Richard for to beseye
 the Castell of Gaillard & as he was vpon a day by the ca
 stell to take auisement of the castell an archalastier smote
 him with a quarrell that was enuengned & the kyng droff
 oute the shaft of the quarrell but the quarrell hitte a boode
 still in his back & it began for to ranche that he myght not hel
 pe him self he moue his armes & tho he wist that he had de
 this wounde that he myght not be hele for no maner schynge
 he commaunded anone starpe all his men for to assaile the ca
 stell so that the castell was taken & that he died & so man
 kyng his men dyden that all the peple that was in the ca
 stell were all taken & the kyng did with he what he wolde
 & commaunded his men that they shold brunge before him the
 man that hitte him so hurt & so wounded And when he come be
 fore the kyng the kyng asked what was his name & he said
 my name is Bartram gurthun Wherfore sayd the kyng
 hast thou me slayne such that I did the neuer none harme
 but I said so though ye did me neuer none harme ye were
 false With your honours quene my father & my brother and
 for I have quene no be your trauaill the said kyng
 asked he that died vpon the crosse to bringe mannes soules
 from pene of helle forgeue the my dech & I also forgeue
 it the & commaunded the kyng that no man shold hit mis
 do But for all the kynges defending some of his men hit
 prodd & pruned him quene & the vi day aft the kyng
 did shawen him & for wpenaunce kyng of his mysdoings

Was houseled & anointed & this kyng ne turned but in
pew & prync. Welles & side & lich beside his sadne ac fou
tyme

¶ Of kyng Johan that in the first yere of his regne
losse alle normandie Ca. C. lvi

¶ In kyng richard Was & de forench son & he had
none hitr nothir sone ne doughter his brither iohan
Was made kyng & crowned ac Westminster of hubert thac
Was the archbisschopp of cauterbury & whā he began to re-
gne he was so meruailous mā & wet ouer in to normandie
& Wernd vpo the kyng of fraunce & so lōge they Wernd to
gedre till ac the last kyng ¶ Johan lost normadie & ange
on whi for he Was sone anoided it Was no meruaille tho lat
he assēble he for his ac london archbisschoppes bisschoppes ab-
botes & priours & lardes & hel & them a grette parliamēt &
ayed ther of the clergie the knych of euery chnrch of Eng-
lōd for to cōquer & gett apene normadie & ayed that he
had lēte & they wold not graunte that kyng whi for he Was
vnder the wylle & in the same tyme died bisschopp hubert &
the priour & the couē of cauterbury ch sen apene the kyng
gea Will to hene archbisschopp mastir stephā of langeton a
good clere that Wernd ac the court of roue & send to the
pope hir elction & the pope cōfermed it & sacrd him ac vi-
uile whē the kyng wisht his lōyng he Was vnder the wylle
& diefe ch poue & the couē of cauterbury & wylde he out
of englōd & cōmande that no mēner lēttr tho come frō
tyme ne no mādement shold be vnder lōge ne lēttrd i eng-
lōnd whi this lōyng came to the pope & sene vñ to kyng
Johan by his lēte & prand his wylch good Will and good
lēttr tho lēte vnder lōge stephā archbisschopp of cauter-
bury vñ to his chnrch & suffer the priour & his monke to
me apene vñ to hir owne dwellinge but the kyng wold
nat graunt it for no chynge

How kyng Johan wolde no thing don for the po-
pes comaundement wherfor all england was enterdi-
ted & suspended

Ca. lxxvii

And at the last the pope see by his auctorite & enioyn-
ed to the bisschoppes of england that yf the kyng wol-
d noye in the song the priour of cauterbury & his mon-
ks that they shold done generall excothidung thurgh all En-
glad & graunted full power to iiii. bisschoppes to pronounce the
excothidung yf it were neede. The first was bisschopp Willia-
m of lund & thre othere bischoppes enflace of Ely & the iiii. W-
as bisschopp Walter of Byncheste & the iiii. Was bischopp
Giles of hereford & thes iiii. bisschoppes prayed the kyng &
nelyng on his knees & for wepyng that he wold done the
popes comaundment & the wed him the bulis of the excothi-
dung but for no pryncer that more pray he wold nor cousete
the to. Wher the bisschoppes saw this they went from the
kyng. And in the mornynge after the annuciacion of our
ladys day produced the general excothidung thurgh out all
england so that church was wene shir wis lene & with o-
ther fastenynge & with dalles. And when the excothidung
was produced than the kyng began for to wep all out of
mesure & nome. Wher to his lorde all the possessions of the iiii.
bisschoppes & of all the clergie thurgh out all the lade &
excothid me for to kepe it that the clergie myght not haue
for luyng wherfor the bisschoppes cursed all hym that pue
or shold medle with holychurch goodes agens the will of he-
that hem oved & when the kyng wold nat ase of his mal-
ice for no maner thing the iiii. bisschoppes afore said we-
out the fer and went to the bisschopp of cauterbury and
told hym all the thing. And the Grete bisschopp to hem
said that they shold gone agene to Cautebury & he wold
come thider to hem. Elles he wold send thider Gre-
te honours in his stead that shold done as moche as his self.

Wene this & When the bisschoppes herde this they turned a
pene i to england & comen by to caunterbury the eydunge
come to the kyng that the bisschoppes wene comen agene to
unrebury & him selfe myght not come thider that tyme he
sende thider bisschoppes with a abbates for to tyme with he
that the kyng shold byndre the archbischopp Stephen &
the priour & all the nobles of caunterbury & that he shold ne
uer after that tyme no charyte of holy church agene
the will of he that oved the goodes & that the kyng shold
make full amende to him of which he had any goodes take
& that holy church shold have all franchises as forfourth
they had i saint Edwardes tyme the confessor

¶ How Stephen of langeton com in to england thurgh
the popes commaundement & he went agayn to xlviii

¶ When the fourme of accord thus was ordeyned he
was i apart of endeuour & they put beris seals by
to that one part & they that comen in the kynges name put
her seales to that oother part of endeuour & in this bisschop
was aboute said to be that O part of endeuour to hem & that
oother part of the endeuours they have with he to the
kyng When the kyng sawe the fourme and byndre he
held him full well paid of all maner thyng as they had
ordeyned sauing as touching restitution of the goodes for
to make agene to that thing he held nat accord and so he
sed word agē to the iiii. bisschoppes that they shold wite
to and put a waye eue o point of restitution & they asse
ted that they neede not wite o word out the for the kyng
to the archbischopp by to iii. bisschoppes that he shold come
to Caunterbury for to speke with him ther & sent by to
kyng saufcōdunt Under plogges that is to seyne his Justys
ere Gillebert peyn & Wyn William & la Tanc & John
Aries Hugh that in her cōdunt saufely he shold come & gon
agene at his will & in this maner the Archbischopp Stephen

one to Caunterbury & Whenne the Erchebiffchopp was
dne the kyng come to chilham for he wold come no neer
Caunterbury at that tyme but he se by his tnsorers biffe-
schopp of Wyndchestre that he shold done out of the endēcours
the clause of restriction for to make of the goodes And
the archbischopp made his oth that he wold never done oute
a word ther of ne change of the the biffchoppes had spokid
& ordigned & the the archbiffchopp wite agene to come with
out any more doing Kyng Johan was the woeber than
tut he was before & he made a comune the church oute
all englōd that all the that had hōly church rētes & wene o
ut the see that they shold come agene I to englād at a wē-
my day or less they shold use hir rētes for euer more &
that he cōmanded to enery shirene church oute all englōd
that they shold eney if any biffchopp abbot prior or any o
ther prelatz of hōly chiree for that day after ward usay
thei arē mānere that comē to the pope that they shold to
be the body & brigie before his & that they shold take in
to the kyngs hōde all hir lādys of hōly church that wene
gēue to any man by the archbiffchopp stephen or by the p-
our of caunterbury fro the tyme of election of the archbif-
schopp & cōmanded that all the wordes that wene the Er-
chebiffchoppes shold be cast a done by to the gward & all
shold

How kyng Johan destroyed the ordre of Cisterciens
and I ch. same time the iasshm begd. Ca. C. plig
ne to becom upon kyng Johan and kyng Johan or-
dyned him for to wende in to Ireland and let arye an hu-
māne church oute all England that go to say xxxv.
M. Marc. And sente thurgh all England to the mon-
ks of the ordre of Cisterciens that they shold helpe his of
Dunmarr of fill & they assented & said that th p durst no
thig do thurghout hir churche of Cisterciens wherso kyng

John

John When he come agene from Ireland he did hem so much
the for we can that they first went to abide for he took so
much misfortune of every house of hem that the somme of an
mounted was. M. ccc. More so that they were clam for &
destroyed & sold his house & his lands thurgh out all en
gland & the abbot of Waverley died so much his Manace
that he forsoke all the abbey & with chene & partly ordeyned
him over for to the house of cystians. When the tidings co
me to the pope that the king had done so much malice to
was he to the king Ward full wrath & sed in Agatz by to
the king that one was called p. d. l. & that other durat
that they shold warne the king in the popes name that he
shold ase of his psecucion that he did by to hol p church &
amend the wrong & the trespasse that he had done to the
archebisshop of cauterbury & to the priour & by to the
monkes of cauterbury & to all the clergie of england and
that he shold restore the goodes agene that he had take of
hem agens his will & that they shold curse the king by na
me & to do this thing & to confirme the pope wrote to his
lees in bulles patent. These in Agatz come in to england
& comen to the king to northampton ther that he hold
his parliament and full contrisely they him salued and
saiden sir Welken come fro the pope of Rome the priour of ho
ly church and of the land to amend And we amonest
you we first in the popes bulle that ye make full restitu
on of the goodes that ye have rauished of hol p church and
of the land and that ye undersege stephen Erchebisshop
of cauterbury to his dignite & the priour of cauterbury & his
monkes & that ye pay & apen by to the archebisshop all his
lands & reues. Without any withholping & first it moe ou
er that ye such restituon be made as hol p church shal holde her
pound the assured the king as touchig the priour & his monks
of cauterbury that ye have said. Wnt gladly to do all this that ye

Will or Wyne but at touching the archbyschopp I shall telle
 you in myne hert as hit lieth that the archbyschopp let his
 byschopp niches & that the pope cha for his Wold pray & cha
 byp a becom me shold like four oehir byschoppes for to
 geue him i englad & byp this edicoun I Wold him re-
 am & vnderfoge And nocha in englad as Ecce bys-
 schopp yif he abide he shall neuer hane so good saue condyng
 but he shall be as the said padowse by to the kyng Holy
 church Was Woned uer to discharge an archbyschoppes W
 inuete cause asonably but ever the lath be Woned to cha-
 stize pntes that to god & holy church Wem in obedie W
 but to W no W god the kyng may ge me nay said padowse
 but ge no W openly hane told as ic stader i your hert.
 And to go We We Wull telle What is the popes Wille & thus
 it stant that he lath go We hol p etardited & accursed for the
 wronges that ge hane done to holy church & to the clergie
 for as moche as ge duelle & bech in Wille to abyde i malice
 & Wille not come to none amadment ge shall vnderstode
 that fro this tyme after Ward the sentence is byp go W ge
 ben & lathes stede & stunges & byp all cho that with go
 We haue dmuned before this tyme Wethir they bene erles
 barons & knyghtes or any oehir What so ever they Wene
 We haue assouille saufly by to this day & fro this tyme after
 Ward of What edicion ever that they be We hem accurse
 that with go W come & so do we sentence byp hen openly
 & spicallie ¶ And We assouille anych Erles Barons kny-
 ghtes & all oehir maner men of hir homages seruices &
 fautes that they shoud by to go be done and this endinge
 to conferme We geue pleyue powre to the Byschopp of Wi-
 chster To the Byschopp of Northwiche ¶ And
 the same go We geue in Scotland to the Byschopp
 of roucheles & of salisbury & i Wailis We geue the sa-
 me go We to the Byschoppes of saint dauid & of landaf &

of seiut asse & more ouer We sende thurgh all cristen dome
that all the bisschoppes be ponde the see that they done acur;
se alle tho that helpe th po we or any counsell in such po we
in any maner nee that ye haue to dont in any parte of the
Wold & We as soille him also all by the auctorite of pop &
counaunde hem also With po we for to Veru as With hym
that is enemye to all holy church Tho answered the kyng
What mo we ye done me more Tho answered Pandolf We
sepe to po we in Verbo Wi that ye ne none hir that ye
haue neuer after this day may be crowned. Tho sayd The
kyng by him that is almyghe god & I had wist of this
thing er that ye come in to mi hand that ye had me broughte
such eydynge I shold haue made po we nill all an hole ye
nill Tho answered pandolf full well Wende We at our fyrst
comynge that ye wold haue beue obedynt to god & to holy
church & haue fulfilled the popes comaundment and now
We haue shewed to po w & pronunced the popes Wyll as
We Were charged ther With & as now ye haue said that if
ye had wist the cause of our comynge that ye wold haue
made be nill all an hole ye nill & as well ye myghe haue said
that ye wold haue take an hole ye nill of wispur by the po
pe lue Que for to suffer What Ach ye wold ordeyne We
shull nat span for to take po we holich all the popes messa
ge & his Wyll that We Were charged With

How pandolf deliured a clere that had talled a
colletted the kynges money befor the kyng hym selfe
and anone tho comanded the kyng chesir. Ca Cl
tunes & barliffe of northapton that Were in the kynges
presence that they shold bring forth all the prisoners that
they myght beue done by to the deth befor Pandolf for
encheson The kyng Wende that they wold haue Gagne
sayd by Dedes for cause of dethall. Thynge that he had
spoke afor Whene the prisoners Were with the kyng the

King commaunded some to be hanged & some to be hanged & some to be hanged out his men out of his bed & amonge all o
 ther ther was a clerk had falsed the kinges money and the
 king commaunde that he shold be hanged & drawe & when pa
 wolfe heere this commaundment of the king hesteer him vp
 secretly & anon aved a booke & candle And wolde haue
 cursed all hem that set upon the clerk any hand And pan
 wolfe hym self went for to seeke a crosse & the king felde
 him and desired him the clerk by the hande that he shold
 done the king what that ever he wolde & thus was the clerk
 desired & went thence & pandolf & durant his felde went
 fro the king Johan & come agene to the city of Rome &
 told him that king Johan wolde not amende bene but e
 ver abide so accursed ¶ And uerily the pope graunted
 that per church out englonde that men myght sing masses
 in conuenable churches & make gods body & praye it to the
 men that pass shold out of this world ¶ And also that
 men myght casten children ouerboard ¶ And when the pope
 dyed & said that the king shold not ben vnder the rule of
 holy church for no maner thing the pope the sent to the
 king of France in remission of his synnes that he shold
 take with him all the poore that he myght & went in to en
 glond for to destroye king Johan when this tydinge come
 to king Johan the was he sore annoied and lowdred list
 that he shold lise his name & him self be done to deeth ¶
 The seer he to the pope messagiers & said that he wolde bene
 Justified & come to amandement in all thinges & wolde
 make satisfacion to all maner men after the popes ordeyne
 the seer the pope agene in to Englonde paterly & other messa
 giers come to cauterbury the king also & the xij day
 of may the king made an oth for to stand to the popes or
 dyne laste paterly the legat i al made chynell which he was
 accursed & that he shold make full restitution to al men of holi

John

of religion & of the goods that he had take of: he
avens his Will & all the great lords of England. I Wor
poy the lorde & by the holy wille that of the lorde hold nat
holde his othe they said that they wold make him holde it
by strength. ¶ To put the lorde him to the court of Rome
& to the pope & the paf by the wille of england and of
Ireland for him & for his heirs for evermore. that shold
come after him so that lorde Johan & his heirs shold take
in. 10. years of the pope's land & shold holde the in. 10. years
into of the pope as to forme poping every year. ¶ To the
court of Rome & the land more of filair and also to the
lorde the crowne of his lorde & set him on his lorde & this
lorde he said in being of all the great lords of England
here I refigne by the crowne & the realm of england in
to the pope's hand. ¶ In the year the in. 10. p. 1. which in his
mercy & in his ordinauer the underfenge. ¶ And also the
crowne of lorde Johan & kept it by. 10. years as for seyn. ¶
lorde of in. 10. years of england & of Ireland & confirmed all
maner thinges by his chartre that foloweth after.
¶ Of the letter obligatorie that lorde Johan made
in to the court of Rome wherfor the peters pens be
he gadred thurgh oute alle england. Ca. C. li

e O all cristen people knowe that the lorde duckling
Johan by the grace of god lorde of england greeting to
youe. Unisice & knowe that he is the for as moche as
we have greved & offeuded god and our medie church of
Rome for as much as we have ned to the mercy of Our
lord Ihesu crist. ¶ And be man no thing so worthy
effre as compentat. ¶ Satisfaction to make to god and
to his church but if ye wite our lorde's body as without
names of england & of Ireland that by the grace of god we be
fit to make it for the lorde of it that make it to the lorde

John

the crosse church counsell of the noble erles & barons We of
san & fuly graunte to god & to the apostelles seint petre
& seint paul & to our moder church of rome and to our ho-
ly fader the pope Innocent the thirde & to all the popes that
comen after hym all the name & patronages of churches
of england & of Ireland with hir appertenaunces for remis-
sion of pur finnes & helpe and helpe of our hygh soules &
of all cristen soules so that fro this tyme after ward We
will receyve & holde of our moder church of Rome as fee-
ferme wyng fraute to our holy fader the pope Innocent the
thirde & to all the popes that comen after him in the maner
aboue said And in presence of the wise man pandolf the
popes subdene We makeyn hys homage as it was in the
popes presence & before his Weir and We shall done all ma-
ner thynges aboue said & that to be binden vs & alle that
comen after vs & our heires for euermore without any gay-
ne seying to the pope and to the ward of church vacante
& in toke of this thyng euer for to last We wille cōfer-
me & ordeyne that our specialle rentes of the forsaide Ro-
aume sayng seint peters pene in all thyng to the moder
church of rome payng by yere a m marc of silver a yter
mes of the yere for all maner customes that we shold done
for the forsaide Roaumes that is to seyne at nichil masse &
at Esten that is to seyne viij C marc for England & xij
marc for Ireland sayng to vs & to our heires our iustices
and our otheir franchises & otheir waltres that appartey-
ned to the crowne And all these thynges that before bene
said We wille that it be ferme & stable withouten en-
de and to that obligacion We and our successours And our heires
we in this maner ben bounden that yf we or any of our heires
we thurgh any presumption falle in any point agest any
of these thynges aboue said & he be warned & he wille nat
the same & he shall chaunge the forsaide man for euermore

the chieftren of obligation our Warant for ever
to be firme & stable Without gayng saying We shal fro
this day after ward be trewe to god & to the mother church
of Rome & to the pope Innocent the chadde & to all the
comers after him & the Raaumen of Englund & of Irel
We shal magnify truely in all maner poyntes open all ma
ner men by our po wer thurgh goddes helpe

¶ In the cleres that were outelawed oute of En
gland come agene a how kyng Johan was assailed:

Ca: C. li

V Henne this chartre Was made & sealed the kyng
Underfonge agene his crowne of pan Dolfes land &
foure anone. Vn to archbis schopp Daplyn & to all his othe
clerkes & liwd men that he had exiled oute of his land that
they shold come agene in to Englund and haue agene hir li
des & hir wyues and that he wold make astreucion of the
good do that he had taken of hys aginst hir Wyll. ¶ The
kyng him selfe the & Mandolf & Erls and barons wit
eth Vn to Wyndesore agens the Erchebisschopp Daplyn &
Whan he Was come the kyng Went agens him & fel a dount
to his fete & said to him fair sir ye be Welcome and I geve
you we mercy for inche son that I haue enspassed open for
we the Erchebisschopp toke he vp the in his armes & cos
sed him courtoisely of a tyme and after lad him to the do
re of seint Wythynes church by the howe & assailed him
of the sentence & him wonsailed to god & to holy church &
that Was on seint margarets day And the Erchebisschopp
anone Wre for the kyng masse & the kyng offred at the mas
se a marc of gold And Whan the masse Was done all the
dene to Underfonge all hir landes Without any maner
gaynt sayer & that day they made all myrthe & rege & so
rebut me I as nat the contridying alowd for inche son the
pope had for that the interceding shold nat be Undount

Johan

Wherfore the kyng had made full restitution of the goods that
he had take of holy church and also that he himself shold
do homage to the pope by a certain legate that he shold se
in to England. Wherfor pandolfe his due of the kyng
and of the Erchbisschopp & went apace by to come. And
the Erchbisschopp anon he came before him prelates of ho
ly church as wryng for to take and counsel both moche and
that they shold say of the kyng for to make restitution of
the goods that he had taken of him & they ordeyned & said
that the kyng shold geve to the Erchbisschopp in. M^r more
for the homage that the kyng had done by to him & also to
redeem his by portions & 5 thousand more. And in the
same tyme Nicholas bisschopp of Tuscan Cardinall prync
mauncer of Rome came in to England thurgh the papas co
mandement the 1st of October & came to London the 3rd
of October for to see for that kyng Johan and all the
kynges that comyn after him shold evermore hold the tra
ns of England & of Ireland of god & of the Pope paye
ing to the pope by yea as it is above said.

How the enterdyng was woude in england & of
the debate that was betwene kyng Johan & the Ba
rons of the Reame Capitulo Cencelimo quinquagesi
moterio

Wherfore kyng Johan had done his homage to the legate
that he had sent him the pope for that he shold pay to us
land & yeld apace that was kyng Richard des lise the 1st
part of the land of England & of Ireland that he had wye
betwene the kyng Richard des lise & the kyng Johan & it
that he was woude woude for that he had made gyt. And
wherfore the forsaide Julian of that shewyd to
the legate the apone to the Pope after Cristmassant
the kyng sent the messagers duntre to Julian that

John

Was kynge Richardes Wyf. for to haue a wyse of that he
ayed of hym. And so ye beset that Juliane dyed and
he after Estre And in so moche the kynge was quene of
chynge that six ayed. But also at the fest of Sinte Jo-
han that come next after church the kynge commandi-
ment the interdicting was first wised chynge all englon
the vii. day of Juny. And vii. yea was the land entrey-
ed and in the more men ronge and sayd massis church
cure loundon and so after church cure all Englon And
the next yea after ther began a grete dylat but wene kynge
Johan and the lordes of Englon for enyfor that he
wolde not graunte the la wey & held the which seint Edward
had ordeyned and had bene used and held vnto that tyme
that he had broke it for he wolde no la wey & but did all chynge
that him lyked & distressed many men without cons-
sent of lordes and prynces of the land and he wolde distreyn
the good Erle Randalfe of Chester for enyfor that he vn-
der toke him of his wylkynnesse and for cause that he did so
moche stauie & wylang to god and to holy church and also
for he held and haunted his owne brothers Wyf & lay also
so by many othere women grete lordes daughters for he
had no woman that him lyked for to haue wherfor all the
lordes of the land were with him wonder wroth & were in
london & toke the cite And for to cese this dylat & for the
kynge & the Erchbyschopp & othere grete lordes of the land of
Englon assembled hem before the fest of Sinte Johan bap-
tist in a medewe besides the town of Seanes that is called
Romne And the kynge made hem ther a charter of fra-
unchises soche as they wolde ayen & in soche maner they
were accorded and that accordement laste nat full longi for
the kynge his self some after dis ayen the poyntes of the
same charter that he had made wherfor the most yea of the
land of lordes assembled he & bego to write vpon kynge Jo-

they and brend his loundes & robbed his folke: and ddyd all
 the for: the that they myghte made hem as strange as they
 myghte. With all this he was a chourge & dymys him ouer of
 England and make Lo Wye the kynges sone of france
 kyng of England and kyng Johan sue the ouer see. &
 ordeyned so much peple of Normans and of picardis and
 of flumynges so that the land myghte not hem susteyne
 but with moche for wege amonge all theset peple ther was
 a man of normandit that was called Janke of bent &
 this Normand and his compaignie spared nothir church ne
 house of religion that theyne boud and woked it and cam
 a way all that they myghte take so that the land was all
 destitute what in offit and that beche. The barons and
 lordes of england ordeyned amonge hem the worst speker
 and worst men and sent him ouer see to kyng philyp of
 france and praid hym that he wolde sende Lo Wye hys
 sone in to england. to be the kyng of england and vnder
 fenge the crowne

How lawis the kynges sone of frate come in to en
 gland with a stronge powere of peple to be kyng of en
 gland Capitulo Centesimo quinquagesimo quarto

Then the kyng philip of france hit by a eddyng
 he made certayn aiaunte the wyne hem by the comu
 ne election that Lo Wye kyng philyp sone of france
 shold go with him in to england & dawe ouer kyng Jo
 han of the land & all that was in presence of Lo Wye
 man. So to him homage & become his man & the barons of
 England hit he shold as to don & adide Lo Wye the kyng
 the sone of france & ther was the next saturday before the
 Ascension of our lord that Lo Wye came in to England
 with a stronge army: that eyme kyng Johan had in
 the all the castles of England in to aliens handes & Lo
 Wye the kyng & his men as to the castles & the wylle

strength & the tursaid in Whithon Wiche he longe at the as
 kens eke Wiche chery & the tursday the next sating he co
 me to liden & eke he was Wichefonge Wiche moche honore
 of the lordes eke abynd y him eke & all to him made hda
 ge & after Ward in the tursday next after the tynith son
 daye to the castle of Rengate in the mo: the after the ca
 stle of Bilford & the fadyay next after the castle of Farn
 ham & the monday next after the cite of Wyndestre to him
 was golde & in the mo: Wichefonge seint Johannes daye the
 mauer of Wolnes & the tursday after the Wichefonge seint
 paul the tynith daye to the castle of Odyham and the
 monday next after seint Margarete daye he ordeined him
 to Ward Wichefonge for to besige the castle & the he dwelled
 & 5. dayes & might not get the castle & then went he the
 & come to liden & the tynith daye to him was golde

¶ And in the same tyme the pope sent in to england
 a legat that was called Walo & of hynge Johannes
 Dech

and in the same tyme the pope sent in to Englund a
 legat that was called Walo & he was past Cor
 dinal of wome for to maynteyne hynge Johannes cause agens
 the lawes of Englund but the lawes had so huge pte &
 helpe thurgh the lawes the lawes of France that hynge
 Johan Wichefonge not Wichefonge for to turne for gome And so it
 fell that he had to have go to nycheol & as he went & hode
 Ward he come by the Wyndestre of Wyndestre & that he also
 in dayes And as he sat at the mo: he prayd a monk of the
 house to Wichefonge a lfe Was Wichefonge Was seint hynge by
 Wichefonge the monk said that the lfe Was Wichefonge
 due an helpe O. quod the hynge the lfe was gome seint of
 bred no the quod the hynge And I may due such a
 shall be Wichefonge Wichefonge on fals & gome lfe & Wichefonge
 had said this Wichefonge moche he thought & of the lfe & the

Drinky

day he did in the castle of neberlee his body was bu-
ried at Wyke Wyke Worcester by the the high altar
¶ Of kyng henry the thirde that was crowned at
gloucester cap. cccc. lxxv. quinquagesimo septimo
and after that kyng John reigned henry his sone
was crowned at gloucester when he was x. yea old
on saint gimon's day & iudith of wals the legat of wals
thorough wunwile of all the good lordes that helde spech
kyng John his fadre that to spone the Erle of Arundel
fe of the Erle William Erle of Marchal William of poind
the William the Duner Erle of seiers seier & Maule
wone all otheir good lordes of England helde the Erle of
poind the kyng's sone of ffrunce & anon after that kyng
henry was crowned wals the legat helde his counsell
at bistoche at saint Marthens fest and the xvi. bissho-
ps of England & of wals and of otheir palaces of the
chirch a grette nombur and Erles and Barons & many
lignages of England & all the the the at that counsell
swore feauld by to henry the kyng that was kyng John
his sone and anon after the legat entered wals for
enclison that they helde with the lordes of England all
all the that holpy or gaffe counsell to make them open
the new kyng henry he accused him in the begynnyng
he put in the sentence the kyng's sone of ffrunce & wals
notwithes the same wals wolde nat spere for to wals for
all but went anon & toke the castle of Berhamsted & a
he the castle of herford ¶ And from this day after that
the barons did so meche harme theuech over all England
and principaly the ffrushmen that were some the kyng
to wals wherefore the grette lordes and all the common
ple of England let him croice for to digne to wals And
his companie out of England But some of the barons
and the of the ffrushmen were gone to the City of north

W. Hen Loys herde this tydige he dand sore to be
 de And losse and let ordyne and speke his Wene
 the kyng and Loys by the ligat of God and church the
 Erchebyschop of Cantuarbury and church the gow
 lordes that all the prisonners on that one halfe and
 that othe shold be released and gone quere And Loys
 ys him selfe shold have for his hostages a M. ponde of
 siluer and shold gone out of England and come neuer
 theryn agene and in this maner Was the accord made bi
 the Wene kyng Henry and Loys and the Was Loys af
 flicted of the Popes legat that was called B. Walo of se
 cence that he was in and the lawne of England also and
 after this kyng Henry and Walo the Legat and Loys
 went by to Orlens and the Was the ptes confer
 med and the Wene hem espynd And after Ward Loys
 Wene fro thens by to london and toke his lawe and Was
 brought with moche honoure at the se with the Erchebiss
 chop of Cantuarbury and with othe bisschoppes and also
 with Erles and barons and so Wene Loys in to fraun
 ce And after Ward the kyng and the Erchebisschop and
 Erles and barons assembled him at london at mikelmas
 feede next come to se byng and held the a parliament
 of this Rew the mowed all the franchises the kyng Jo
 han granted at had Romme and the kyng Henry also con
 fermed by his charters which pte benefield thurgh ou
 t all England And in that tyme the kyng toke of every
 plough land ix shilling And Hubert of Burgh Was made
 the chief Justice of England and this was the first yere of
 kyng henrys thirde And in the same yere Was seyne
 Thomas of Cantuarbury translated the l yere after his
 martyrdom And after it Was ordeyned by all
 the lordes of England that all Offenders shold be gone out
 of England and come no more

While the alle the Castles in to his sonde that guyng Iohā
 his fader had geue and taken by to aliens for to kepe & the
 let a Wiche him But the prynces faulces of hand achely the
 gong his castell of Bedford Which he had of the kynges y
 the Iohāmond he held that castell agens kyng Rendes W
 le Wyth myght & strength And the kyng come thidder Wiche
 a pryncer woe & beseged the castell and the Erchebischopp
 master stephen of Langton With a salm companie of knyghts
 ghas come to the kyng him for to helpe from the ascerne
 on by to the assumption of our lady last the seze and the
 Was the coster Wound and take & the kyng let longe all the
 the were there to the castell Wiche his good Wille for to holde
 the castell etc etc is for to signe knyghts men And the after W
 are faulces hem selfe Was founden in a church of Conyngton
 and the for Wom all Englynd Wiche moche shame & Wiche
 the agne w to his owne wmen And While that kyng
 Henry wourd edmond of abynghon that Was custos of
 salisbury Was consecrad Erchebischopp of caustarbury
 & this kyng Henry sent vnto the see by to the Erle prync
 ce that he hold synce him his daughter in to Englynd that
 called Elmyon the Wolden Widdow & so she comen in to En
 glynd after cristmasse and in the moe by after seint hilarys
 the Erchebischopp Edmond spoused hem to gedre at ca
 nterbury And at the day of seint hilarys she Wanne
 ned at Westminster Wiche moche solomnyte and the Was
 of Wiche sigh she Wone hem that is to seyne Edward that W
 as the kyng after his fader flour of courtessye of lar
 ylle and Alargaw the Was after quene of Sweland
 and moche she Was after Wold Conuasse of Bawigh
 and the kyng that died may in iulijon

£ 100,000,000 of notes that were granted for the reconstruction of the railways of the empire.

... ..

And thus it befell that the lordes of England & Wel
de haue somme addicions mo in the charters of Fran
chises that they had of the kyng and somen thus be be
re hem and the kyng granted hem all her oving and mo
re to hem in charters that ony go called the grete charter
of franchises and othe othe is called the chartre of foust
and for the graunte of this hitherto palace. Elix. 4
Barons & all the communis of England put in the kyng
a 100 Mark of silver. When kyng Henry had bene kyng
40 yere the same yere he and his bedes Wives and Da
toms of the Realme went to Ogunford and ordyned all
the in amendment of the Realme. And first he com the
kyng him selfe and after all the lordes of the name that
they wolde hold that statute for ever more. And who that
hem bekehold he beke but the secound yere after the ordi
nauce the kyng church councill of Sir Edward his so
ne & of Richard his brother that was with of Cene Wille
and also of othe repented hym of that othe that he had
made for to hold that lawe and ordinaunce. And seuthe
the coure of Rome to bene assailed of that othe. And in
that yere next comping after was a grette dreth of come
in England for a quarries of Wheet was boith grette
hillenges and the poure peple the needfulles. And othe W
eeds for hunger and dreth many a thousand for dreth of
merce. And in the 4th yere of kyng Henry 4th
gret began here and there be bene hym and his lordes
for trechison that he had broke the couenaunce that was
made be bene hem at Ogunford & in the same yere was the
boure of northampton with the folowynge that was with
him for trechison had ordyned by the lawe to be
bred the use of 1000 & 1000 moneth of may the same yere
after 1000 seile pence day was the last day of the year that is
the Wednesday before seile dunstones day & the was

And King Henry him self & his Edward his son and his
 sister his brother Earl of Cornwalles & many other lords
 And in the same year King Edward the
 King's son came out of the Ward of Sir Symond of
 Mansford Earl of Arundell as before and went to the Bas-
 tions of the March and being with King Henry was much
 honoured And in the same year the Earl of Arundell
 Earl of Gloucester the King's son was also of the said
 Symond through the commandment of King Henry the
 went from his Duchy here for in the said that he said that
 the said Earl of Gloucester was a fool in his counsel therefore
 he ordered him as he said and also King Henry
 And the said day was after the myddes of August the
 Edward the King's son discomfited Sir Symond & man-
 fort at Kent Ward but the good lordes that were there by
 the King were taken that is to say the Duke of York the
 Duke of Gloucester and many other great lordes and
 the said day was after the said battle done at Sur-
 and after was quelled Sir Symond & Mansford Hugh
 the prince and Mansford the was also the said day
 of the King & other many great lordes And when this bat-
 tle was done all the gentles that had been with the
 King were discomfited & they ordered to give & did much
 the harm to all the said for they destroyed his enemies all
 that the myddes of the said year
 Of the siege of Kentworth a how the gentils men
 were delivered through the will of the lordes of the re-
 ame of England a how they come again and had his
 landes as good as the said day
 And the said day was the first day of the
 after the said day the said day was the first day of the
 after the said day the said day was the first day of the

In the year of Incarnation of our lord Ihu crist m.ccc.
lxxxv.

Prophecie of merlyn of the kyng Henry the first ce:
paued that was kyng Iohanes lone Ca. C. lx

And of this Henry propheied merlyn & said that a l3
he shold come out of Wyndchester in the year of In:
carnation of our lord m. cc. lxxxv. & he was the lxxxv.
& holme Wyndesore in his lxxxv. & he said soth for the good the
re the kyng was born in Wyndchester in the year above said
& he spake good wordes & he was an holy man &
of good cōscience And merlyn said that this Henry shold
make the fairest place of all the world that in his tyme sh
hold not be full ended and he said soth for he made the ne:
we West of the abbey of seint petrus church at Westminster
that is fairer of sight than any othir church that men
knowe the church all custenome but kyng Henry died &
that West was fully made & that was grette harme II and
ye said merlyn that this lxxxv. shold haue per the most h
me of his tyme & he said full soth for he was neuer annoi
ed church were ne disced in no maner West till a lxxxv. he
for his tyme And ye said merlyn in his propheie more
& in the tyme & ende of the for said lxxxv. a worke of a lxxxv.
ge lxxxv. shold done him grette harme church his were And
that he shold at the last lxxxv. wastir church lxxxv. of a lxxxv.
for that shold come ouer of the north West & shold him o
lxxxv. And that he shold be drunke by the water and
that propheie full West was knowe for Wythynne a lxxxv.
till tyme of the kyng dyed Symond of Mountfort Er
le of Arundel that was borne in France began agens
him strong West church lxxxv. doynge many a good
lxxxv. was lxxxv. and dede and disced

And West kyng Henry had the victorie at lxxxv. & Sy
mond the lxxxv. was lxxxv. church lxxxv. & myght of lxxxv.

Hen: 3

of Clare Erle of Gloucster that was in keeping and
 ord of the forsaide Simon & church ordinance of King Hen-
 ry that was agent to the King with moche power &
 wherefore the forsaide Simon was sent and that was gu-
 te harme to the commons of England that so good a man
 was sent for. He taught & did in choosing for the common
 profit of the same folk and there for. Almightie god for
 him had riches he had many a fair maner to diuerse
 men and woman of the shire and disse that they ha-
 ue had for the love of him. And Merlyn also old and
 said in his prophete that after that tyme the land shold be
 no while and than his seed shold be in strange lande
 longe tyme. And he said soche for King Henry lived no
 while after. When simon mountfort was dede that King
 Henry he dyde anon after him. And in the same time
 Sir Edward his sone that was the best knyght of the
 world of honour was also in the holy lande and gotte there a
 crowne. And in that tyme he legat on Dame Alisoun his
 wyfe Johan of Acre his daughter that after ward was
 Countesse of Gloucster. And he made in the holy lande su-
 ch a viage that all the world spake of his knyghthode &
 every man drad him highe and lowe throughout all cristen-
 dome as the storie of him tolde as after ward ye shall he-
 more openly. And from the tyme that King Henry dyd
 till that Sir Edward was crowned King all the gentyll
 men of England were as fadours that day without any se-
 cure that him myght maynteyn and gouerne and defende
 agens his enemyes.

Of King Edward that was King Henrys sone

Ex-121

And after this King Henry dyed his sone Edward the
 fourth knight of all the world of honour for goddes
 grace was in him for he had the victorie of his enemyes.

assonne as kynge Henry deide he come to london with a
 faire companie of palatiz and of reles and barons and all
 maner men did his moche honour For i every place that
 Sir Ed Ward was in london the streets were covered over
 his hys with rich chekes of silk of capices and with rich
 coveringe. And for ioye of his comyng the noble burgeis of
 the Citie cast oute at hir Wyndowes gold and silver con-
 fers full in tokenyng of love and of worship seruyces &
 murance. And oute of the conduit of cheyn ran white wi-
 ne and red as streames both of the Water and every Man
 that of myghte drank at hir owne Wille. And this kynge
 Ed Ward was crowned and annointed at right handes of
 Englonde with moche honour & after masse the kynge was
 in to his pails for to holde a masse feste amonges hem that
 him did honour. And when he was fere by to his merce
 the kynge as sendre of sweland come to for to done hym ho-
 nour & murance with a queynhize and an hundred kny-
 ghtes with him was horsed and armed. And when they we-
 re light a doun of hir steeles they let hem gone whider that
 they wolde and who that myght take hem toke at hir ow-
 ne Wille without any chalenge. And after Ward come syr
 Edmond kynge Edwards brother a curteis knyght and
 a gentil of maner and the Erie of Cornwaille and
 the Erie of Gloucestre. And after hem come the Erie of pa-
 tricke and the Erie of garrene and ech of hem by hem self
 led in hir honur an hundred knyghtes gaily disguised in
 hir armes. And when they were light of hir hors they
 let hem gone whider that hem lister and who that myght
 take hem to have hem stille without any lette. And when all
 this was done. And kynge
 Ed Ward did his diligence & his myght for to amede the
 name & welfare the Bridges in the best maner that he myghte
 to the honour of god & holi church & to mayntene his hothen

to jameſte the anoyance of the comune peple

¶ How pdeyne that was lewelynes dougter of war
lps prince and apmer that was the erles brother of
mountford were taken in the lee

Ca. C. lxxi

e The first yere after ward that kyng Ed ward was
crouned Le Welghe prince of Walys send in to fra
unce to the Erle Monnefort the churgh counceill of hys
frandres the Erle sholdre widde his dougter & the Erle tho a
vised hym vpon this thyng & sene agent to Le Welghe &
said that he wold sende after his dougter And so he sene
Apmer his brother after the dampfell & Le Welghe armed
schippes for his dougter and for Sir apmer & for his far
companie that shold goo with hir ¶ And this Le Welghe
did grete wronge for it was coumaune that he shold pue
his dougter to no maner man without counceill & cosse
of kyng Ed ward ¶ And so it fell that a burgeis of bry
stowe come in the sei with wynter & a mether and he to
ke with myze & powder & anone the burgeis sene him Ed
the kyng ¶ And when Le Welghe herd this rydynge he w
as wonder woth & eke for wofull and gay for to wete by
pon kyng Ed ward & did moche harme by to the Englis
shmen and bete a toun the kynges Castell & began fast
to destroe kyng Ed wardes londre And tidings come by to
kyng Ed ward of this thyng he went by to Walys and
so moche he did thurgh goodes grace & his gude poer that
he dwofe Le Welghe by to moche meschief that he slayd all ma
ner stranger & come & peld him to kyng Ed ward and
pay him l. iiij. Mare of silver for to laue pwe and take the
damisell & all his liverye and made an obligaciō to kyng
Ed ward to come to his parliament ii. yeres of the yere and
in the second yere after that kyng Ed ward was crouned
he held a gretall parliament at Westmynster and ther he
made the statutes for default of la by comune assent of

all his baronage & that Eftren neye feþpunge the kyng and
 by his letter to Lewelyn prince of Wales that he shold com
 to parliament for his lande & for his holdyng in Wales as
 the strength of the latter obligatorie witnessed To Ro Bez
 lene had some & despite of the kynges commaundement &
 for pure wrath began agene for to Berre vpon kyng Edward
 and & to stowe his landes And the kyng Edward her to this
 tpydunge he was wonder wrath vnto Lewelyn & in last
 assembled his peple & wrote hym to ward Wales & writ
 to so vpon Lewelyn the prince all that he broughe him
 in moche for we & disese And Lewelyn sawe that his se
 fene myght not auailid & come agene & yelde him to the kyng
 ges grate & cryed hym mercy and longe tyme knelled before
 the kynges feet The kyng had of him pite & commaunded
 him for to arise & for his meynesse for yafe him his wrath
 & to him said that if he transpased agene hym an othir tyme
 me that he wolde & stowe him for euer more David that was
 Lewelynes brother that same tyme dyllede with the kyng
 Edward & was a full man & a sotill & iurous & ferre co
 styng & moche rason though & euer more helde him stille for
 to wege & a spie the kynges wille & euer more made good se
 blant & semed so to we that no man myght perpue his falsse
 nesse

¶ How leweline thurgh eggyne of dauid his brother
 warred agene vnto kyng Edward Ca. Cxxiii

¶ It was not longe after that tyme that kyng Edward
 was yafe to dauid Lewelynes brother the lord schip of
 frosham & made him a knyght & so moche honour did he
 neuer after to no man of Wales for enche son of hym kyng e
 dward helde his parliament at london When he had done in
 Wales all that he wolde & chalged his money that the was
 full cur & ended wherfor the comune peple pleynded he wold
 be for so that the kyng be equite of hym that such transpases

1283

viden a ccc. Were attaine of such Maner falsenesse: After for
somme. Were hoonged & somme drowed after Ward longed
& after Ward the kyng ordeyned that the sterling halpyn
& ferthing shold gone thurgh out his land & comanded that
no man fro that day after Ward pas ne fessed hous of
lignion With lande tenement With oute special lene of the
kyng & he that did shold be punysshed at the kynges Wille
& the pise shold be for nought And it Was not longe af-
ter that the Welsh prince of Wales thurgh trement of da-
uid his brother & by both his consents they the kyng to dis-
crete kyng Edward in as moche as they myghte So that
thurgh him both the kynges pise Was broke And the
kyng Edward herde this anon he sente his barons in to
northumberland & the summe also that they shold gone & to
ke his viage by the countre the Welsh & David & Wond-
erful Was for to Were the for it is bywar in Wales When
in othe edens is somer And le Welsh he ordeyne & call
a newe vitaille his good castell of Wandone and Was then
an huge non bre of peple & plente of vitailles so that kyng
Edward Wist not After for to cete And the the kyng
ges me it perceyved & also the strongest of Wales they let
come in the see langes & bores & galle Plankes as many as
they myghte ordeyne & haue for to gone to the forsaide castell
of Wandone With men on fete and eke on hors But
the Walshme had so moche peple & Was so stronge that they
driven englishmen agene so that they Was so moche pise of
peple at the turning agene that the charge the brethyn of
him made the langes and bores sinke & the Was drenched
sub many a good lugghe that is to seyne sir Roger of
Gliford Sir William of Wyndesore Was sir Johannes
Ieneher Robert & sir Richard Manny & an huge number of
other gal Was thurgh hit drowed for yf they had good
pise they had not bene harmed the kyng Edward herde

& that his peple was so drenched he made for wey no we
 but tho come fir Johan of Beysse from the kyng of aragō
 & brought with him moche folke of lachibers & of gascōys
 nes & were so wondrous and duelling with the forsaide Syr
 John of Beysse & understode of hym wages & with him
 were richold & noble men & were for to fight & brue ma
 ny townes and quelled moche peple of Walshmen all that
 they myght take. And all the with strengthe & myght made
 assaunte to the castell of Swanton & gite the castell and whē
 David the princes brother herd this adyng he ordyned hit
 to fliche. And LeWelyn the prince saw that his brother
 was fliwen & for was a biffed for he had no power to his
 better for to magnify & so leWelyn gan for to fle & wend
 well for to have asscaped. But on o more we fir Rogier mor
 armer met with him only & with p. knyghtes & set hym wile
 & aboute and to him wauce & smote of his hede and presented
 him to the kyng Edward & in this maner the prince
 of Wales was taken & his hede smytyn of & all his limes dis
 membered for ruernour thugh right full come of all the limes
 of the same.

¶ How David that was leWelynes brother prince of Wa
 lps was put to the deeth.

And that was the princes brother of Walps thurgh
 pathe went for to haue bene prince of Walps after his
 brother. & thē & upon that sent he after Walshmen to his p
 unt at Dunbigh & folke made Wales anscaped the kyng
 & began to nene were agens the kyng and did all the for
 be & disce that he myghte by his power. When kyng Edw
 ard herd of this thynge he ordyned men to pursue upon
 hym and David herselfe him defended eyll that he come
 to the town of Sike moun and there was David take as he
 fode and led to the kyng. And the kyng commaunded that
 he shold be hanged and whē he and smyle of his hede. And

244

quarter him & send his h& to londen and the iiii. quarters
resende to the iiii. townes chief of Walys for the shold
take example and the of hene Warr ¶ And after Ward
kyng Edward the one his ptes thurhouthe all Walys & sai
fed all the land in to his hande & all the gude bedes that w
en lise a lye come to done fraute & longe to the kyng edw
ard as to his kynde had And the kyng Edward ame
de the la Wess of Walys the Wess & fess ¶ And after
he sent to alle the bedes of Walys by his litten patene that
they shold come all to his parliame & When they Wess come.
the kyng said to him full curteisly Lordynges ye be Well
come & me honereth your counsell and your helpe for to wi
de in to Gasconne for to amende the trespaces that me was
done When I Was ther & for to encrese of ptes he Wene the
kyng of Aragon & the prince of mery ¶ And alle the
kynges lige men Erles and Barons consented & gran
ted ther to ¶ And the made hym kyng Edward wyg and
Went in to Gasconne & he amende alle the trespaces that
him was done in Gasconne & of the debate that was he W
ene the kyng of Aragon and the prince of Mery he ased &
made him accorded ¶ And Whyle the good kyng E
dward & the Queene Elenor his wife Wess in Gascon
ne the good Erle of Corne Walle Was made Wardyne
of Englund eyll the kyng Edward come agene
¶ And the enquired he of his traitours the congeted fal
fynesse agens hym and the of hym alle Underfenge her
tome after the they had diserved
¶ But in the menepre Whille the good kyng Edward
Was beyond the see to done hym for to make hamen
the agens he had trespaced the Was a false cheif traitour
the Was called Rys ap merydole began for to make W
e agens kyng Edward and the Was for richeson of
Sirpaigne cyphos Wrongfully greved and dysfised the

for said Rye ap micheol. ¶ And When kyng Edward
 herd all this he send by his letter to Rye ap micheol that
 he shold be lie for to make no werte but that he shold be lye
 to for his due and When that he come agene in to England
 he wold undertake the quarell & done amend all & that was
 myghte the forsaide Rye ap micheol despised the kynges
 commaundment & spak no for to do all that he wote he
 myghte to the kynges men of england but anon after he
 was taken and led to yolk & there he was drawe and hyl-
 ged for his felonye.

¶ Of the redressinge that kyng edward made of his tu-
 tresses & of his clerkes & that they had done for his fal-
 lenesse & how he drove the Jewes oute of england for
 her vyleyn & mysdoings. Capitulum centesimo lxxv

¶ When kyng Edward had dwelled in Gascoyn
 he wille come to hym for to dwelle agene in to En-
 gland and the he was come agene he found so many plaures
 made to hym of his Justices & of his clerkes that had done
 so many wronges and falsnesse that wonder it was to he
 to. ¶ And for which falsnesse Wille Thomas Wygand the
 kynges Justice for the towne of London as the sum of London
 for falsnesse that he put upon hym what of the was ac-
 tinge & proued false And anon after When the kyng had
 done his Wille of the Justices the he he enquired & aspye
 to the Jewes & aspyed and bygid his peple thurgh the
 punte of falsnesse and of vyleyn & he ordeyne a pryncipall
 men amonge his lordes & they ordeyned among hem that
 all the Jewes shold forsake England for mysdoings And al-
 so for his false vyleyn that they did on the cristen men And
 for to speke and to make an ende of this thing all the com-
 munitie of England pass by to the kyng the xij. day of
 october good fridays mornynge And so Wille the Jewes departyd
 out of England And the same Jewes in to france and

Edw.
the duellid church due of kyng philip that the was
kyng of fraunce

How kyng edward was seised in all the lode of scot
land church consent a graunt of all the lordes of scot
land

It was not longe after that Alexander kyng of scot
land nas dide a David Erle of Huntingdome that
was the kynges brother of scotland aged a chymed the
kyngdome of Scotland for suchson that he was right full
hir but many guth lordes of Scotland saiden nay wher
for guth debate arose betwene hym and his frendes for as mo
che that they wolde not consent to his coronacion in the
mene tyme the foresaid David dide And so it befell that
the same David had in daughter that with his wyf ma
ried the first daughter was married to Baillol the seconde
to Bruce the thirde to Hastings And the foresaid Baillol
a Bruce chailenger the land of scotland a guth dide a full
se arrow betwene hym for suchson that ech of hem wolde
have the kyng And when the lordes of Scotland sawe the
state betwene hym in they come to kyng edward of england
a seised him in all the land of Scotland so his chief lord a
when the kyng was seised of the lordes of Scotland the for
said Baillol a Bruce Hastings come to the kynges court a
aged of the kyng betwene of hem that the kyng of Scotland
And kyng Edward that was full guth a guth a guth
inquest by the countes of Scotland a of the guth lordes of
Scotland which of hem was of the eldest blood a it was
founde that Baillol was eldest a that the kyng of Scot
land shold helde of the kyng of england a guth hym feaut
a homage And after this was done Baillol went in to
Scotland a the was crowned kyng of Scotland And the
same tyme was spoy the first tyme betwene betwene the
guthing the normans due spoy a guth the normans a

tined all at Dover & there they married a holy man that was
 called Thomas of Dover And after Ward went the Nor-
 mans questioned that they feared of him not on And some
 of the King Edward's folk the Duke of Gasconne thurg
 King Philip of France thurg false casting of the Dissipi-
 ers of the land What for he comend that was King Edward
 to his brother's part By his homage By to the King of France
 And in that tyme the clerkes of England granted to
 King Edward his friends of holy church good as I help
 for to recover his land & gent in Gasconne & the King for the
 for a noble company of his knights & his selfe wolde ha-
 ve went to portsmouth But he was the church one man
 Duke of Wales that had seized the castle of Wandene in
 his hand & for that reason the King turned away By to
 Wales at castlemasse And for this reason that the noble lordes of
 England that were sent in to Gasconne had no comfort of
 his lord of the King they were called of Sir Charles of Fra-
 nce thus is to say Sir Johan of Britaigne Sir Robert tip-
 tothe Rauf tynnyng Sir Hugh barwolf & Sir Adam of cur-
 ges & put at the ascencion was made tak in Wales & an
 other that was called Morgan & they were sent to the Duke
 of London & there they were kept

How Sir Johan bailloll King of Scotland withheld
 his homage as of Sir Thomas tutbeshulle & a C ligu-
 nd When Sir Johan bailloll King of Scotland was
 before the King Edward was married in Ga-
 sconne to whom the name of Scotland was delivered false-
 ly & so a gent his othe withheld his homage thurg proci-
 ring of his folk & sent to the court of Rome thurg a false
 suggestion to be assured of the othe that he I was By to the
 King of England & so he was by later induced to chosen
 King of Scotland & thus he was by later induced to chosen
 King of Scotland & thus he was by later induced to chosen

Edward III

for the pope's sake for the love of good his wife the king
of France & the king of England And as the cardinal
nals spoken of accord Thomas earl of Lancaster Was taken a horse
& made fraut & homage to the Wardens of ports & to his
put his horse in the stage for that he thought none in to En
gland for to aspie the countess & the king When he came in to
England that he had broken the king's prison of France by wife
& said that he would have the all Englishmen & Welshmen
should also be to the king of France & this thing for to be
ge to the end he would upon this countess & the king ma
de his wife be & that he should have by him a great piece
orch of land to bring this thing to an end this false was
told to his love & went thence & came in to England by
to the king & said that he was broken out of prison and
that he had put him in such prison for his love Wherefor the
king would much thank & full glad was of his coming and
the false wife remained for that day aspired at the doing of
the king & also his counsel for the king loved him well and
was with him full peace but a clerk of England that was
the king's house of France heard of this treason & of the false
senesse & wrote to another clerk that was dwelling with
the king of England all to the Thomas earl of Lancaster had done
his false coming & all the counsel of England was drawn
for to have sent by to the king of France & through the for
said were that the clerk had set for France but was found
de by his wife Wherefor he was led to London drawn & hanged
there for his treason & his sons that he had put in France
for hostages were also hanged

¶ Of the conquest of hereford

Ca C lxxviii

Then the two cardinals were with agents to find
for the love of the present king the king set the
of his rules & laws that is to say he commanded his brother
of Lancaster & of Gascon he kept the city of Middelburg

him self a baron & of ocher barons about xliij. of the
 best & best of england & in the same time the king Edward
 went his viage to scotland for to serve upon John Balliol
 king of scotland & he with the Rods of Berwick fled from the
 english & went to the scots & king Edward went his to
 the west & besieged the town & the other were with ma
 ke them suffer & fetch a fire & burne it of king Edward
 the schipes & said in despite & contempt of his wife king
 Edward with his lorde shankes to have given Berwick all
 our due shankes gas pikes his when king Edward her
 this scorne anone charge his unpghtynesse he passed on the
 dikes assailed the town & come to the paces & gate & conqu
 erd the town & through his gracious power quelled. xxv.
 thousand & in C. scotes & king Edward lost no man of a
 none save sir Richard of conestable & him killed a fle
 ming out of the castle with a quarrel as the forsaide Ri
 chard did of his helme & gmailed him for to yelde him and
 put him to the kinges grace & the scotes wold not wher
 for that halfe was burne & cast a downe & all the other were
 burne & king Edward lost no man men ne
 the viage of simple estate but xxv. Englishmen And the
 wardene of the castle pass by the lieges without any as
 saute And ther was taken William Douglas and Sir Sy
 mond fassell and the erle patrick yeld him to the king but
 Ingham of humfrie & Robert the Brus that were w
 ith the king Edward forsoke king Edward And helde
 the scotes And after ward they were take And
 put in to prison And after ward the king forgaif them
 his trespass and deliured them out of prison

And the king Edward chose his Berwick
 with Wallis And with dres.

And after ward Robert Rous went to
 Wyndass and seith Bugisbugge a fre and English and

C. 111.

Lamerflouge quelled & wold the folk of the edem & after
ward he wene for thes. In to dubare & the first Wednesday
dag of march the kyng let the ark of garvine sit hugh pr
ey & the hugh spencer with a fair company for to beseye the
castell but one that was called sir Richard siward a emir
tour a fals men pragned for to beguile the englyshme & set
to the Englyshme him for to beseye & said that he wold
eld to be the castell of the wold & gynneth byn dapis of
aspit that he mye sed & all to sir Johan hallowe kyng of
scotland to his men for that was with in the castell
send his word of that he wold remane the siege of the englysh
me that the wold & peld the castell to englyshme the massa
gier cho come to sir Johan hallowe kyng of scotland that
he was with his host & his message told him & sir Johan told
eth his host & come in the morrow to ward the castell & the
richard siward sa to his come that was master of the castell
& kept of the castell & said in to the englyshme O god qd he
now I see of folk a fair company & well appailled I will
go agens he & with him to meete he assaile And sir hugh
the spencer sa to the falsness of him & the cast & said that
O emir tour take & turned your falsness shall not availle
go & hugh the spencer & maided anone for to lide him
& in all host woe agens his enemye & quelled of the scottis
men. All for the power had that tymer no man with he of
honour I say sir parali graham that manlied saugh And
longe & at the last he was quelled & the said the englyshme
in myrrou of chesecote thes seater and swithes told I for so
the of France In Rome wylgri a morig in an cwell ti
myng wene past dubare
By the that was in the castell sa to the scottis
the golden the castell by to Englyshmen and
bundy his bodys louters and
Castell the kyng Edward And for the

P. 111

2

all the in the castle in Eder & Bii. batons and by Bii
knights and vicars & Bii. piers and all were present
to King Edward and he set him to the town of London
a fine depth there

How King Edward of his great grace delivered apē
the scottes out of prison that were cheutenains of the
land & they drove hem to the frenschmen thurgh co
uncill of William Waleys

Then King Edward had made eho an ed of the Wer
re & taken the chieftains of Scotland & ho come fir
ist bailliff & yet he hym to King Edward & put him i his
gum & he was lad to London and when King Edward W
as come thider they were brought before him & the King a
gid of him to W. they Wold make amendes of that traspas
& hse that they had done him & they put him in his met
eplordngis & the King I Wull not pour landes ne no
ut of your gooddes but I Wull that ye make to me an
deh upon goddes body to be true to me and never after
this tyme apens me hse armes & all they consented to the
Kinges Wyl and I Wom upon goddes body That is to sep
at fir Johan of comyn & the erle of the strethorne & the erle
of carlyle & also iiii. bisschops & iiii. knights for all the clergie
& so the King delivred him & gaf him saucondue to W. y
to his owne lande And it was not longe after Ward
that they newen agene King Edward for enclifon that
they Wist well that King Edwards folk was tak in ga
loin & so for is said but fir iohā bailliff King of Scotland
Wist well that his lād shold have for be & shame for his fal
luisse & I Wist Wene his ouer the sea to his owne lād &
the lād his & wā neu more apē therfor the scottes chose to
fir King Williā Wallace a noble & an herbe wā I pofnde
& much harme did to the English & King Edward thouz
t he Wize have thuram of his ppl that Wist well the

U 1723
scopne & in host Ware ouer the see in to flandres for to be
in vp on the kyng of france And the Erle of flandres
vnderfeng him with moche honour & graunted hym all
his landes at his owne wyll And whan the kyng of fla
ndres herd alle that the kyng of Englonde was araued in fla
ndres & come with an huge poer him for to destroe he p
rised him of eny wyse for in so that english marchantz and also
fornish wyght saufely gone & come in bothe wyse the kyng
Edward graunted it so that he must leue his men out of
pryson that were in galcopne & the kyng of france gran
ted anone & to the wyche elinor And in the same tyme
the seeke sent by the bisshopp of saint Andre wes in to fra
unce to the kyng & to the Charles his brother that the
Charles shold com with his power and they of scotland
wold come with his poer And so they shold gone in to en
glonde that land for to distroe from scotland all that they
cometo here And the scottes trust moche vpon the fawse
men but of that chynge they had no maner graunte And
notwithstande the scottes begon to wyte & quene in northumbr
land & did moche harme

¶ How William Walleis let Sir hugh of crossyngham
of the bataille of tonbrith

¶ When this tidynge was come to kyng Edward that Sir
William Walleis had begyned such a freddy poer & that all
scotland to this was arred at & wold to quene Englishmen
to destroe the land he was so wroth & sent anone by letters
to the erle of garth to the hertys percy and to the Erle
of mar to the hertys of crossyngham his rector for
they shold with power and wende into northumbrland & so
forth to scotland for to kepe the countreis and the Walleis
Walleis herde of this wold he gan for to flete the English
men by the wyche & dropt by the wyche to flandres & the
he held him in the castle and the Walleis men every day

stand & manaced and did all the despite that they myghte
for that the Englishmen upon a tyme in a morning we net
out from the Caster the mountance of ymish & passed ouer
a brunge And Wilia Walys come with a stronge po wer &
drof them a take for the englishmen had apene him & so no
myghte but fled & they that myghte take the brunge ascapd
but sir Hugh & his knyghtes & four other was slayne & many
beside also wherfor was made moche fei the king
Edward spyd all his nedes in Flaunders & was apene co
me in to Englonde & in haste toke his wey to ward Scot
land & come thider at ascencion tyme And all that he fo
unde he sette a fire & stund But the pouer peple of scotland
come to him wonder chilyke & prayed him for goddes Loue
that he wolde haue on them mercy & pit wherfor the king
tho commaunded no man shold doo harme to him that
was yowden to him ne to no man of ordre ne to hous of re
ligion ne no maner church but let aspie wherthat he myghte
fyn any of his enemies tho come aspie to the king & tolde
him wher the scoches were asselid for to abyde bataille &
on seint marie Magdalene day the king come to fenkirke
& yof bataille to the scotch and at that bataille were quells
led xxviii. thousand & of Englishmen but yv. & no mo
of the which was a worthy knyght slayne that was a
myghte an hospitaller that was called Jhon Bryan Jay.
¶ For when William Walys fled from the bataille that
same frere Gnam hym pursued fastilich And as his
hous was it stode in to a myn of Marris by to the hely

¶ And William Walys turnede apene and the
requered the forsaide Brian and that was moche harme
¶ And that whyle king Edward wente thurgh scot
land for to enquire yf he myghte fynde any of his En
mies ¶ And in that land he duelled as longe as him lye
led & ther was none enemy that durst him iolyde And

Some after Ward kyng Edward Wene to souptunton for
he wold not abyde In Scotland in winter syon for des
tute of his peple And When he come to London he let a mende
man y miste & ethe Wene Tene opens his ptes and his la de
Whille ethe he Was in flandres

¶ Of the last mariage of kyng Edward & how he wēt
the iurtime in Scotland Ca Cleri

And afterward it Was ordeyned thurgh the court of ro
me ethe kyng Edward shold wedde Dame margare
te kyng philippes suster of fraunce & the archebischopp wote
of Wynchelsea sponsoed he to geve thurgh Which manage
ment Was made pteche Wene kyng Edward of England &
kyng philipp of fraunce kyng Edward wedde ethe in time
in to scotland & ethe when ethe fyrst pte he had infamned
the kyng so ethe ethe life not on ethe he come to his mercy
sauf ethe ethe Wene in ethe castell of Estrenelgne ethe Was
well vittailled & astored for vij. yer.

How the castell of estrenelgne was beleged ca c lxxii

kyng Edward come With an huge poer to ethe castell
of Estrenelgn and beleged ethe castell sure & lxxii
vittailled for he myghte to ethe scortas none harmef: ethe castell
Was so strong & vitall ptepe and kyng Edward sa v ethe
& etheoughte him vpon a quintize let make anone ethe
pate of highe gale vpon ethe tow of ethe castell and ma
de his othe ethe ethe as many as Wene in ethe castell For he crd
or haron & he Wene talk vich strength but yf he wold ethe
after hym pte he shold be hangd vpon ethe gale For and
When ethe ethe Wene in ethe castell lard ethe ethe come & pel
de hem all ethe ethe pte grace and mercy and ethe kyng for
pfe hem all his malice & ethe vichall ethe gale lard
of scotland For ethe kyng Edward ethe ethe shold come to
For to every pte ethe shold stonde to his ordynance
How troyebalkonne was first ordeyned Ca c lxxiii

Edw. 1

The kyng Edward the first came to London & went hither
had with him a party of his men which were the
as occupied by him that is to say in Wales in Gasconne
in Ireland And thought how he might recover his treasure
that he had spent about his wars & he enquired through
the name of all misdoings & wrongs done church & mis
doers in England of all the time that he had been out Of
his name that men called Twitheston & ordained him to
Justice & in this manner he recovered his treasure without non
bur And his intention was for he had thought for to have
given in to holy land for to wars to god's enemies For
intention that he was crossed long time before & not before
that he was that he had ordained with much good thing all
England to him that was misdoer for that he was
well chastized & after ward the men and the women
& the poor communes were in distress & in pain the same time
kyng Edward imprisoned his own son Edward for
intention that Walter of Langton Bishopp of Ely there
was the kyng's ransom had made upon him complaint &
said that the forsaide Edward through covetise & procure
ment of one priors of garristone a knyght of Gasconne had
broke the parkes of the forsaide Bishopp & the forsaide priore
uncalled & had the same Edward & for this cause kyng
Edward exiled his son out of England for ever more

¶ Of the death of William Walter the false traitour

And when this kyng Edward had his intent over come
in Wales Gasconne & in Ireland & destroyed his traitors
but on such that abate William Walter that never to the
kyng told him yet & at the last in the time of his dome
nion in the part of kyng Edward with him that false traitore
was sent & was sent to the kyng safe the kyng told not for
yet he was to London under the name of his intent & on the

Bartholmei Wesent he was hanged & his hē & his
tū of & his hē welte take out of his body and brande & his
body quarend & sent to nī: the best townes of Scotland &
his hē sette vpon a spere & sette vpon London brugge in
ample that the scothis shold haue in mynde for to breke him a-
mye apens his liege lordes sonne

¶ How the Scotis come to kynge Edward for to a-
mende his trespass that they had done apens hym

Ca & lxxv

¶ At mikelmasse the next comynge kynge Edward
a helde his parlement at Westmynster & thider come
the Scotis that is to seyn the bisshope of saint Andrie
Roberte the Brus Erle of carris Dimond the fassell Jo-
han the Erle of arthure and they were accorded with the kynge
& bounde & by othe to come that after Edward of any of his
milkens him apens kynge Edward that they shold bene dis-
herited for ever more & when his pite was thus y made
they toke his lene panceliche went home to his countie

¶ How Roberte the brus challeged Scotland re. c lxxvi
a and after this Roberte the Brus Erle of carris sente

by his letter to the erles & barons of Scotland that
they shold come to hym to scone in the mo: the after the con-
ception of our lady for high neyde of the land & the lordes co-
me at the day assigned And at the same day sir Roberte
the brus said fair lordes full Well ye knowe that my pite
ne duelled the right of the Reame of Scotlande as ye wi-
te Well any righte full that sir Johan Baillie the
was our kynge do hath forsake & left his land & though
it so be that kynge Edward of England with wynn full
po wer god made me to him assente apens my self yf that
ye will graunte that I be kynge of Scotland I shal keep
o & apens kynge Edward & apens all maner men with
that worde the elde of stone awse & lēte him all sege the

it was wson for to give him e the land to keep e defend e
the said in presence of hem all that he wold geve hym a M
pounde for to magnifye that land e all the ocher graunted
the land to him e wiche hir pore hym for to helpe and defende
kyng Edward of England e said that Robert the Brus
held the kyng of Scotland

How sir Johan of comyn galmelaid the crownyng
of sir Robert the Brus

Ca. lxxvii

Ordynge said sir Johan of comyn thenkech god the
true e the othe that he made by to kyng Edward
of england e touchyng my self I wil nat be the myne o:
the for no man e so the wene fro that companie at that tyme
where Robert the Brus e all that to him consented were
wonder wiche and the maner of sir Johan of comyn Tho
ordyned they an ocher conseil at donfrie to the wiche co:
me the forsaide sir Johan comyn he duellid but ij. myle from
donfrie after that he was woned for to sojourne and abyde
How sir Johan was treistously qilled ca lxxviii

Ben the Robert Brus byt that all the grete lordes
of Scotland were come to scone sauf sir Johan co
myne that sojourned e nych scone he sent after hym spie
alge that sir Johan comyn shold come and speke wiche him
and upon that he sent after hym Johan comyn his bro
ther and pruned him for to come and speke wiche hym at the
gay fairs at donfrie and that was the thursday after
Candil masse and sir Johan graunted hym for to wed
wiche hym And when he had had masse he toke a sope e
drank and after ward he bestrode his palfrey and rode bys
sag and so come to donfrie And Robert the Brus saw
him come at a wynde we ask was in his chambre And
he made Joye I no be and come agens him and coked
hym aboute the neck and made wiche hym good semblance
And when all the Ecles and barons of Scotland were pr

Edw. 3.

seue Robert the Brus spake and sayd thus quod he pe wit
tell the mchelson of this comping and wherfor it is of pe
Will graunte that I moche be kyng of Scotland as aghe
bir of the land and all the lordes that were then said with
one vois that he shold be crowned kyng of Scotland & that
they wol be him help and magnify agene all maner men
on lyfe and for hym geve it were ned dre. ¶ The generall
nyght the Johan of compyne answered and said Certes ne
uer for me her for to haue of me as moche help as the Val
ue a botoune for that othe that I haue made to kyng edw
ard of england I shall hold while my lyfe last & with that
word he went for the company and wolde haue went upon
his palfrey And wher the Brus pursued hym Wyth a
drauf werke & bare him thurgh the body & Sir Johan co
mpyn falle dune to the erthe due When Rogier that was Sir
Johan compyns brother sa to the falscheneffe & sterte to sit to
here the Brus & smote him with a knyfe but the fals tra
ytour was armed vnder so that the stroke myghte do him no
ne harme And so moche help come aboute Sir Robert the
Brus so that roger compyn was thus quelled and all to be
we in to small peeces

¶ And Robert the Brus turned agene ther that Sir Jo
han compyn the noble baron lay wounded and pynd
toward his deeth besides the high auter in the chirch
of the gray freis & laid vn to Sir Johan compyn. O
traitour thou shalt be dede & neuer after let myne a
vauncement & thoke his swerde at the high auter & sl
mote him on the hede that the brayne fell a done up
on the gronde and the blode sterte an high upon the wa
les & put vn to this day that blode is sene ther that
no water may wash it a way and so died that noble
knyght in holy chirche

And when the count Robert the Brus said that no
man shold let his coronacion be commaunded at
any other place of worship shold come to his crowning to seke
Johannes wayn in Scotland And so it befell that on our
lady day of Annunciation the bisshopp of glasscow and
the bisshopp of saint Andrewes crowned for hir kyng Rob
ert the Brus in saint Johannes count and made his kyng
And anon after he drove out all the Englyshmen out of
Scotland and they fled and come and playned by to kyng
Edward the first Robert the Brus had drive him out of the
land and distanced he in

How kyng Edward dubbed at Westminster xxiii
score knyghtes

Ca. C lxxx

And when kyng Edward heard of this meschance he
saw that he wolde be of lene auenged and said
that all the ermtours of Scotland shold be lene longed and
drave and that they shold neuer be ransomed and kyng
Edward thought byon this falsenesse that the scottes had
done & send after all the bacheleris of Englonde that they
shold come to London at Wicford and he dubbed at West
minster xxiii score knyghtes the dayned him the noble
kyng Edward hit to send in to Scotland to were by
yon that Robert Brus and sent with hym in to Scotland
his squire the Balauce Erle of panbroke and sir Hery
petybowe with a fair company that pursued the scottes and
broke wynnys & castles and after ward come the kyng him
self with erles & barons a fair company

How Robert the Brus was sconfited in bataille &
how simond ercell was slayne

Ca. C lxxxi

On the feyde day after the assumpcion of our lady
kyng Edward met Robert the Brus beside saint
Johannes count in Scotland & with his company of which
compaune kyng Edward quailed by. M. When Robert

Xiii. only in
my 2 MSS. B. & C
MS. B. is defective
in this part.

the true sa B this mischief began to rise and hid him eke
no man myght hym fynde But sir simond fustell purchas
ed hym som so that he eurned apene and eke dwelle for
he was a worthy knyght and a bold of body and the En
glishmen pursued euer som in every fild And quito the fild
de that Sir Iymond fustell rode vpon and chyn to his hys
and lad hym vñ to the hoste And sir simond bega for
to flater and speke faire and said lordis I shall geue you
we iij marc of siluer & myn hors myn harness and all
myne armur and become a begger And the answered the
anbo of pruenes that was the knynges archier no we god
me so helpe ye is for nought that thou spakst for all the
gold in England I wolde the nat be gone withonnet &
maundement of knyng Edward And the was helde to
knyng Edward and the knyng wolde not let hym but com
maunded to lode hym a wagge to haue his dome at london
and on our laddys euen nativite he was hounge and dra
wen and his heed smychen of and fonged apene with chyn
nes of yron vpon the galewes And his heed was sette v
pon london brugge vpon a pyn and apene Cris masse the
body was bound for nicholay that the men that kepte the bo
dy by nyghte chyn sa B so many duckes raumped with ge
te Jhen cokes ranning vpon the galewes and forabelych
tumed the body & many that he sa B anon after chyn dy
ed for drede and some were made of for sicknesses chyn to
And in that baraille was kille the bisschop of baston the
bisschop of seint Andrie wes and the abot of seene all ar
med with yron as men of armes as fals traitours & fals
pulaers apene hit othe & chyn were brought to the knyng and
the knyng seue hym to the pope of rome that he shold done
with hym what his will was

How iohan erle of artheles was take & put to the
deeth Capitulo Centesimo lxxii

Edw. 1. 13

B

And at that tyme he fled for Johan Erle of arles &
Went in to a church and ther he dyed but he
myght have had no refuse for excusyon that the church was
excommunicated thurgh a generall sentence & in the same church
he was made And this for Johan went well have had sea
red from the deeth for excusyon that he clamed bynnewed of
kyng Edward And the kyng hold no longer he turned of
his traitours but sente him to London in hast and there he was
as longed and he shode smykel of and his body shone all
to us his But at the prayer of the quene Margarete for eu
er for that he was of kyng Edward kyng his dra
wing was for yere 13

How Johan that was William Walleys brother
was put to the deeth

Ca C lxxxi

brother
of the
king

Ben the gowest maistres of Scotland were thus do
ne to euel deeth and shended for his falsenesse Johan
that was William Walleys brother was take and done to
deeth as Sir Johan Erle of arles was

How robert the Brus fled from Scotland to Norw
ay Capitulo Centesimo lxxxi

And at that same tyme was robert the Brus moche
hated amonge the peple of Scotland so he wist not
what was for to done and for to hide him he went in to nor
way to the kyng that had sponesed his fuster and ther he
was sower for to have And robert the Brus myght noze
be founde in Scotland kyng Edward tho let crye his pefe
thurghout all the land and his lawes were used And
his mynistres went thurgh out all the land

How kyng Edward died

Ca C lxxxi

Ben kyng Edward had asked his mynistres he turned
open southward a maladye took hym a burgh
by sand in the marches of Scotland & he dyed well that

in
[Signature]

his dech was full nygh and called to him Sir Thery the
lax Erle of Nichol sir Superle of Warre Wyke Sir As
mer Valaunce Erle of panbroke and sir Robert of Glou
ford samun and prayed hem vpon the saich that they shyn
o wed that they shold make Edward of carnewyman kyng
of England his sone as tuch as they myght and that they
shold nat suffer piere of Canaston come apene in to englon
for to make his sone to vse riote and they graunted hem
with good wyll And the kyng toke the sacrament of holy
church asa good cussen man shold and bide in verray
pauence & When he had the kyng xxxiij yeres he dyed And
was burwd at Westmynster with moche solemnite v
pon Whos soule god haue mercy Amen

Of merlyns ppheties that were declared of kyng
edward that was kyng henries sone Ca Ellynn
nd of this kyng Edward pphered Merlyn and
called him a dragon the second kyng of the vi. last
kynges that shold be for to reigne in Englon and said that
he shold be medled with mercy & also with strenght & fir
nesse that shold kepe Englon from colde and hete and that
he shold open his mouth to Ward Walys and that he shold
see his o foe in Wyke and that he shold chesen with kallen
that shold do moche harme to his seed And he said soch for
the good kyng Edward was medled with mercy & with
fersenesse with mercy apene his enemies of Walys and af
ter of Gwerland with fersenesse When he praye him to dech
for his falsenesse and enuie as they had deserued it and
well kepe he Englon from colde and hete fers he kepe ye
from all maner enemies that come vpon him to done
any wronge And well he opened his mouth to Ward Wal
ys and made it quake e churgh the bydour of his mouth
When he conquered it churgh dynt of I Ward for the prynces
Welghe and David his brother Rys and merjan were

Edward y. p. 102. 60
Lyn. in xxxv. 151

put vñ to the sech for his falschiffe and his folg ¶ And
he sette his ofoot in to Wyke and conquered Wyke and
the which conquest was slayne by v. thousand and vij.
hundred outcalleth that was bound in the red halke
And the Waller that he let make shall be nouous vñ to his
seed as men shulld after say in the lye of Sir Edward
of Carnarvan his sone And it Merlin said that he shold
make wures wñ in blode and with drapnt and that he
med well in his Verres that he had the mastie And
ye Merlin said that ther shold come a peple oute of The
north West during the regne of the forsaide dragon that he
shuld be led by an ymaginonde that shold the drage crow
ne kyng that after ward shold flie ouer the see for drede of
the dragon without compynyent and that was prou
ued by Sir Johan Baillok that kyng Edward made for
to beue kyng of scotland that falsely arose agens hym &
after he fledde vñ to his owne landis of fraunce and he
was come agene in to scotland for drede of kyng Edward
And ye said Merlin that peple that shold Led the for
saide Gihond shold be faderles vñ till a certayne tyme
and he sayd for the peple of scotland greely were di
fised with that Sir Johan Baillok the kyng fled from scot
land ¶ And it sayd Merlin that the sone shold become
in his tyme as wñ as any bloode in to kyng of gote
Mortallite of peple and that was well knowen when the
scottes were slayn & the said Merlin that ylle dragon shold
be noous a for that sheld mene gñe were aginst his that
shold not in his tyme be in id And that seemed well by
Robert the Brus that kyng Edward notiffed in his cham
ber that sickness sheld a way and mied gñe were apen
by which was was not ended in his tyme And after
ward gelyu said that the drage shold beue hold the best
bedy of all the world & he said seek for the good kyng

2

Edward was the Dorehast kynge of all the world In
his tyme And yie said Merlin that the dragon shold die
in the marche of an othis land and that his land shold
be longe without any good kyng and that men shold we
pe for his deeth from the Isle of shetpy By to the Isle of
marcylle ¶ Wherfor allas shold be his commune songe and
ge peple saddeles in the land Wristed and that pphcie was
kino be ouerall full well for the good kyng Edward dyed
at Burgh by sandes that is vpon the marche of Scotland
Wherfor the Englishmen were discomforted & sorowed in
Northuber land for encheson that kyng Edwardes sone
sette by the scottes no force for the Kide of piere of Banas
ston Wherfor allas was the songe thurghoute all England
For s fault of a good Wardyn from the Isle of shetpy By
to the Isle of marcylle the peple made moche for we for good
kyng Edwardes deeth For they wende that good kyng
Edward shold haue gone in to the holy lande for that was
hollyeste his prposse vpon whose soule god for his high gra
ce haue mercy

¶ Of kyng Edward that was kyng Edwardes sone

Ca. lxxviii

a nd after this kyng Edward dyed Edward his
sone that was born in carnauan & this Edward
Went in to fraunce & spoused Isabell the kynges dought
er of fraunce the xxv. day of Januer at the church of
our lady at boboigne in the yere of our lord Ihu crist a m.
ccc. xij. the xx. day of feuer the next yere that come f.
ter he was crowned solempnely at Westminster of the Ers
chibiffes of Hereat of Wyndesore & of the archibiffes of
Caunterbury & that was so great pice of peple that Sir
Johan Bacwell was dede and murdered And anon
the good kyng Edward was dede Sir Edward his son
kyng of England sente after piere of Banastone in to

Gascogne and so much loved hym that he called him his
 brother and anon after he gave hym the lordship of Wal-
 lington & it was not longe after that he gave hym the
 Erldome of Cornwall & gave alle the lordes Wyll of
 the Reame. And the brough he Sir Walter of Langton
 Bishop of Ely in to prison in the tower of London &
 the which knowes allowe hym to serve for the kyng was
 with hym for cause that Sir Walter made comple-
 ynt upon him to his father wherefor he was put in to pris-
 on in the cyme of Twilcastone. And the forsaide piers of
 Banastone made so grete waisties that he went in to the
 kynges prison in the Abbey of Westmynster and took the
 table of gold with the custodes of the same & many othe-
 re riches. He wotes that some cyme were the noble & good kyng.
 Richard And took hem to a marchaunt that was called
 Oymery of Friscomlande. For he shold have hem over the
 fet in to Gascogne and so he wente thence and they come ne-
 ver agene after. Wherefor it was a grete losse by to this lād.

And when this piers was so richly a vaunced he
 became so proude and so stout wher of alle the grete lordes
 of the Reame had hym in despite for his grete bearing wher
 for Sir Henry the lacy Erle of North & Sir Guy

Erle of Warwick the which good kyng Edward
 and Sir Edward his son of england his father charged that
 piers of Banastone shold not come in to England for to
 bring his son Edward in to riot.

And alle the lordes of England assembled hem
 at a certeyn day at the fairs pearchours at london. And
 spoken of the dishonour that kyng

Edward dyd in to his Reame. And to his crow-
 ne & so they assented all lordes Erles And communes that
 the forsaide piers of Banastone shold be expelled out of
 England for ever more and it was done for he forswore

138

glond and Went in to Ireland and that the King made
him chieftaine and gouerne of the land by his commissi-
on & that this pier was chieftaine of all the land and dyd
that alle that hym lyked and had power what he wold &
that tyme Were the temples called church all castles for
inclosure that man put by on him that they shold done the
King agens the fayth and good helpe. And King Ed Ward
ued pier of Banastone so moche that he myght nat folow
his companie and so moche the King gave & knyghte To the
peple of Englonde that the exiling of the forsaide pier shold
be reuoked at Stamford church hem that him had exiled
And wherfor pier of Banastone come agene in to Englonde
And when he was come agene in to this land he dysposed
the grette lordys of this land and called Sir Robte of
Clare Erle of Gloucster herefoure and the Erle of nichol fir
Henry the lacy buttel and sir Guy Erle of Warwyke
the blake hounde of Acre and also he called the noble
Erle And genrell Thomas of Lancaster Chetle and ma-
ny othir seignes and thame hem said & by many othir g-
te lordys of englonde wherfor they went to Wardis hym full
angry and som annoyed and in the same tyme died the
Erle of nichol but he charged or he was de the thomas of la-
castre Erle that was his sone in lawe that he shold mayn-
ten his quarell agens the same pier of Banastone byon
his beuefou.

And so it was ordyned thurg helpe of the Erle
of Lancaster And of the Erle of Warre Wyke that forsaide
Sir pier was he held at gauesich bysides Warre Wyke
the xij day of Jun in the yere of grace a thysse & xij wher
for the King was for amynd & prayd god that he myght see
that day to be a veger by the deth of the forsaide pier &
so it befell after ward as yeshull hem after the tyme for the
forsaide Erle of Lancaster & many othir gte barons Were

due to pious dech And marened for michefon of the for
said quene The kyng Was also at london and herte a p
lement and ordeyned the lawes of sir Gimonon monfote
Wherfor the Erle of Lancastre and the Erlys and all the
clergie of Englund make an othe thurgh counceill of co
here of Wpuchel for to magnify the ordinaunces for th
more

How robert the bruce come ayene in to Scotland
gadred a grete power of men for to werre upd kyng
Edward

Capitula Centesimo lxxxviii

No When sir Robert the bruce that made hym kyng
of Scotland that Was fled in to norwey for drede
of dech of the good kyng Edward and herte of the Erle
that Was in Englund he Went the kyng and his brides he
ordeyned an host & come in to Englund in to Northuler
land and chynlyp detyrred the countre and When kyng ED
ard herte this epdynghe he assemble his host and mette
the scoottes at Estuvelyne in the day of nativite of seint io
han baptyst in the vii yere of his wyne and in the yere of
our lord Ihesu crist a M.CCC. and viii: Alas the for Wi
and losse that ther Was done for ther Was slayne the no
ble Erle Gillebert of Clare sir robert of Gloucestre and
many othe & of othe pple that no man wude nombur and
the kyng Edward Was scōfide & sir Edmond of maus
le the kynges sithard for dunde wine and drenched hys self
in a fassauer that is called Bannockburne Wherfor the
scoottes said in wprous & despite of kyng Edward for as
moche as he shued to gone by water & also for he Was discō
fide at Bannockburne ther for mapdes made a song ther of
in that cōdem of kyng Edward of englōd & in this maner
the songe mapdes of englōd saie may ye morne for hys sa
in ye lost pour lāmas at Bannockburne With hualygh whae
Wēd the kyng of englōd to have geth swelād With rōbilōg

By King Edward Was discomfited he Was Won
 by sorp and fast floure With his folke that Was left
 on Eyre and Went to Wyke and ther held him and af-
 ter he took hostages that is to Wyke Bishp of the see
 of the toun and the King Went to London and took coun-
 cill of churges that Were made full by to the tyme of En-
 gland And in the same tyme it befel that the Was in En-
 gland a viltaine that Was called Johan tanner and he W-
 ent and said that he Was the good King Edward's son
 and he spake called Edward of Carnarvan and ther for
 he Was take at Osenford & ther he chalenged the fore car-
 mers church that King Edward had gave hem the Wyche
 church some tyme Was the Kinges hall And after that
 Was this Johan led to northampton and there he and ther
 longed for his falsnesse & ther that he Was & he confessed &
 said before all the peple that ther Was that the King's son
 him that he shold be King of England and that he had ser-
 ued the King in yow

How the toun of bereyph was take thurgh tre-
 son a how ii cardinales were robbed i englat & i lre
 and in wyndesore sonday in the yere of our lord thi-
 nste M CCC. y vi. Berkeley Was the church
 false toun of one piers of spalding the which piers the
 King had put ther for the hope that same toun was ma-
 up burgeis of the toun therfor the churche that was put
 in hostagerburgh the burgeis of Berkeley held the King
 ges marchant many dayes ferd in strange pres

And after that tyme ther come ii Cardinales i to
 england as the pope had him sent for to make pres b. e. Wout
 Scotland and England

And as they went to Wardun for to have sacre
 maister b. e. of Beaufort Bishp of Dunelm & as they were
 they were take & robbed upon the mow of Wyke of Wint of

Edw 1st
Which robbery for Guildenburgh of middelfon was attained a
raie and longed and was at London and his lord smit
ten of and sette downe a pen and sette downe the way and
the in quarters sent to for cities of England And that
same tyme befell many myschances in England for the po
ver peple dyde in England for hunger and so moche & so
fast sad that wunche men myghte buy a quarter of
wheat was worth y^e shilling and y^e pece and an half a quar
ter of wheat was worth y^e mare and of a tyme the po
ver peple stabe children and the hem and all also all the ho
unders that they myghte take and the hore and caten And
after that fell a great mentyn amonge bestes in diverse con
tries of England during the reygne of Edward the first

How the Scottes robbed Northumberland

Capitulo Ceneesimo lxxxv

And in the same tyme cometh the Scottes ayein in to
Englond and destroyed Northumberland and brede
that land and robbed it and quelled men womē and chil
dren the lyne in the dale and bane also holy church & de
stroyed custome and toke and have Englishmenys go
ode as they had bene samenes or pagynys and of the W
ylkednesse that they diden all the world spake that of ch
urgh as custome

How the Scottes wolde not amende his trespass
therfor Scotland was enterdited

Ca. C lxxxvi
And when pope Johan the xxii after saint petre herde
of the grette sorow and mischance that the Scottes
myghte be was wonderfory that cristen dome was so de
stroyed church the Scottes

And namely they destroyed so holy church wherfor the pope
set a general ferite under his bulke of the viii to the xii
of eathbury with the bishopp of yorke that if robert the
son of Scotland wold not be Justified & make amende

By to the kyng of England Edward hir lord And ma
ke amends of his liff and of his barres that they had
dun in England and also to restore the goods that they
had calup of holy church that the sentence shold be pronu
ced churgh all England And when the sarkis herd this
they wolde not be his waler for the popes Commaunde
ment therfor Robert Gaus James Douglas and thomas
Raudulph Erle of moray and all the that with him comit
ned or byn halp in word or in dede were acursed in every
chirch churgh England every day at masse in tymes and
no masse shold be songe in folg churgh churgh outcast scot
land due of the scottes wold make effiencion of the bar
res that they had made By to holy church therfor a many
a good prest and holy man therfor were slayne churgh eke
ame of Scotland for euech of that wold sing no masse a
pens the popes commaundment and agens his wille
to done and full fyll the tyme; Wille

How sir Hugh the spencers sone was made the kyn
ges chamberlayne & of the bataille of mitone

Ca. C lxxxviii

And it was not longe after ward this the kyng of
Engned a parlement at york and ther was sir
Hugh the spencers sone made chambrelayne and in the
ment tyme ther the werris last the kyng went agens in
to scootland that it was wonder for to wye And beseged
the roune of And then wye the scottes went over the
water of solt wach that was in myll from the kynges to
ste and pryncp the flote a wye by myll and come in to
Englode & wold & distroled all the the myll & spand no
maner thing all the the tyme By to york & when the En
glishme that went to the battle the the flote of the the
myll emuaille as well as the the the the the the the
and sculter come and make the the the the the the the

Wale the xij day of october ¶ Alas what for we for the
English husbandmen that cōd no thyng of the weete that
thei were quelled and drenched in an arme of the see And
thei the Bishops Sir William of melton Erchebisschop of
york and the abbot of selby with for the fild and co
men yn to york and thei was hir o wne folk that they had
that myschaunce for they passed the water off Wall and the
scottes sette a fire the flakies of the and the smoke thei of
was huge that the Englishmen myght not see the scottes &
thei the Englishmen were gone over the water thei comen
the scottes with hir wynges in maner of ashelde and come
to ward the Englishmen in a wy and the Englishmen fled
for wuneth they had they any men of armes for the kyng
had hem almost loste at the siege of Berwyke & the scottis
shobilers were hir were the brugge and the Englishmen
and thei the gate lost hem me to Englishmen fled & thei
the scottis & the gate lost and the Englishmen almost
were thei quelled and he that myghte wende over the wa
ter was saued but many were deyne ¶ Alas for thei was
slayne many men of religion And seculars and the pres
fics and clerkes and with moche sorowe the Erchebisschop
escaped and thei for the scottes called the battle the whi
te battle

¶ How kyng edward did all maner thyng that Sir
hugh the spencer wolde

Ca C lxxxiii

¶ And when kyng Edward herde this tidinge he re
meued his sege from Berwyke and come agene in
to England But Sir hugh the spencer the son that
was the kynges ¶ Chamberlayne kept so the kynges
chambre that no man must speke with thei ¶ The kyng
but he had made with him a fute for to done his ned & thei
our mesur & thei hugh was him so stout that all mā had of
him scorn & despite & the kyng him self wold not ben goi

ned he ruled by no maner man but only by his fadir and
by him and yf any knyght of england had woddys ma-
ners or lordes that they wolde coule anone the kyng must
pene ic him or elles the man that oughe it shold be falsly
endited of foris or of felonie and thurgh such doynge they
diskredit many a good bacheler & so moche land gete eue
it was wonder & When the lordes of Englund saw the gre-
te couerise and the falsse of sir hugh the spencer the fadir
of Sir hugh the sone they come to the generall Erle of La-
castre & ayed hym of conseil of the disese that was in the
Royaulme thurgh sir hughe the spencer & his sone and in last
by one assente they made a ynus assembly at shirborne in
Elmede & all they made the an othe for to breke and destruy
the the doynge by the the kyng & sir hugh the spencer & his
sone upon hir po wer And they wente in to the marche of
Walys and testried the land of the forsaide sir hughe

**How sir hugh the spencer and his fadir were exiled
oute of england** Ca. E lxxviii

By the kyng Ed ward sawe the grete harme & destruch-
on that the barons of Englund diden to Sir hugh
the spencers lande & to his sones in every place that they co-
men upon and the kyng the thurgh his on still willed sir
Johan monbray Sir Roger of gliford & sir goslynne da-
uill & many other lordes that went to him consene whatfor
the barons did the more harme than they diden before and
When the kyng sawe that the barons wold not cise of hys
cruelte the kyng was sore adrad lest they wold destruye
hym and his name for his myntenaunce but yf that he as-
sentred to hem And so he sent for hem by letters that they
shold come to londen to his parlamente at a certeyn day of
in his letters was contynued And they comen with in the
tailles well armed at all pointz & every battail had with a
summe of gunneshoth and ther of the nyght quarter Day

99 1

him that was aboute hym he gave him his curse and went
 our the se to his landis but Sir Hugh the sonne wold not
 gone out of. England but he was in the se lande and
 his companie wolded in. Dromondre beside sande which and to
 he and was a day all the good that was on him the val-
 ue of xl. M. pounds.

¶ How the kyng killed Sir Thomas of Lancastre
 all that helde with hym and how the traitour came
 and yelde hym to the kyng & of the lordes.

¶ Ca. Clergy

¶ It was noe longe after that the kyng he made Sir
 Hugh Spencer the sader and Sir Hugh the sonne come a
 pue in to England apens the lordes Wyll of the Bedma-
 sonne after the kyng with a strange power come & beseged
 the Castell of Liske and in the castell was the lady of Ba-
 dlesme for nichson that she wold not graunte the Cas-
 tle to Queene Isabell kyng Edwardes Wyfe but the princi-
 pall cause was for nichson that Sir Bartholome the la-
 dylsme was apens the kyng a lyffe with the lordes of En-
 gland & northes the kyng by helpe & socour of many of
 Wyng also of helpe of southerne men the kyng got the
 Castell mangre he all that was thereyn & toke with hym
 all that he myght fynde & whan the barons of England heard
 of this the kyng Sir Roger mortimer & other many lordes to
 fle the toun of Bruges forth with strych wherfor the kyng
 was wonder woth & he ouerlafe Thomas of Lancaster
 & Imfrey & Infount Erie of herford & all thes that were as-
 sentant to the same quarrell & the kyng assenbled an huge
 host & comen apens the lordes of England wherfor the mo-
 turers put hem to the kynges mercy & his grace and anone
 they were sente to the towne of London & ther kept in prison
 & whan the barons herd of this the kyng they comen to coun-
 fre thes that Erie Thomas sojourned & told hym he was

Edward 3

Mortimer's loch had get to son to the kyng and put him
in his grace
Of the siege of eyghill. Ca. lxxxvi
Thomas of Lancaster herd this thyng and
wonderd with all that were of his companie & grete
lygher. Was discomfited & ordeyned his power to goode &
besieged the Castell of eyghill but the that were withynne
so malice defied he that the barons myght not gete the Castell
& when the kyng herd that his Castell was besieged he was
wroth god and by his names that the siege shold be renewed
and assembled a huge power of people & went thiderward
to assiste the Castell and his power increased from day to
day. When the Erle of Lancaster and the Erle of Here-
ford & the barons of his companie herd of this thyng they
assembled all his power and went hym to Burton Spere
and kept the brigg that the kyng shold nat passe over
But he toke so on the y day of march In the pwe of gra-
te Mr. C. and yvi the kyng & the Spencer sir Wymer
Walaunce Erle of Warwike and Johan Erle of Arun-
till & his power went over the water and discomfited the
Erle Thomas and his companie and ship shode to the East
of eutbery and fro thence they went to poustwe &
in that viage died sir Rogier danmors in the abbey of
Eutbery and in that same tyme the Erle Thomas had a
tunone with hym that was called Robert of Holand a li-
upght that the Erle had broughte up of nought & had no-
tified hym in his holdynge and had given him a thousand
marc of land by yere & so muche the Erle loved him that
he myghte be in the Erles witt all thyng that him lyk-
ed best and he and his and so quincelpech the thefeba-
taryngs he had that he trusted more upon him than
upon any man a lyve and the Erle had ordeyned by his
letters for to be in to the Erldome of Lancaster for

Edw 3

to make men arise to helpe him in that biage that is to say
ne v & men of Armes but the false traitour come no thes
no wanten men for to warne ne to make arise For to helpe
his lord And When the traitour herd alle that his lord
Was discomfited at Burthou as a false the traitour he
stalle a bag And robbed in tauntesdale his lord me that
come fro the Icomfite and toke of him hors and harness &
all that they had & quelled of him all that he myght take &
tho come and yelde hym By to the kyng When the good erf
A Thomas Wynt that he Was so berried he Was sore afffled
and said to hym selfe O almyghty god quod he to his wyfe
Roberte Holand fynde in his heren to betraye his lord
that I haue lured him so moch O god Well many now a
men see by hym that no man may deceyue any other man
than he that he trust most vpon he hath full euell yelde my
godnesse and the wurship that I to hym haue done and
e hurgh my kenderesse haue hym a daunced And made for
from thue and he maketh me go from hygh By to lue lue
ye shall he die in euell dech

Of the Icomfite of burthou Ca & lxxxviii

The good Erl Thomas of Lancaster humfry & so
wonne Erl of herford and the barons that with he
Went to the councill he Wene hem at four pntours at pnt
the Tho thought Thomas vpon the traitour of Roberte
Holand And said in rethou Alas Holand had me betrayed
Oy is in the wed of some euell shude and by commune as
sent they shold all Wende to the Castell of Dunstaburgh
the Which pnteyned to the Erl dome of Lancaster And
that they shold abyde there till that the kyng had forgaue he
his malice But When the good Erl Thomas this her
d he asured in this maner & said lorde god be if we go to,

Edw. III

Hard the north & the northmen men Wyll seyne that we go
to ward the scottes and so we shull be hold remours for
cause of distaunce that is betwene kynge Edward and Ro-
bert the first that made hym kynge of Sweland & therfor
I seg as touchyn my self that I wull goo no farther in
to the north than to myne owne Castell of pounflete

¶ And when sir Rogier Clifford herd this he a was by a-
n i wiche and doo we his i weed and i weer by almyghty
god & by his holy names But yf that he wold gone wis-
th him he shold be de and that he wold like hym then

¶ The noble & gentill Erl Thomas of Lancaster was so
w adrad and said fair fere I wull gone with you why
be so mee pe we be & ¶ Tho went they to gedres in to the
North and with hym they had vi. c. men of armes and co-
me to Burbyngge ¶ And when sir Andrieu de Herkela
that was in the northwester church ordinaunce of the kynge
for to kepe the ceter of sweland herd alle how that thomas
of Lancaster was discomfited and his companie at burton
by on tyme he ordeyned hym a strange power and sir Sym-
mond Ward also that was the shirue of yorke and co-
me and met the barons at burbyngge and anon they be-
ke the brugg that was made of the And when sir tho-
mas of Lancaster herd that sir Andrieu de Herkela had
broughe with hym such power he was for adrad & sent
for sir Andrieu de Herkela and with hym spake & said to
him in this maner Sir Andrieu we qd he pe more well be-
triflonde so that our lord the kynge pe lad and mys-gone-
ned by moche sale wunerte church sir Hugh the spencer
the fadre and sir Hugh his sone and sir Johan Eile of
Grunthall and church Maister Robert talwelle a sale pi-
lde that no be is in the kynge to wure duellung ther-
for I pray you that pe wold come with us with all the
power that pe have ordeyned and helpe to testre the vent

23

of Englonde and the traitours that ben therein And We
Wull pteue yn to go we the best part of v. Erl domesche
we have and hold & we wull make yn to go w. any othe
that we wull never done chynge without your counceill &
so ye shull bene as we as we as ever was Robte
of Holand ¶ Tho answered sir Andrie we of berkeley And
said Sir thomas that wold I not done consene chynge to
for no maner chynge ye myght me pteue without the Will
and commaundment of our lord the kynge for than shold
I bene held a traitour for evermore ¶ And whan the nob
ble Erl thomas of Lancaster saw that he wold not consene
to hym for no maner chynge Sir Andrie we he said Wyl ye
nat consene to destroye the kynge of the Reame as we he cō
fess at one word sir Andrie we ye telle us that or thys ye
wyl be gone that ye shull bene take and hold for a traitour
more than ye shold. To no we and in wene wyl ye shull die
than ever died any kynge of Englonde And Undersions
eth wyl that ye wyl never chynge that forer shall go we
wyl and no we goeth and wyl that go we good lieth &
I wull pteue me yn to the mercy and the grace of god and
so wene the fals traitour Sir Andrie we of berkeley in hys
Way as a fals traitour cunne and as a fals forworne
man for chynge the noble Erl Thomas of Lancaster he
Undersong the armes of chivalrie and churgh him he w
as made kynge ¶ Tho myght men seen othe
ers dre we hem in chynge one side and in that othe our kyn
ghtes also and foughten to gedre Undir for & also amdg
othe sir hunsfay & bougton Erl of berford a weryng
ynge of wonne chynge all custen some stode and fanghe
wyl his enemies vpon the brugge and as the noble lord sto
d and fanghe vpon the brugge a chief a Ribaud shulked
Under the brugge And forselv wyl a spere smote the no
le kynge in to the foundement so that his he wyl come

oute then Alas the so: we for ther was slayne the flour of
solace And of comfort and also of curasie

¶ And Sir Roger of Elifert a noble knyght stode in
and foughe and well and nobely hym defende as a w;
orthe boron But at the last he was sore wounded in his he
¶ And Sir William of Sullapand Sir Roger of Ber;
nfeldd were slayne at that battail

¶ When Sir Andriwe of Berkelela saw that Sir Thomas
men Lancaster lassed and slaked anone he and his com;
panie comen to the gentill knyght Sir Thomas of Lanca
ster and sold yeld the traitour yeld the ¶ The gentill Erl
answered tho and said nay wiche traitours he we none e
to go we wyl we neuer be yelde while that our lyfes la;
sten But wher we haue to be slayne in our teneche than
yelde be to go w ¶ And Sir Andriwe apene gad vpon
Sir Thomas compaignie pollyng as a boke wolfe and said
yeld ye we traitours taken yeld ye we and with an high
vois said berke Wat Gites that none of ye wyl be fard yd
pon lyfe and lymme to mysdone Thomas body of Lanca
ster And with that worde the good Erl Thomas went i
to the chancell and said knel yng vpon his knees and tur
ned his visage to warde the crosse and said Almyghty
god to the I me yeld and helpe me in to thy mercy
And with that the vilynes rilaude lope aboute hym in e
very side as traitours and wodecurmen turs and d. spoil
ed him of his armure and clothed him in a Robbe of ray
that was of his squyres lquen and forthlad hym vn to
porke by water Tho myght men see moche so: we and care
for the gentill knyghtas fladden in every side and the Ry
baudes and the vglynes egaly hym discried and gad an
high yeld ye we traitours yeld ye we And When they wi
a y yelde they were robbed and bounde as the wes Al
las the same and despit that the gentill ordre of knyghte

both ehir had at that battelle and the lande the was di-
 thout la we For the church the had no more wuence the
 it had bene a lord the was and in that battelle was the for
 dre agens the sone and the uncle agens his nephew For so
 moche unkindnesse was never seyn before in england as
 was that tyme amonge folk of One nacion For O kyn-
 ge had no more pite of that othir than an hungrie Wolfe
 hath of a shepe and it was no wonder For the grette for-
 tis of Englund were not all of one nacion but were meted
 with othir nacions that is for to seyne somme Britons so-
 me Saxons somme Danes somme Welshes somme fren-
 chmen somme Normans somme Spagnards somme Ro-
 mayns somme Yhenauys somme Flemmynges and of o-
 thir diuise nacions the which nacions accorded not to the li-
 berte of Englund And yf so grette lordes had bene oulges
 wedded to English wyll than shold pres haue bene and be
 the amouges hem without any enyde.

And at that battelle was Sir Rogier Clifford and Sir
 Johan Monbray Sir William tuchet Sir William Fitz
 William and many othir Worthye knyghtes thet were with
 at that battelle And Sir Hugh dandell the naye dore after was
 as taken and put in to prison and shold haue bene dore to
 thet yf he had not sponsered the knyghtes nece that was Er-
 le Gylkharthys suster of Gloucestre And anon after was
 Sir Piers the sonne of Badlesmer taken at the park
 a maner of the bisschopes of Lyncolne that was his nephew
 and many othir barons and knyghtes wherfor was made
 moche sorowe

How Thomas of lancastre was beheaded at Pontefreth and v. barons hanged & drawn there

Capitula Centesima lxxxviii

2832
and no we shall telle you of the noble Erl Thomas
of Lancaster when he was take & brought to port ma
ny of the city were full glad & upon his cryed with high vo
ice & he crieth out ye arne welcome blessed be god for now
shall ye have the reward that longe time ye haue deserved &
cast upon his many shewe lasses & many othe wpoes did
sit but the gentle erl all suffred & said nothir ne othe & i
the same tyme the kyng lord of this same consue & was
full glad & in last come to pouneset & sir hugh the spencer
& sir hugh his sone & sir Johan erl of Arundell & sir Ed
mond of Woodstocke the kynges brother Erl of Kent and
sir apuier of Balauce erl of panbroke & Maister Robere
that tolde a false pilid clerk that was priue & duelled in the
kynges court & all come chider with the kyng & the kyng
entred in to the castell & sir Andreu of Herkela a false cy
mant churgh the kynges comadement tolde with him the ge
ntil erl Thomas to pdesure & ther he was pruned in his
owne castell that he had made that stode apes the ab
bey of kyng Edward & sir hugh the spencer the sader and
his sone cast & thought how & in what mauer the good erl
Thomas of Lancaster shold be de without any Jugemee
of the pryve wherfor it was ordyned thurgh the kynges
Justices that the kyng shold put upon him popntes of
treson & And so it befell that he was ladde to bare bfo
re the kynges Justices bare hys as a thief in a fair hall w
pethyn his own castell that he had made theri many a fair
fest loch to diche & also to pour & these were his justices Sir
hugh spencer the sader aimer of Balauce erl of panbroke sir Ed
mond of Woodstocke erl of Kent sir Johan of Bataigne erl of Ar
thmod & sir Robert of nashmet hys iustis & sir Robert him
accoupled in this maner Thomas at the firste our lord the
kyng & this court excludeth you of all maner Answer
Thomas our lord the kyng put upon you that ye haue

in his lande wien with baner displayed agene his ptes as a
 traitour And with that word the gentyl Erle thomas w
 ith an high vois said nay lordis forsoch and by saint edwas
 I was neuer traitour the iustice said agene the thomas our
 lord & king put vpon po we that ye haue robbed his folk
 and morderd his pple at a chafe

¶ Thomas
 the king also put vpon po we that he discomforted po we &
 your pple with his folk in his owne Reanne wherfor ye
 went and fled to the wode as an outela we And also ye w
 ere taken as an outela we ¶ And Thomas as a traitour
 ye shall be longed by wson but e king hath forsiene po w
 that Ie wes for loue of Quene Isabell and thomas wson
 wolde also that ye sholde be longed But the king hath for
 ye ue po we that Ie wes for cause And loue of your kynage
 But Thomas for as moche as ye wem take fleynge And
 as an outela we the king wyl that your herte shall be smy
 an of as ye haue well deserued anone with him out of pe
 ce and anone byng him to his Iugement ¶ The genyell
 knyght Thomas he had herd all these wordes with an high
 vois he cryed low wepyng and said Alas saint Thomas
 fair fadre Alas shall I be dred thus ¶ Graunte me now be
 blissfull god answer but all a bailed him no chynge for
 the cursed Gascones put him bidder and chidder and on
 hym cryed with an high vois ¶ O King Arthur most
 dredfull well kno wen is now the chynge open & traitre an euill
 wch shall thou die as thou hast well deserued.

¶ The secte they vpon his herte in scorne an ol
 & chapelce all to wne And to tome that was nat w
 oreh an halpene And after they secte hym vpon a leue
 whice palfrey full vñ semelich and alle all late and wi
 ch an olde baidell and ¶ With an hor
 rible noise they dro be him out of the Castell to ward his
 deth And cast vpon hym many balles of snowe

And as the entremettours had hym oute of the Castell
 the said the pitouse wordes And his sonde helde vpon
 high towARDS the Den No the kyng of the Den geue to mer
 cy For the Erchebyschop kyng such to forsake And a fewe priu
 chours went with hym oute of the Castell all that he come
 to the place that he ended his lyfe by to whom he shroffe his
 all his lyfe And the gentill Erle helde the fawre wonder
 fast by the chertres and said fawre fadur abysse With the Tyl
 that I he ded for my flesch qualite for drede of thes And
 sothfor to say the gentill Erle sette him vpon his knies &
 turned hym to ward the Est due a rhaude that was called
 Higone of Mostone for hande vpon the gentill Erle and
 said in despit of him the traitour turned to ward the
 scottis the soule drede to vnderfong and turned hym to wa
 ard the north

The noble Erle thomas answer
 ed the with a myghty doge and sayd how fair wordes I sh
 hall done all your wyll and with the word the fawre w
 ene fro him for weppng and anone a rhaude wence to
 hym and smote of his hede the pi Dal of auerill in the yere
 of grace M ccc xxi Alas that euer such a gentill blode sh
 hall bene done to death withoute cause and usen And trait
 torelly was the kyng commended when he thurgh the fals
 councill of the spencers suffred for the wae his vncles
 sone went put to such a death And so ben he loked ayes all
 maner of rason And godd pittie it was also that such a no
 ble kyng shold bene deceyued And misgouerned thurgh
 councyll of the fals speeres the which he maintained thurgh
 byland agens his honour and the profite For after ward
 the fell godd benegauncen England For murther of the
 forsaide Thomas

When the gentill erle of his life was passed the pour & the
 mōtion of pōfute geten the body of the thomas of the kyng
 and they buried it before the high Altar on the night of the

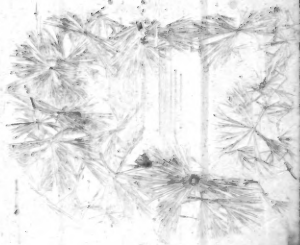
That same day that this gentill had was dē the were
 hanged and draue for the same quarrell at Pontefort. Sir
 William tuchet Sir William Fitz William Sir Waryne
 of yffell sir Henry of Bradborne and sir William cheine
 barons alle and Johan page squire And sone after at p
 orke were draue and hanged sir Roger Clifford Sir Jo
 han of Monbray barons and sir Goffelm Danell knyght
 And at Epsom were draue and hanged sir Henry Of
 Wympington & sir Henry Mounfere barons And at Elnu
 cester were draue and hanged Sir Johan Giffard and sir
 William of Eluebrugge barons and at London were hange
 ged and draue sir Henry tress baron And at Wyndesore sir
 Thomas Coltoppe knyght And at Wyndesore sir Fran
 cis of Waldenham baron and at Caunterbury was draue
 We and hanged sir Bartholmeie of badlesmer And sir
 Bartholmeie of affelbournham barons and at Hereford
 in Wales sir William Flemmyng baron

How kyng Edward went en to Scotland with an
 houndred thousand men of armes and myght not spee
 de
 Ca. C lxxxix

And when kyng Edward of Englund had brughe
 the floure of chivalerie by to his deir churgh couns
 eyll of Sir Hugh Spencer the fadir And sir Hugh the so
 ne he become as wode as any sponne And that so eue the
 spencers wolde haue ye was done And so well the
 kyng Loued hem that they myght done wye h hym All
 chynge that they wolde wherfor the kyng gaf du to Sir
 Hugh Spencer the fadir the Erldome of Winchester & to sir
 andrie we of Hereford the Erldom of carleill in penidice & in
 harming of his crowne and kyng Edward the thurgh coun
 saile of the speer distand al he that had bene speer in a
 ny quarrell wiche was of lanchestre & many othe were dist

ad also for encheson that the spences counted for to have his
landes and so they had all that they wolde & the Wich Bed
ge and againe all reason ¶ Tho made the kyng Robtre
of Glouc a fals piled clerke channceller of Englonde
thurgh counsell of the forsaide spences and he was a fals
villain and a countous and so they counsellid the kyng
moche that the kyng shold take to his owne Ward all the gos
oodes of the londes that wroughfully were put to the Rech
to his owne hande and as well they toke the goodes that
were in holy churche as the goodes that were wicheoure &
let hem be put in to his treasure in London and let hem called
his forsaite; and by hit counsell the kyng wroughthe for
vermore he disseised hem that the goodes o wigham
¶ And thurgh hit counsell he axed a talliage Of all the
goodes of Englonde wherfor he was the ricche kyng that
ever was in Englonde after William Bastard of Normans
die that conquered Englonde

¶ And the thurgh counsell of hem hym sewed that he
had noe I no we Due ma & the every wone of Englonde
fynde a man of armes upon his owne costages for to gone
and were upon the Scottes that were his enemies. Wer
for the kyng went in to Sweland with an hunderd thou
send man of armes at wicheoure in the yere of our lord ihu
sa crist of CCC and viij. But the Scottes went And
hid hem in montains and in bodes and taried the Englis
men fro day to day that the kyng myght for no Maner
thing hem finde i plaine feild. Wherfor many englisshme that
were Picardies had for hunger the deiden wonder fast soch
ly for hunger in goynge & in comynge & namelich the that
had bene a peny Thomas of Lancaster and had wold his mē
upon his landes ¶ Whanne
kyng Ed Ward sawe that the Picardies failed hym he was
the wonder sore discomforted for encheson also that his mē



Edw. 2.

died and for he myght nonghe spere of his enemies so at
the last he came agene in to Englund And anon after co-
me James Douglas and also Thomas mudolph With a
huge host in to Englund in to Northberland & With him
the Englishmen that were driven out of englund and come
& robbed the countre and quelled the pople and also burned
the towne that was called Northerton and many other
townes By to porke ¶ And When the kynge herd this chy-
dynge he let sompne all maner men that myghten crouel
h and so the Englishmen met the Scottes at the abbey of
Heighland the 9 day after Michaelmasse in the same yere
about said and the Englishmen were there discomfyted &
at that somfiteure Was this sir Johan of Bryggnie Es-
le of Richmond that held the countre and Eldome of Ea-
castre And after he paid a huge ransom and Was let
gone and after that he came in to fraunce come neuer af-
terward agene

¶ How sir Andrew of herthela was take and put
vn to the dethe that was erle of cardoille
Capitula Ducentelimo

and at that tyme sir Andrew of herthela that now
Was made Erle of Cardoille for cause that he had in
him the good Erle thomas of Lancaster he had ordeyned
the church the kynges commaundment of Englund for to
bryng hym all the power that he myght

¶ For to helpe hym agene the Scottes at the abbey
of heighland & when the fals traitour had gadred all the p-
ple that he myght & shold have come to the kyng By to the ab-
bey of heighland the fals traitour had he by an other
churchwyll & church the erldome of Lancaster & Wete the
nogh the countre & robbed & quelled folk all that he myght & for

Edward
thens the false traitour had taken a grete some of gold
and siluer of sir James Douglas for to be ayens the kyng
of Englonde & to ben helppynge and holdynge with the Swe
tis churgh. Whos treason the kyng of Englonde was somp
wised at Bergheland it that he come thider wherfor the kyng
was toward him witherward and he pryncely enquired
by the countess aboute so to that he was & so men enquired &
espied so at the last trouth was founde and soughte & he at
last and taken as a false traitour As the noble Erl of Tho
mas of Lancaster him tolde it that he was done by to the
death at his takinge at Duerbrugge and to him said or that ye
was done he shold be take and holde a traitour And so
it was as the holy man said wherfor the kyng sent prync
les to sir Androwe of lurya knyght of the countess of car
wille that he shold take sir Androwe of barkela and put
hym by to the death and to change this chynge by to the
the kyng sent his commissione so that the same Andrie
was taken a Carduill & he by to the law in the man
ner of an Erl worthely armed and with assured gure
a loute him and he fed & spored ¶ Tho spake sir Androwe
in this maner sir Andrie quod he the kyng put byon
the for a smocke as thou hast bene orped I thy dedes he ded by
to the moche honour and made the Erl of Carduill and
thou as traitour by to thy lord the kyng And laddest his pe
ple of this countess that shold have holpe hym at the battell
of Bergheland and thou laddest them a way by the co
rre of Copeland and thurgh the Erldome of Lancaster
wherfor our lord the kyng was somfited ther of the Scot
tis churgh thy treisoun & falsnesse & if thou haddest com be li
mis he had had the maistr & all treisoun thou didest for the grete
for of gold & siluer that the vnderfeg of iacob Douglas a swa
the kynges enemye & our lord the luges Wil if that the orde
of Ruyghes by the which the vnderfeg all thy honour &

Wherupon the body he all brought to uowte & the sta
in vnder the othe knyghts of hys kyn moche after
the hys was the which he had he had the daunced hugely & in
diuerse countres in England & that all moche like euen
ple by the hys lord after ward in wyl for to serve. ¶ The
commaundment a knave astone to be of his spone on
his leg after he he had the wyl of his hys the
hich the kyng him gave to keep and defende his land the
with which made hym Earl of Carduile and after he let
hym Buckle of his furrow Calard & of his hys & of hys
furrow wyl & of his gurdall & when this was done he
the kyng said vnto hym Gude that quod he no be are thou
no knyght but a knave & for the tynson the kyng wyl
that the shal be hougged & drawen & the hys smyten of
the body taken out of the body & burnt before the and
the body quarend & the hys smyten of & sent vnto Lon
don & that it shal stonde vpon London byggs and the in
quarters shal be sent to in. wntes of England that all
other moche be wyl & chastized by the And as on the
said so it was done all maner chynge in the last day of
October in the yere of grace m. ccc. & xxi. And the son
ne the eurned in to blode as the pple is sa. & that dund
fro the morn till it was y. of the clothe of the day

¶ Of the miracles that god wrought for seint Tho
mas lous of lancastre wherfor the kyng let close the
chirche dore of the priorie of paunfret for no man
shold come therein to the body for to offer

Capitulo duodecimo primo

¶ And some after that the good. Erl Thomas of lan
caster was married a prest that longe tyme had be
ne blinde depeued in his slippng that he shold gone in
the hille the the good Erl Thomas of lancaster was
done by the wyl & he shold have his sight agayne and so

he demed in nyghtes seyinge the praye he also bid him to
the same hille. When he come to that place that he was mar-
ced on. And whyle he made ther his prayers & prayed god.
Sene thomas that he must haue hys sight agen & was i
his prayers he had his right hande vpon the same place that
the good man was marced on & a droppe of brye blode and
small sande cladd on his hande & ther with staked his pie
& anon he was myghte of god & of sainte Thomas of lan-
castre he had his sight agen and thanked the almyghty god
& sange Thomas. And when this miracle was knowen a-
monge men the people came thither on euery side & knelled &
made hir prayers at his tombes that is in the priorie of poth-
furn & prayed ther for helpe of soules & of helpe and god
hard hir prayer. Also ther was a yonge child drenched in a
well in the countie of pounsflete & was dede in daies and in
nyghtes & men women and laide the dede child vpon seint
Thomas tombes the holy matre & the child arose ther from &
tho to lyfe as many a mayle saide & also moche peple were
out of straunge & god hath sent him his myghte agene ch-
urche. Verre of that holy matre. And also god hath geue
the to; to carye her goyng and to carye her handes & her
feet & to blynde also her sight & to many sike folke her
to of diuers maladyes for the loue of this good matre. Al-
so ther was a rich may in countie in galwynes such ama-
ladye had that all his right side was & fell a wey from her
the men myghte for his lyeue & also his hert and so he sta-
de the blynde man myghte come npe him wherfor his fre-
de was for his wonder. For he at the last as god wol-
de he was pulled to seint Thomas of landastre that he wolde
paye to almyghty god for that pason & he hit to go to
pounsflete to be the pilgrimage the matre seynt
Thomas was by to him & entruce but all this he to
dye the day he good in a wele & was all sold and his

fluffe Was offered agayn that before Was told & shalle be
 ay for which much the good man his frendes had good
 & sent thomas our now after & this good man come in to
 Englynd & toke with him his wife & come to pounfret
 Un to that holy martin & did his pilgrimage due the good
 man that was his wife & childer all, called saynt his burke &
 When they had done they turned home agayne in to hir wome
 & tolde of the miracle wher so ever they come And also in
 men have be & the other of the most churche helpe of that
 holy mortir thoughte well to hold in curthe When the
 spencers herd that god did such miracles for this holy mar
 tin & they wolde be like in no maner Wyse but said ope
 lyth that it was grette mysse such becom of Esy to be lured
 When sir hugh the spencer the sone saide alle this doynge and
 he be seer his messagier from pounfret that that he duelled to
 the kyng Edward that the was at graue at skipton for
 cause that the kyng shold by do that pilgrimage & as the
 laude the messagier went to ward the kyng for to done his
 message he come by the hulle on the which the good man
 was done to be & in the same place he made his ordure
 When he had don he went to ward the kyng & a swinge flig
 him come & poynt he come to pounfret & shode all his bowis at
 his fether And When sir hugh the spencer herd this tidig
 somedell he was a dyad & thoughte for to bydone the pil
 grimage if he myghte by any maner way & to the kyng
 went & said that they shold be in grette schandur churche on
 to all cristen dome for the bech of thomas of lacastr of that
 he suffred the peple done his pilgrimage at pounfret & so he
 called the kyng that he commaunded to chesse the church dos
 us of pounfret in the which church the holy martin seer the
 was was euaund & thus they did a general fmanuobise
 of holy church so that in yere after myghte no pilgrime
 go to that holy tope for much that the monke say

110

And men come to honour that holy Body of saint thomas the
martyr whiche was of sir hugh spencer the sons & chur-
che wiche was of master Robert of bathe the false pil-
laged churche was the bynges chancel the bynges chancel the
churche stood the false to bathe & the master Wardens over
the bynges good bynges & churche & maundment of the
forsoid sir hugh the spencer bynges churche Well armed kep
the hall the churche the good man saint thomas was done
by to his death so that pilgrims myght come by that way
full well wende he to have the churche myght & his po-
wer & the good bynges of myght the churche the wed for his mar-
tyr saint thomas churche all castendome & the same bynges
the bynges made Robert of bathe the false churche & false
churche prater of sir hugh the spencer the sons churche of
England and in the same bynges was the Castell of Wal-
ford for the bynges the bynges churche the prisoners that were
with the churche the castell for saint thomas quene of Lancaster
before the people of the countie come and to the churche the
the forsoid prisoners whiche sir John of Colyngton the
myght & sir edmond of churche the prisoners & a squere the
was called wiche of bathe were take & sent to the bynges
to possesse & the churche were done to prison and the forsoid
wiche was sent to possesse & the churche was drawe & hoked
& anon after sir Robert moremyr of Wygmore sturme oute
of the towne of London in this mane the forsoid sir wiche
herd the churche the churche & longed at london in the mor-
ne after saint Dunstons day & on the day before he helde
a fairs in the towne of London & the was sir Stephen se-
gunt constable of the towne & many good men with him &
when they shold see the forsoid sir wiche & sent for alle the of-
ficers of the towne & they came & souped with him and when
they shold to the churche of him a fairs the was called sir
peter the was full prater with the forsoid Robert churche

his counceill pafe hem all such drete that the lyste of hem all
 shopen daies & nyghtes & in the mone' yme he scaped a
 way by water that is to say by the tunyng & went over
 the see & helde him in fraunce wherfor the kyng was fow an
 noyde & also put the same ste phyn out of his constabulary

How the quene Isabel went in to france for to tre
 ten of pees hit wene hit lord the kyng of england and
 the kyng of fraunce hit brother

Cap. C. iii

The kyng went also by to london & the burge cou
 ceill of sir hugh the spencer the father of his sone &
 of maister whete but with a fals pilde clerk his chawlar let
 scife also all the quenes bondes in to his owne bond & also
 all the landes that were sir Edw. his sone & was so
 put to hit wages agens all maner uson & that was chur
 gh the falssewse of the spencers And when the kyng of fra
 unce that was quene Isabelles brother herd of this falsse
 nesse he was fow annoied agens the kyng of england & d
 his falsse counceilers wherfor he sente a letter by to kyng edw
 ard Under his seall that he shold come in to fraunce at a
 certayn day for to done his homage & the to be somened hit
 and elles he shold lose all gascopne And so it was ordy
 ned in england churgh the kyng & his counceill that que
 ne Isabel shold wende in to fraunce for to trete of pees bi
 t went hit lord & hit brother And that Oliver pyngha shol
 yde wende in to gascopne & have with hym vii. thousand
 men & moo of armes to bene seneschall & wardyne of gasco
 pne & so it was ordyned that quene Isabel went the o
 ver see & come in to fraunce & with hit went sir symon of
 baluance Erle of penbrok that was the moored lordly
 in penbrok but that was churgh goddes benygance for he
 was one of the iustices that consented to seint thomas dres
 of launceston of woldes neuer after wryte him of that willed
 dede & at that tyme sir Oliver of pyngha went ouer in to

gesworne & did moche harme to the kyng of fraunce & chokes
a gent that kyng Edward had kille & moche more ther to
How kyng Edward sente sir Edward his sone the el
deste in to fraunce

Ca & C iii

the quene Isabell had but a quarter of a yere i fra
unce dwelled sic & Edward hir eldest sone ne aged la
nefor to Wende i to fraunce for to speke with his modre isa
bell the quene & the kyng his fader grunted him with a go
od wyl & said to him So my fast sone in goddis blissing
& myghte therfor to come a yere as hysle as thou myghte
And he Wente over see & come in to fraunce and the kyng of
fraunce his uncle Duderfenge him with moche honour &
said by to him faire sone welcom & for cause that yow
fader come not for to do his homage for the Duchie of gyphe
ne as his aunces was Wente for to do I geue yow that
wedship to holde ic of me in heritage as all maner aunces
was dyen to for yow wherfor he was called duche of gyphe
ne

How the kyng exilled his quene Isabell & Edward
his eldeste sone

Ca & C iii

anne kyng Edward of england hir & take so with
kyng of fraunce had geue the duchie of gyphe by
to sir Edward his sone without consent & wyl of hym
& that his sone had Underfonge the duchie he become Wondre
much & sente to his sone by his brewe to his wife also that
they shold come a yere i to england in all the last That
they myghte see quene Isabell & sir Edward hir sone W
a Wondre som adzed of the kynges manace & of his Wra
the & principally the falsenesse of the spicers both of the
fader & of the son & at his gmad he they wold not come W
herfor kyng Edward was full sore annoyed & he make a tri
at lundy that of quene Isabell & Edward hir eldest sone
Come not in to england that they shold be holden as

the pence he imagined and cast for priuete they let fülle
hauel fette with siluer the some amountid v. thousand
pounde and they sente the hanelis ouer see priuete by an
almy that was called Arnold of spagner that was a bro
wre of london that he shold goe to the duzeptre of fraunce
at that they shold be prouen & speke to the kyng of fraunce
that quene Isabel and hir sone Edward were drue and
exiled ouer of fraunce. And amonge all othre thynges
that they were bounde to the deth as priuete as they myght
but almyghty god wold not so for wlx in this Arnold
was in the bre for he was with wlx selandors that met hy
in the seand wlx him & had him to hir lord Erl of Hen
naud and moche joye was made for that talyng & at the
laste this arnold priuete stalle a way for thys and come to
london and of this talyng & of othre thynges the Erl of
henaude said to the quene Isabel dame makest po w mery
a lene of good charyte: ye be more neker than ye went haue
lent and wlx ye thys v. hanelis full of siluer that were see
to the duzeptre of fraunce for to quene po w & your son
Edward and charyte lene for to wende in to england
and talyth ye wlx po w wlx John of henaude my brot
bet & v. men of armes for many of hem of fraunce in
whom ye haue had good trust had good wlx po w for to se
one wlx at myghty god make po w grace your enemy
is to overcome the quene Isabel lene the church henaude
flaundres for the souerayn & ordeyned wlx euer day for
to wlx in to england a good and so he had in his compa
ny the Erl of Bedfords that was Erl of hns
that was the Edward the first of england
I wlxne lene toward let wlx the roller by the see
wlx let the all the po w men of armes and footmen
loney england

Capitulo ducentesimo vi

The first thing Edward the first did that queen Isabella
 fell & Edward the first some bold come in to england
 With many aliens & With him that were out of the oute
 of england for his whelness he was for adrad to be put a dore
 & Use his kyngdome wherfor he ordeyned to keep his castles
 he in Walys as well as in england With vicars & hys
 appaile and he kept his Riuer & also the fens & wher of
 the porters tollen to keep him and also the fens And at
 the feste of decolacion of seint Johan baptist the citizens
 of London sent to the kyng to porcheise an C men of armes
 And also he commaunded forthermore by his letters ordey-
 ned that every souldier and wapen take of england to en-
 coute as well of me of armes as of men a foot & that they
 shold bene put in xx some & in an C some & commaunded
 that all the me were a wode wher any outlaws or ene be
 to make for to pursue & take the aliens that come to England
 for to benygme him the lande and for to put him out of
 his kyngdome And more out he the ene church his pa-
 trene in every shire & in every markete of England that the
 quene Isabella and Sir Edward his eldest sone & the erle
 of Kent that they were take and saule p. here without any
 maner harme by to be doing and all ocher maner Peple
 that come With him anone sumpt of his lode Without any
 maner mison And Wher he the myght hang he wger
 fred mortimer of Wyngmore shold have an C pound of mo-
 ney for his trauaile and forthermore he ordeyned by his pa-
 trene & commaunded to make a fine Wyngmore for his lode
 the riuer and in the wyngmore for to make his lode of el-
 der that if it so were that the aliens come by to the land
 by nyght that me shold be the lode that the com-
 pte he warned and come and make his lode and in the
 same tyme died Sir Roger mortimer hys Suckyn the
 count of Arden

in omittimus clarit

the first thing Edward the first did that queen Isabella

How the Quene Isabel a sir Edward duke of guyn
heune hir lone come to londe at herewith a how they
diden Capitulo CC vii

The quene Isabel a sir Edward hir sonne duke of
guyenne sir Edward of Woodstoke erle of Here a
sir Johan the eldes brother of here a hir companie dead
not the manace of the king ne of his erailours for they
trust all in goddis grace a come by to him which I souer
fold the xxij day of septembur a in the yere of grace M.
CC. xxv. And the quene a sir Edward hir sonne sent
lettres to the maye a cominalte of London requyring he shal
they shold here helppung in the quarell a cause that they had
begonne that is to seyn to destruye the erailours of the re-
ame But none answer was sene agayne wherfor the que-
ne a sir Edward hir sonne sene an othir patene litten Un-
der hir seals the honour of which litten was folded in chey-
maner Isabel by the grace of god quene of england la-
dy of Yrlad a countesse of pounceps a we Edward the el-
dest sonne of the king of Englad duke of guyenne erle of
cheste of pounceps a of Monstowle to the maye a to all the
cominalte of the cite of London sendech greetung For as
moch as we haue before the tyme sene to go by our lere
two how we be come in to this land with good army a
good maner for the honour and profitt of holychurch and
of our righte sonne lord the king and all the Reame with
all our myght And power to kepe and maynteyn as we a
all the good folke of the foresayd Reame are holden to done
And upon that we pray go we that ye wolde
here helppung to us in as moche as ye may in this quarell
that is for the comune profitt of all the Roiaume and
we haue had by to this tyme none harme of the foresaid lere
and ne lene to our part in that patene wherfor we se-
ke go agayne and pray and charge go to that ye shal go



By the grace of god
Edward the first
king of england
to the maye a cominalte of London

so agens vs that we haue no cause to grune poth but that ye
bene to vs helpyng by all the wayes that ye may or may
knowe for which welc I asygne that we & all the that to
ne come with vs i to e his name ne chynke nat to done if
it lpe god any thing but that shall be for the comune p
fite of all the name but ope to distroyen Hugh spicer our es
nymp & ene mit to all the name as ye well knowe that
for we pray poth & charge poth i the faith that prothe to
our lord the kyng & to be & ope all that ye shall mo we
forset agayne vs that of the said Hugh spicer our enemie
come withynne your power that ye dony his costely to be
ne take & saufly kepe by all we haue ordyned of his our
will & that ye lue i most in no maner wise as ye desire to
honor & profite of vs all & of all the name vnderstondyng
well that if ye done our prater & mydement we shall the
more be bounden vnto poth & also ye shall get poth sur
hipe & profite if ye se & do costely answe of all your
ylls & euil at Caldok the vi. day of October which day
euerly in the daieyng of the ray of seil drupe was tak
ed vnto the ne wecrosse in shipe and many copies of the sa
me lre were callid vpon vnto the & then and vpon o
ther places in the cite that alle men passyng by the Wy
mye seen & vnde And in the same tyme lre Edward
as at London in the court at his meete and a litle after tyme
in to the hall and said that the Quene Isabel was come
to lnd at hembich & hath brought in her companye the Jo
ha of beaund & with him men of armes which number
And with that word Sir Hugh the spicer the said lre
lre and thus to the kyng said my moste but the said lre
kyng of Englod no the mo we make good that for
euerly bene alle our
kyng la & this wordes confortable is & was lre of all
and prais in lre And the kyng had no prais

with that she come in to the hall an other messenger e sayd
 that the quene Isabell was arrived at her wyche the peps
 Wyche in southe folk Sir Hugh the spencer the fader spake to
 the messenger e said alle soch in good faich to the messenger
 my fair friends is she come Wyche a strange wyche for soch
 for to say she is had in hir companye but Wyche hundred in e of
 armes e Wyche the words Sir Hugh the spencer the fader
 cried Wyche a high voice e said Alas alas we bene all be
 traid for ever Wyche so lictell power she had neuer come to
 had she full of this londe were to hit confet And the
 for after the wyche they to the hir rouncell e went to ward
 Walpo for to save the Walsmen a penyquene Isabell e to
 ward the soner for to fighe e so they went in purpose
 uenichon

¶ How maister walter Rappeldon bischopp of exet
 re that was the kynges tresorer was beheaded at lon
 don

¶ In the same yere King Edward was son a
 quene Isabell and to his son Edward Wyche for he sent mai
 stie walter Rappeldon his curser for to be wardynes and
 lier of the citie of london with the marie and so he come to
 the Guildhall of london and axed the keyes of the patre
 of the Citie church Seren and strength of his commissiō
 e Woldeham had the keyes of the citie e the comuners an
 swerd e said that they wolde kepe the citie to the honour of
 King Edward e of Isabell the quene of the duk the kynges
 sonne Richarde any mo the bischopp was so fer anoyed e
 so the othe that they all shold abie it anon as King Edward
 ord was without of the citie e the comuners al anon of the
 citie to the bischopp had hi amides chepe e then they sm
 iten of his head And set his head in his nyght hond

¶ And after they beheaded nyf his sayer
 that helde Wyche the bischopp And one of hem was called

William of Wall: that was the bysschopys nephew that Dr
hir was called Johā of padynge & also they toke a bus
gis of lunds that was called Johā marchall that was his
hugh the spicer as piechadre & lymper of his lund also
& in that same tyme that same bysschop had in lund a fair
toure inma lymg in his chesse by the inner of the temple
that was without temple & his faillid stone To make
ther of an dore wherefor he comānded his mē to gane to the
chirch of fures wernes & they they toke y stone to make ther
with the to wa & moch sand & mortar & of a whar that w
as left & for the dispit that the bysschop had bene by to ho
ly chirch & his n squers ben buried in that sand as
though they had bene holdis & they the r lymper & wites till
that the quene Isabel sent hir letters to the communers &
prayed hē that they wuld suffer & graunt that the bysschop
must be take out of that place & bene buried at yester at
his owne chirch & so he was & his n squers ben buried
at seint edmēds chirch without cept for & it was no wōds
though that bysschop died an such bet for he was a wery
tous mā & had with him no mercy & cruel crucillid the
kynge ¶ And sone after was arnold of spayne wōld that
was assentent to have had the 5 M. pounde of siluer & 5
hundred ferreters by to the douzpers of fmaner for to hel
pe & hast the quene isabel to hir dech & ed ward his son als
so & this arnold was put by to bech without the aid of
london

¶ How kynge edward & sir hugh spicer & the erle of a
rundel were taken

By 62 kynge edward had sēe master Wolt spicer
his tressour & to lōdd for to keep the aid on to hē agē
that quē Isabel his wife & agene edward his son anone
him self toke with him sir hugh spicer the son & sir Jos

Sir Eke of arundell & master Robert bat' d'ok his chauncer
 he a false pil'd priste & toke his way to Ward hystowe and
 after the kyng abode a litell tyme & made sir Hugh the spen-
 cer the sadre as constable & keeper of the Castell And the
 kyng and the other spencer went in to the ship & saillede
 to Ward Walys & toke no lue of chesward ne of none in
 the kynges housold And our in to Walys for to avay the
 Walysmen agene Dame Isobel the quene & the duke hys
 sone & the Erle of Kent & sir Johan of Lancastre & they were
 & pursued after him & his power cursed every day so that
 last the kyng was taken vpon an hille in Walys & sir Hugh
 the spencer the sone in the other side of the same hille &
 the false pil'd clerk the Maister Robert bat' d'ok the fast besy
 doctour and then brought agene in to Englonde as almy-
 ghty god wold & the kyng him selfe was in sauf keeping
 in the Castell of Kenilworth and hym lipe sir Henry that
 was Dene Thomas brother of Lancastre And sir Hugh s-
 pencer the sadre came and put hym in the quenes grace and
 Sir Edward his sone duke of Guyenne But Sir Hugh
 the spencer after the tyme that he was taken hold the no ma-
 ner mete necht drinke no maner drinke for he wylt to haue
 no mercy sauf only to be dede And the quene & his connesil
 he also had ordeyned that he shold haue bene to be dede at Lon-
 don But he was so feble for his moche fastyng that he was
 dede almost And therfore he was ordeyned that he shold ha-
 ve his Jagerment at seint and at a place of the toun hys
 wood was take from his lord and also from Robert of bat-
 d'ok the was a pil'd clerk and false and the kynges cha-
 unciler & me see vpon his hys chapelers of sharpnetheles
 & two shires be the hys was in Wythgum bugles for his vry-
 ch in p'son the me mye has the be big out Wythfor
 his mocha a mile & on fymd of wdig the ligen marchall
 bise he has his p'me vpon a fym twised I wille the thesp

holden he was for ever more And upon the morrow
 as Sir Hugh Spencer the son was taken to the king & was
 drawn and hanged by the neck of his body & his arms
 were sent to the town of England & his head sent to
 London by the king And this sumond for the king that he despi
 sed quene Isabella he was drawn & hanged in a stage made
 amptre the said Sir Hugh's gallows And the sonnday a
 littell fro then was Sir John of Arundell hanged for he
 as of Sir Hugh Spencers counsellors And anon after was
 Sir Hugh Spencer the said drawe hanged and his head
 drawn & after hanged a pene by the arms with his tron
 gers and the tyn day after he was hanged all to pene and
 hounden him & for the mchison that the king had per
 uen him the Erldome of Wynchestr his head was his chid
 der and put upon a pene & the said Erldome was sent to
 London & the king was in prison amonges other for he did
 hym no more truceance than they wold done by to an fol
 de and so did the traitours of England blisshed by al
 myghty god And it was no wonder for the church wun
 and the good Erle Thomas of Lancaster was done by to death
 And all that helden with Thomas of Lancaster church the
 traitours were done and all his heires distressed

How kyng Edward was put a doun & his dignite
 becommine. *Capitula duodecim de rebus*

And anon after as this was done the Quene Isabella
 and Edward her son And all the great lords
 of England at one assene sent to kyng Edward to the
 Castell of Lincolne with the charge he was in keeping Dore
 the Ward of Sir John Bachyn that was the bish
 op of Ely And Sir John of Wret a Baron for En
 gland that he hold orde his place at a certain place
 glond for to trausse and the place of the same & the

Edward hem answered & said lordes qd he geft full wel
to be it ish hauch for my self I geve go to all myne po
wer to ordeyne a parliame. Wher eke ge Byll and they toke
hir lene of hym and com e apene to the barons of Englonde &
Whe they had the knynges patene of the chynge they shold
it to the lordes And eke was ordeyned eke the parliament
shold bene at Westmynster at the Bous of seint hylane and
all the guth lordes of Englonde shold be ordeyne for hem eke apes
eke eyme eke the parliame shold bene And at which day
that parliame was the knyng wold not come ther for no ma
ner thing as he had seke him self & assigned and notken
the barons see to him o eyme o ehir And he swore by god
his soule eke he wold come eke o foor wherforie was or
deyned by all the guth lordes of Englonde eke he shold no
langer bene knyng but bene disposed & said eke they wold
croune knyng Edward his sone the elder eke he was duke
of Guyenne & sent so ekyng by to the knyng eke eke
he was in ward under Sir Johan Earl of garunne and
Sir Johan of Bochen eke was bisshop of Ely and sir
Henry Percy a baron and Sir William Trussell a knyght
eke he was with the Earl Sir thomas of Lancaster for to
peld by his homages by to him for all eken of Englonde
And sir William trussell said this wordes
¶ Sir Edward for nicholay eke ge haue craved your pe
ple of Englonde and haue vndoun many guth lordes of
Englonde without any cause but no be ge ben wickfild
chaunked be god ¶ And al
so for nicholay eke ge wold not com to eke parliame as ge or
dined at Westmynster as I your owh lattu parer is named
for to crite with your lize me as a knyng shold & eke for
thugh all the comune assent of all the lordes of englonde I
wille by to go be eke wordes ge shull vnderstod sir eke
eke ge of englonde at on affere wil eke ge be no moe knyng

of Englund but vntill he was put to be out of your mal-
te for euer more & the bisshop of the said the to the king he
Edward him I gette by seuing homage for all the Er-
chebisshoppes & bisshoppes of Englod & for all the clergie
The said Sir Johan Erle of gouerneur Sir Edward I get-
te by seuing by to go be seuing & homage for me & for all the
Erles of Englund & Sir Henry Percy past by also the
his homage for him & for all the Barons of Englund

And also said Sir William Russell I gette by now by
to go be sir myne homage for me & also for all the knyghts
tes of Englund & for all the churche holden by seruente
by any otheir maner thing of go be so that in this day
after war I ge shull not be claymed king nothe for king
be hold but from this tyme after ward ge shull be hold for
a singuler ma of all the peple & so the king thence by
to London the the the lordes of englund him also ge sit
Edward abode in prisoning good byng & the was the day
of Conuersion of some paul in the xx. yere of his reigne
The prophetic of merlyn declared of king Edward the
sone of king Edward

Of this king Edward prophetic merlyn said that
the shold come a goot out of cam the shold haue the
nes of siluer & be as white as snow & a dove shold co-
me out of his nose & his the shold be to the muche hunger
hunger & death of the peple & the losse of his land & the
the beggynnyng of his reigne shold be haunted with a dragon
by said soth all as the tyme for king Edward that was
king Edwardes sone was borne at barnet in Wales
for soth he had hornes of siluer & be as white as snow
was made prince of Wales to muche payson to riot
& folie And soth said merlyn in his prophetic that the
shold come out of his nose a dove for in his tyme was great
hunger amonge the poor peple & stronge death amonge the

11. August of Edward 1.

rich the with in swage land with moche for the & in tra
w in sweland and after ward he lost sweland & Gascoys
guy & Whiles the hym selfe was kyng thet was moche la
che hauntyd And also Merlyn told & said thet this go
de shold seche the flour of lye & of tre & he said soche for
he spoused Isabella the kynges daughter of France And i
his tyme Merlyn said thet thet shold be made brugges of
folke & gon diche of the se & thet was well seyne at lams
noskeborne in sweland whan he was discorde thet Of
the Swetes Merlyn told also thet stones shold fall fro
castelles & many townes shold be made playn And he said
soche for whan kyng Edward was discorde in sweland
& come also southe ward thet seche he seged the castelles & dir
ten moche harme & bound townes by to thetard erre And
after ward Merlyn toid thet an Eagle shold come out of
wornes walle thet shold haue feathers of gold thet of shold
pauze haue no pain & he shold dispise lordes of blood & after
he shold die theturch a lye at Gauerfise and thet prophete
was full well knoyn & found soche For by the Eagle
is vnderstond Sir piere of Banastone thet thet was Er
le of Corne walle thet was a wonder proud men thet dis
pised the baronage of Englund but after ward he was kille
d at gauerfise by theturch thet of l'castell & theturch thet thet
of Worm walle And Merlyn told thet in his tyme ye
shold seme thet thet shold be brent and thet battail is
told & by an arme of the seyn a felde armed like a shild
be brent shold be mang whith he be And he said soche for
by thet burning of theturch is theturch gude dore theturch
enirgung of theturch theturch theturch in a felde as I
told by an arme of the seyn is theturch theturch of mi
ture for theturch theturch in maner of a shild & maner
of a Englund theturch by theturch theturch of religion & justice
and secular theturch theturch theturch theturch in &
R 1

spite of Englyssmen the White battelle ¶ And after that
lyn said that the forsaide ben shold be done the goode moche harme
me that shold be upon the south West also upon his shir
de & said also that the goode shold be the moche dede of his land
till the tyme that shamesholde him overcome & than he s
holde chiche hym with a Lyons shynne & shold be synne a
pene that he had lost a moche more church pple that shold
come out of the north West that shold be made hym bene dund
and him a vienge of his enemyes church council of y-oz
Wales that first shold be in prail to be ben done ¶ And
that if o Wales shold be over the sea in to a strange land
& that they shold dwell till a certeyn tyme & after that s
holde come in to Englund agene ¶ And the ho Wales shol
de do moche harme by to many one & that they shold be coun
cille the goode for to me the West agene the forsaide ben and
that the goode & the o Wales shold come by to an arme of
the see at Barton by tyme & shold be over and that
for dard & be shold be the with a Swan in his companye by
to burg to ward the north church an dnynde ouer seer
& that the Swan than shold be slayne with sorwe and the
ben shold be ben agene full nygh his o bene neth that shold be
de upon Donnfrate upon whom the sonne shall be de his
benes and many folke hym shall seeke for the moche vir
tue and he said full soche for the good Erl Thomas of Lan
caster was borne in the North West and was to the kyng &
lone of his Duch ¶ And by law he made the kyng the mo
the land the which he had purchased bytfully till at the
last the kyng ther of to the same & him self spiled with cru
elty And after he gat agene that he had lost a moche more
church folke that he be assemble out of the north West that
made hym to bene admyd and a venged hym of his barons
church council of Sir Hugh the spencer the fader and
of Sir Hugh the sonne that & forne ben out a lawes of englond

for his brother-in-law. And after that came apyne in to
England for hys service the said Duke of Gloucestre & so mo
the warrer the King that he shold be with Thomas
of Lancaster. And that the King and the prelates and the
of council & the people met with Thomas of Lancaster
at Burton. And then they were discomfited & Sir hu
frye of Wyke was in his company and after that
by the lord Thomas & Humphrey with his company at Bu
tunge. And the King of France that is called the Un
derpunter. And also for the King of France & the
of the King & met with Thomas of Lancaster with a
huge company & they were discomfited & the King of
France was slain. And the King of France was
slain & the King of France was slain. And the King of
France was slain. And the King of France was slain.

Edw 2. 133

the fustie and persecution vnto quene Isabell thurgh his
procurement so hit had the kyng. ¶ So they ordeyned amonges themselves that the said que. sh.
to hit wages that is to say. shillings in the day wherfor
the kyng of france hit brother was bound for an anoy
rd and sent into England by his letters vnto kyng Edward
that he shold come to his parlement to pay in france
but kyng Edward was so adrad to come thither for he wold
to have deuynted till that he had made amends for the
trespace that sir Hugh spencer the father and the sone had do
ne and for the harme that they had done to quene Isabell
his suster. ¶ Wherfor thurgh hit ordinaunce and consente of
the spencers the quene Isabell went ouer se in to france
so for to make accord hit went kyng Edward & the kyng
of france hit brother and thus dwelled the in france till
Edward hit eldest sone come hit to seeke & so they dwelled
ther both till that alliance was made betwene of thez and
the gentylle of benaude that of they rich be hit poynge
distroie and ouer come the Emperour and the falshe use of the
spencers that sir Edward shold spouse pamephilip the
wyrshipfull lady & the eldest daughter of benaude wherfor
the quene Isabell & sir Edward hit sone and sir edmond
of Woodstok the kynges brother of England and sir Jos
bay of benaude & sir Roger mortimer of Wyngmore and
sir Thomas Roelgh and sir John of Cornwall and sir
William Trussell & many other of the alliance of the gent
till Sir Thomas of Lancaster that was exiled out of En
gland for his quarrell & was disherid of his lands ordeyn
ed he a grete power and armed at his wyche in south
¶ And sone after they purfeyned the spencers till that they
were take & put vnto spindale wher as they were in said and
hit companies also for the grete falshe use that they did
the kyng Edward & to his poynge and also more

Edw 3. 4. 113
the the god sholde be put in to such disese & in great angust
sh & in gait for the sholde be in his lyfe and the said for the
for after the tyme the kyng Edward was takn he was put
in to ward all that the spaciety was put by to the deche
And also for the sholde the hold not come by to his of
the parliament at which he had ordeyned & assigned his
selfe and to his baronage & also wolde not gouerne and
rule his people as he wold as a kyng sholde done ¶ Som
me of the barons of England wemen & yeld by his for
mages by to him for him for all the othe of the Reame in
the day of Conversion of saint paul & in the yere of his re
gny and they put him out of his wale for evermore &
ruerke by ded his lyfe after ward in moche for we & aginst
¶ Of kyng Edward the thirde after the conquest
Capitulo Cxi

¶ And after this kyng Edward of carnarua wnyed
his Edward of Wyndesore his son the which was
crowned kyng & anointed at Westmestur church consent
& Will of all the good lordes of the lande the sonday in can
del masse aue in the yere of grace mccc lxxviii that W
as of age at that tyme but y. y. yere & for the sholde the his
fader was in ward in the castell of Rims Worth & the was
put done of his Royalte the name of England was as w
ithoute kyng for the fete of saint bartholme in the yere above
said by to the fete of candelmass & the. Went all maner p
of the kynges bench assent And the was commaunded
to all the shires of england thurgh writ to warne the par
ties to stand aune thurgh sompnyng assent and also for
evermore that all psones that were in the unges gylt
as that were arrested thurgh shurles sholde be. gone
quyly The kyng Edward after his coronacion as the p
per & desching of his age of the Reame granted him a
charter of freidom pte to all them that wold it age and the
at in

Johan of Hamaun & his company took his part of the king &
of the ladies of the name & engaged him to give him certain
eyres & each of them had full rich gifts & much money he
was of value & of estate And also was with him in peace
in west & gave him the same the king his lands and com-
mune & englisshmen said amides him that the king was
deceitful but the cause of the king his father & the cause of
the prince's both of the father & of the son and the cause of
the earl of Arundell & of master Robert Galtre that
was the king's chamberlain was departed after the queen I
saw the ordinance & sir Roger Mortimer of Wyngmore so
that the king had no thing to do but as his will & his
chancery no more of his lord's affairs as after word ye shall hear

¶ How king Edward went to Stanthope to meet
the scottes Capitula ducentesimo xiii

a And yet in the same time was king Edward in the
castle of Lich Worch under the king of sir Leger had
was earl Thomas brother of Lancaster that was earl of
Lancaster & the king granted him the richdom of Lancaster
that the king his father had seized in to his hand & put out
Thomas of Lancaster his brother & so was he earl of Lanca-
ster & of Lich Worch & the king's ward of england as his brother
was in his time but sir Edward that was king Edward
his father made for the without end for cause that he myght
not speke with his wife nor with his son wherefor he was
in moche mischief for though it were so that he was lad &
ruled by false counsell yet he was king Edward's son
called Edward Richling shankes & come of the worthiest blo-
de of the world & child to which he was bound to give gifts
presents & large were most ymportant with the king his father for
he & they were his enemies both by night & by day per-
sued for to make death & contrail between him and his son
and Isabella his wife but the fere pachers to him was

good friends were more & cast & ordeyned her by nyght &
day so that they myght bring him out of prison & amonge his
companie that the fawse had priuely brouzde that was a fawse
that was called dauiden & he had ordeyned & gadred a grete
companye of folk to helpe at that nede but the fawse was
take & put in the castell of pounfute & there he dyde in pris-
on And sir Henry erle of Lancaster that had the kynges fa-
uour in keepynge church commaundment of the kyng & liued
Edward the kynges father by ententure by to sir thomas
of lewys & so sir Johan mautwylers and they had hym
from the castell of lewys worch by to the castell of lewys
ple & kepte hym there safely And as iustyn nyght after his
consecration the kyng ordeyned an hnge hoste for to fight ag-
ainst the scoottes & sir Johan the erle brother of henaude fow-
lebonde the fawse for to helpe kyng Edward & brought
with hym vij thousand men of armes and arriued at
war & they had done for to yone fawse & all that they come to
war the that the kyng abode hym And the scoottes come thi-
er to the kyng for to make pite and accord but the arwe-
ment his deue hem last but a littell tyme & at that tyme the
Englissmen were clothed all in cotte & hodes peynted with
lilies and with flours full semely with longe berdes & the
for the scoottes made a bill that was fastened vpon the ch-
urch tower of seint peters to ward seangate and thus said the
scripture in spirit of Englissmen.

¶ Longe berde herthyles peynted hood wytlees gay
rote graces makes england chritheles

¶ The thirde day nyght after began the contalle & the
city of yorke his deue the Englissmen & the henaudi-
res And in that tyme was quelled of the Erldome of ni-
tholl and morris lynn & after they were buried vnder a
stone in seint Clementes church in the iij ffeygat And for
much for that the henauers come to helpe the kyng he was

Was eried in paigne of lye & hymne in that oche half is
Was sold by an Enquest of a facit that the Engliffmen
begonne the date

How the engliffmen kept the scottes in the park
of stanhope & how they turned nyche in to scoeland

Ca Cxxiii
And as that the scottes had asssembled all hir poir & co
men in to englonde and quelled all that they
myght take & also brennen & sturied all the north wete
churgh out till that they come to the park of stanhope in
wdale & there the scottes held hem in a buschme. But when
the king had herd churgh wotyn as pios when the scot
as when anon wght with his hoste beseged him with they
for said parles so that the scottes with herte. What to gone ou
to but only in to his harmes & to pa by day in the park &
dares & vicars him failled in every a fide so that they wa
re greatly empowred of his bodies And such that haue come fi
rst in to Gaingne in to this tyme was neuer syne so
fain an hoste what of Engliffmen & of aliens & of men of
foe the which ordyned him for to fight with the scottes
churgh eggyng of sir Henry Erle of Lancaster and of sir
Johan Senaude that wolde haue gone ouer the water of
ishe for to haue foughe with the scottes but sir moier mo
tmer consented nas that for he had pryncely take mede of
the scottes him for to helpe that they myght wende opene in
to his owne dore & the same moiermer counseilled so moche
thomas of Brocher tone the erle marchall that was byng
Edward's uncle that the for said thomas shold nat aff. ble
at that tyme in to the scottes & he offered but he wist not
the doynng his wene so that the for said moiermer & his en
chelon that he was marchall of Englonde & to him parly
ned over the Doune Ward he sent hastily to charles of laca
sing to sir Josa of Senaude that they shold not fight by

by the scotles in paimbis & haering of hys & his frend
 they did that they shold fford to hir owne pail & the forsa
 id erle marchall was all armed with his baner & the w
 dows of the erle of Lancastres for to fight with hys & w
 ich his folke of hys owne bed for to fight with the scotles
 in this maner he was beguiled & lost no thing of his ge
 se & thus was the kyng principally deceived & wher
 was myghte marshall the had which for to kepe of the ho
 ster that myghte shew the wach that no edgynge must be
 done & in the myght while the scotles stode by myght to ward
 hir owne countre as fast as they myght & for was the kyng
 falsly betrayed that wach that all the countour of the land
 had he brought to an ende as he was said before no where
 he had so to countour shew the kyng Edward was deceived
 to be meruoulsly & boldely the scotles did of werm for Jar
 mes Douglas with C. men of armes ride thurgh oute the
 hoste of kyng Edward the same myght the scotles were sca
 ped to ward hir owne countre so a lous said that they
 come to the kynges pail & quelled them many me in hir
 bedds and cryed some Na Ward Na Ward and an other si
 me Douglas a Douglas wherfor the kyng that was in
 his pailly and moche of his folke were wonder sore affrai
 ed but blissed be almyghty god the kyng was not ca
 lien & in that pail was to the Krame of Englonde And
 that myght the more shone full clere and bryght & for all
 the kynges men the scotles asaped harmles And in the
 mor we than the kyng best that the scotles were asaped
 in to hir countre he was wonder sore & full hertely wept
 with his eyes pite & pit. With he not who hir had don that
 tuff but that fals traitor was full. And y knowe a good wh
 his affe as the ston full chere the kyng Edward with a ge efeto
 pore for be full & his life & pite & cury ma be in to hys
 owne countre bych fullfylling chere and mornyng seblant &

In yere of kyng Edward
 the first in the month of June
 the kyng was taken by the
 scotles at the battle of
 Halidon Hill.

無名氏

Of the Deeth of kyng Edward of carnarua catt. p. v
a. No no we go we apene to sir Edward of carnarua
uay that was kyng some tyme of england & was put
a while of his dignite. Alas for his tribulacion & for the
him befell thurgh fals counsell that he lured & truste vpon
to mocke that after ward was defamed thurgh his faller
nesse as god wolde. And this Edward of carnarua was
as in the castell of berkeley vnder the keeping of sir morge
of berkeley & sir Johan of Mauntmore and to hym he made
his compleyne of his sorow and of his disese and after a
mye he asked of his verdegyn what he had compassed a
mye dame Isabel his wyfe and sir Edward his son that
was made in the kynge that they wolde noughte. After
his the answered one of his wardins my. Wetherbed dis
puse yow not that I shall tell yow the schyd is for it is to
be to vnderstande that if my lady yowr wyf with any chyl
mye yowr that ye wolde sir Edward & quene & also that
ye wolde to myghten your son that same the answered to

[illegible]

And after that masse the next mornynge the Johan of
 Gaunt brought with hym Philip his brother daughter
 at that was erl of Henaw his nece in to England & King
 Edward spoused hir at yorke with moche honour and the
 Johan of Borthum bisshop of Ely & the William of Mel
 ton Erles bisshop of yorke songen the masse that sonday
 the eve of conversion of seint paul. In the yere of grace 1327
 CCC. xlii. But for encheison that the King was but yong
 and tender of age which he was crowned full many wrong
 ges were done while that his father lived for encheison that
 he eroded the countreys that were sale about hym the whiche
 encheised him to done othe by the King upon which whiche
 he was to do by to the name & to the King & all men
 directed it the King was and it was not so almyghty god
 wote whiche it was ordained at the King's crowning that
 the King for his tender age shold be governed by his guarde
 tes of England by which which no thing shold be done
 that is for to say the Erles bisshop of Canturbury
 the Erles bisshop of yorke the bisshop of Wynchestr
 and the bisshop of Hereford the Erle of Hereford the Er
 le of March and the Erle of Kent that were the King's un
 cles and the Erle of Gloucestre Sir Thomas Bate Sir
 Henry of Percy Sir Oliver Wyngton and Johan of ro
 odarons. All these were sworn to do for to ad
 vance the King. And they shold answer every yere in
 the parliament of that that shold be done in the name of
 that governaunte but that ordonnance was soon undone
 & that was moche lesse harm to all England for the King
 & all the lordes that shold govern him but gained & ruled
 as the lordes moche daren in that & by the roger mortimer
 & as they wold all this was done by the King's high & low
 they wold by to be Castles were taken & taken in great
 harm & lesse to the crowning of the King's state out of men's

How the pees was made betwene the englishmen & the scottes and also of making of tropleballone Capitulis Incentesimo pmi

The kyng Edward at Wyfonteyn & the second year of his wgn churgh councill of his moder and of the Roger Mortimer ordeyned a parlement at northampton at the which parlement the kyng churgh hit councill and yowr othe of the land Wycheynage graunted to be accorded With the Scotis in this maner that all the feautes & homages that the Scotis shold do by to the crowne of England forpasse him by to the scottes for ever more by his charter in wch And furthermore an endurment was made Of the scottes by to kyng Edward that was kyng Henry the firste which endurment they called it ingeman in the which they contyned all the homages and feautes fyrst of the kyng of scotland and of all the prynces Erles and Barons of the Realme of the Scotland With hit seals set the kyng and othe chartres & remembrances that kyng Edward & his barons had of hit right in the name of scotland it was forpasse him agens holychurch And also With the shille croffe of scotland the which the good kyng Edward conquered in scotland & brought it oute of the Alze of swyn that is a full precious Relique And also furthermore he willed and forpasse all the landes that the Barons of England had in Scotland by olde custom And this was for to helpe and last the scottes Wards with by to the kyng an xx thousand pounde of silver to be paid Withyn in yere that is to seyn every xx thousand pounde by a yere forthermore aboute all this they made hit with the gude lorde said that dauid duntyn here that was with the kyng is fone the fals hear & traitour & fals lord Douglas here that came agens his liege lord the noble kyng Edward & falsly made him kyng of scotland that

John p m

Was of age of 5 yea And so through this cursete wound
 with David spoused at Benthlye dame Joha of the toue
 that was kyng Edwardes suster as the gaff a lychapd ma
 ey Magdalene day In the yea of graue M.C.C.C. and
 yv vij to grette harme e empying to all the kynges bld w
 hit of that gentill lady com As the epme for Boud r
 moche Was that faw danusell dysparged fies that she was
 married agens all the comune assente of Englonde and fro
 the epme that Brute had edquered alibon e nemphed the
 lond after his othe name Brutigne that now is called
 Englonde after the name of engist

And so was the name of Sweland holten of the name
 of Englonde e of the crown by fraude and by homage

For Brute conquered that lond and yafe it to albanet
 his sewnd sone and he called the lande Albayne after his o
 the name go the the first that comen after him helde of
 Brute and of his hitte the kynges of Britayne by frau
 te e homage and from that tyme by to this kyng Edward
 the threame of Sweland was holten of the threame of
 Englonde by fraude and service a lounsaunt as the crow
 elde of Englonde and of Sweland bray threassement p
 narkly And accusid to the tyme that this parliament was
 ordeyned at Northampton for that through false counsell
 the kyng was thus falsly disturbd e yich was the hys
 age And yit when kyng Edward was yare a wile of the
 Royalte of Englonde yit men put hym out of the
 autis e services of the name of Sweland e of the franchise
 fies disturbd hym for ever more

And Northloche grette Brute of Englonde then
 agens to conferme the yit and the curtes aboute sayd faw
 only quene Isabell that was the kynges more rethard e
 the bisshop of ely e lord mounthe baron e the wote
 for that shal pynghet to make hit wile to wite that

28433
commune assent of England.

Of the debate that was betwene Quene isabell & Sir henry erle of lancastre and of leycestre & of the ryng of bedford Capitula ducentesima viii

¶ When the forsaide dauid had spoused Dame Johane of the tour in the toun of New Wyke as before is said & for as much in despite of the Englyssmen called dame Joha the countesse make pers for the towardysse men that was ordeined but the kynges person had the Wyke and blame wiche wange of the making of the accord and all was done that the quene and Rogier mortimer And it was not longe after that the Quene Isabell ne toke in to hir owne hande alle the lordship of pounsaite almost all the landes that were of value that apparteyned to the crowne of england so that the kyng had not for to dispende but of his owne & of his eschequer For the quene Isabell & Mortimer had a great mygne of hir retinauce that folowed ever more the kynges counsaile & wente and toke the kynges praiser for hir paye & for as much as good shipp wherfor the countre that they comen ynn was full for adraue and almoste destroyed Tho begone the comynallte of England for to late Isabell the quene that so much loved hir whan she come agene for to pursue the fals traitours the spynners for fraunce And that same tyme the fals traitour Robert of beland that betrayed his lord sir thomas of lancastre was also deliuered out of prison & was wonder prync with the quene Isabell & also wyth Rogier the mortimer but that auailed him but litell for he was take at myddelmasse that he come next se wyng after as he rode to ward the quene isabell to lound & sir thomas to tetter smoth of his lord liff the toun of seint Albones & this sir thomas duellay the wyche sir henry erle of lancastre &

Edw. 3.
he put him i hodyng for Dred of the Quene. For he had
him wonder moche and pruned by to the kyng for his that
the same Thomas must be exiled out of Englonde & the
hoble Erle Sir Harry Lancaster had of a tyntured ches-
mune clamour of the englyssmen of the dysseise that was do-
ne in Englonde & also for diverse wronge that were done
amonge the comune peple of the which the kyng bare the
blame with wronge for he had but full poyge and tyn-
dysage And thought as a good man for to wote a way and
make the solauder of the kynges personys that he myghte
in any many maner save by as the kyng was ther of no
dyspyng gylet therfor he was in prail of liff and bynne
And so he assembled all his adherentes and went and se-
ized by to them of the kynges honoure and also for to am-
mend his estate And Sir Thomas Becketon Erle mar-
shall and Sir Edmond of Bodestonschere were the kynges
good frendes And also men of his wyng made hit oche byr for
to maynteyn in that same quarrell And hit cause was this
that the kyng shold hold his houshold and his wyng as
a kyng oughte for to done and have also his hall and chace
the Quene Isabell shold dwelle out of hir honer in to the
kynges honer all maner lordshippes under tenures and es-
silles that appartene to the crowne of Englonde as othe
quenes had done before hit and made with none othe thi-
ng And also that Sir Rogier Mortimer shold dwelle by-
pon his owne landes for the which London he had help de-
shew moche peple so that comune peple were not suffred
thurgh hit wronge full meryng And also the enque-
red and by whom the kyng was betrayed And fully dis-
cused at Stanhoppe and thurgh whos counsell that the fol-
lowing was a way by myghte from the kyng And also to the
churgh whos counsell the ordynance that was made at
the kynges coronacion was put a wunt that is to say

that the kyng for amercement & helppunge of the same &
in honoure of his sheldis he governed & ruled by y^e the ge
all and bested hede of all the same & without hym shol
& no thyng he granted ne done ne said for the which
wherewith malicously hem put a toun fro the kyng.
Wherfor many harmes shames & reproches haue falle by to
the kyng and his name & that is vnderstonde for as moche
as Edward sum tyme kyng of Englonde was ordeyned
by the assent of the comynall in p^{re}sent parliament for to be
vnder the ward & governance of Henry Erle of Lancaster
his wyf for sauacion of his body he was take out of the
castell of Kenilworth the day he was in ward & thurgh
wher of Quene Isabella & of the mortimer without cons
sent of any parliament they took & had hym then thacheuer
after none of his kyngdome mighte with hym spelle ne sei ad
after traitourously take and hym mordered for whos deche
foul schandour ays & thurgh oute all custenome when ye
was done And also the tounes that for Edward of cars
naman had life in many places in Englonde & in Wallys
were wasted & lawe away without the wille of kyng edw
ard his sone in destructions of him & of all his folk Also
thurgh whos counsaill that the kyng yafe by the kyngdome
me of Gouland for the which name the kynges auncestres
had full soueraynety & so did many a noble man for
the righte and was deliuered by to Dauid that was wote
the breus for all the righte that no righte had to the same as all
the world it wote And also by whom the charters & reme
mbrances that they had of the righte of scotland were taken
he of the tounes and taken by to the scoottes the kynges ad
hermits to dishonouring of him & of his successours and to
gild harme by to his heges and gild reproche by to all
Englisshe men for curtesie Also wherfor dame Johan of
the toun the kynges sister Edward was dysparaged & may

And so to David that was Robert's son. And so the
as a traitour and enemy to the king and the church
the council. The was taken in the city of London
England. And in the next time the king good
Henry of Lancaster and his company taken council to the
the people about said myght benamended by the
ship of the king and to his profit, and to the profit also of
his lieges. The queen Isabel church compelling a fourth
also of the moremunt he ordyne a parliament at Salisbury
And at same parliament the moremunt was made. And of
the march agents all the king's. The of England in prin-
dice of the king and of his council. The Johannes of Eleazar
the king's brother was given with a sword of coine said
also was called. The of coine said and over more queen
Isabel so much procured agents her son the king that she
had the ward of the for said the Edward and of his lands
And at that parliament the rule of Lancaster would not come
but ordyned all his power agents the queen Isabel and the
Moremunt and men of London ordyned him with 5000
of armies. The when queen Isabel left of this doing she
was by god and by his names full angels that in every
me he thought upon the people. The the king the queen
Isabel and the moremunt after her manner. And of the king
the revenue for that they had ordyned Amonge him and
huge loss. The And they were notified the king so that upon
a myght they ridden againe to Wardesford there that
the Earl of Lancaster was with his own party and thought
to have him destroyed and that myght he would. Besides the
king his son as a knight armed for the defence of the. And
he was done the king to understand that the Earl of
Lancaster and his company would have done to the
king. And his council for the more. The king
was so much to Warden his son and cannot do the

Edmarchall and the earl of Arundel the king's brother
of this rynging chyn and so in message he went heryn
that the kyng granted him his pte to Erle Henry of La
castre for a wyght tynne for xiij. shunde but that w
as never paid after ward. And thei went the lord
that he had with Erle Henry of Lancaster and Henry Staun
tonne the son of sir Henry sir Thomas welsh sir Will
iam trussell sir Thomas Butler and about an hundred Eng
lish men that went to hary conseneyng e all the wem eg
lish church council of Quene Isabell e of the moremyer
for the moremyer wnted for for to have his landes yf that
he myghte to go any maner conyng for he was to be w
as couthe as e had to make his wyle and that was gath p
e

How kyng Edward went over the see for to do his
homage unto the kyng of france for the duchie of Guy
enne Ca. CCC. xij.

It was nat long after that the kyng of france the
very council of his counseillers set to kyng Edward
of england that he shold come to parys e done his homage
as wofore wold for the duchie of Guyenne e so thurgh co
uncill of the lordes of england kyng Edward went oute
the se e at asacion to come to parys the iiij. pte of
his wyght to do his homage to the kyng of france underseg
his homage e made of his meche Jope e Burgh. But when
kyng Edward had made his homage to the kyng of france
in the Englissh church the quene Isabell his moder e a more
happily he was aye in the englissh upon Wifsonday the
fourth any anyng line of the kyng of france wherfor he w
as henderd much.

How sir regier moremyer ha re his poudely a to hie
no no he shall get of sir regier. Ca. CCC. xx
anyng of Regier the shad e couped to be

at any hit asked so that the king granted him to be called
Earl of the marches though out of his lordship And he
was so proud and so haughty that he held life & for all
the name that his ancestors had ever before and for the
chevalry he let him call Earl of the marches & none of the co-
munes of england durst call him by his own name for
he was called so through the king's grace that men should call
him earl of the marches And the mortimer that him the so
lent prince so proud that would it was for to with the also
disgraced him with some such clothes out of all manner
for both of slapping & of hanging After of the night he had
great wonder how in what manner he might come out
of such manner pain & they said amongst them all com-
munely that his pain should never endure And the same
evening the Geoffrey mortimer the young that was the more
mere son of the king calling of folk and so it befell after
ward in deed for he was so full of pride and of conceit
that he held a countess lady a wife to all men that
he desired word come and countess the maner and the to-
wing of king archbishop of canterbury he failed for the noble
king and he was as the most worthy lord of wisdom
there was in all the world in his realm & yet he never
he feared after for all the noble lordships & castles of
the of armies a host of knights with him & others
him for his lord & that was well for for he conquered
in with a woman that was called Guinevere & she of her
name of France & she had him with his lordship also he
fought with a giant that was called Dinadan & she had
him that had married him & she had him that was king of
the king of little britain And after that he was in
batal the Emperor of romes that was called Lucius
had assembled against king archbishop of canterbury with his
people of romes & he was of foreigner that no

and he was held to be disordered by all as the story of hym
all the same time. Comyn for a space in england
church concerning a ordinance of the same prince that he
was lord of carnaruan that was lying to ward the father of
him the good clerk saying that he was a lyar in the car
penter of wife. But for all these things all most of england
was in for the good clerk. Better than as was for not for they
were not for a moment by the mortimer had him done more
dead than the other.

How edmond of wodestoke that was erle of kent
the hynge brother edward of carnaruan was behe
ded at wyndesore Ca. ducenta lmo xxi

And so was a prince of the world so that he edmond of wode
stoke was of the same by to the pope John the xxii
at oxford and said that almighty god had of the times done
for the mortimer of lantastir many great miracles. So many
men of the world that were through diverse maladye and done
as by the world and through his prayer they were brought
by to his lordship so that edmond prayed the pope that he
should grant him grace that the forsaide thomas myght
be translated. And the pope said nay that he shold not be
translated. Whereupon that he was letter certified of the cler
gy of england and sent by his obedience what thing god had
done for the lord of thomas of lantastir after the suggestion
that the forsaide edmond erle of kent had. And to him he made
answer that edmond was the same as myght not speak of his pur
pose as touching the translation he prayed him of his coun
sell as touching the lord of carnaruan his brother. He
said that no longer gone he was hynge of england. What
thing myght be done as touching his disuence. I pray
that a common fame is spreading in england that he is in lyfe. I
pray for him. And the pope John the xxii that the lord of ward
was a lyar and a false clerk. And by his benyson that he

shold helpe with all the power that he myght that he was
 found out of prison & save his body in all maner that he
 myghte & for to bring this thing to an ende he offered him
 & his companie a pene & culpe: altho that he was in his
 furace tho to the command of Walsstons his due of the pope
 comynge in to england & when sir edmond was come some
 of the fere pascours come & said that sir edward his brother
 was a leue in the castell of corf Under the keepynge
 of sir thomas garnay. he spak hym the foresaid edmond as
 fast as he myghte till that he came by to the castell of corf &
 acquyted & spak so faine with Johan daniel that was a
 nestable of the same castell & pass him with pence for to haue
 acquaintance of him & to knowe of his counsell & chun-
 ce he fell & he the foresaid sir Edmond prynced specialy to tell
 him pyncly of his brother his brother sir Edward of that
 he spak of. When he & he was a leue he prynced of him
 need to have a sight And this sir Johan daniel was an
 high litted man & full of courage & enyured stoutly by to
 sir godard & said that sir edward his brother was in his
 & Under his keepynge & durst shew him by to no man spak
 he was defend him in the lynes half Edward that was
 as edward son of carmarth & also church & small the
 of quene Isabella the lynes mother & of sir regier the moir-
 mer that he shold shew his body by to no maner man Of
 the world sauf only by to him by on hisse of lye & lymme
 & to dissencion of his house for ever more But the false con-
 stour falsely had for he was not in his ward but he was
 make this & had by to the castell of bracklesburgh sir thomas
 garnay church commandment of the moirmer & said
 that he was as before is said but sir edmond of Wode-
 stoke with no thing that Edward his brother was in the
 & he was a leue by to the foresaid sir Johan & prynced
 that he would shew him by to lye to Edward his brother

து இந்

open and withstanding in plain court, for he thought that
it was good that the forsaide Sir Edmund was happily & quietly
without wishing of the King or other the King's highness
would for give him his life & release that which he had
to move for the so as he had committed & done the Queen's
church council of the Monastery & Bishopric of Exeter
which were in haste to the Bishop of Exeter which they thought
to be for the forsaide Sir Edmund's life of God's blessing of the Bishop
house and maner abiding at Exeter by payment of costs and
fine & that he should have more other expenses to cause of
having not withstanding the Queen's highness took the last
life Sir Edmund out of prison and his body was the castle of
Winchester & then they made a confession of his life
for none other man durst it then so died he the alias the
crime that is to segne the day of October the iiij. year of
King Edward's reign & when the King's highness of the
Windsor for & he entere him at the same maner as King
Edward

¶ Of the death of Sir Roger Mortimer rule of the mar
the Capitula Vincentium p. ii

and so it befall as that the Sir Roger Mortimer
Earl of the March was so proud and so haughty
that he held no lord of the name his was and he was
so covetous that he sold the same. **¶** And the Queen's
wife that was King Edward's mother and she had his
wordes with the officers of the Queen's household in the
same maner that the King's officers did & so he made his
King as touchyng his will & also of castles & all he did
for cause of spears & for to gadre his own & so he did his
fourth night & all that he might do made he it with his
the Queen's highness & so much his wife & he had so that the
great lord of England of the forsaide the King's highness
all to have it he agreed & ordered all things to be done

137
hym church purgason & la we for muste that hysng id Ward
that was the hysnges fader murtherer church he was murthered
in the castle of berkeleys before said more plainly
ly in the 27th chapter of this booke & some that was
of the hysnges counsell lured the mortimer & told him that
he was that the hysng & his counsell were about from day to
day his for to shed & in that wherfor the mortimer was
murthered & ager as the dwell ager him that was of the hys
ges counsell & said that he would on he be avenged so that
ever he took on him was not longe after Ward that the hysnges
ward & dame philip his wife & dame isabel the hysnges
mother & sir roger the mortimer ne were by to nochingham
the for to sojourne & so it befell that the queen isabel charge
counsell of the mortimer to be to her the keeper of the gates of
the castle of nochingham so that no man might come neher in
neoute by nyghte but church commaudment of the mortimer
ne the hysng ne none of his gentyl & that the same fel so
that the mortimer as a traitor was hanged & also for
that that he had ager the hysnges murthered ward & principall
agents him that had him accused to the hysng of the death of
ward his fader & pryncipally a counsell was that the queen
isabel & the mortimer & the bisshop of litch & sir
william of berford & sir hugh of crispiton & othe pates of his
parliament for in that he al that had accused the mortimer by to
the hysng of his faders death of treason and of felonie wher
for all the that were of the hysnges Counsell when they
were of the Mortimers casting pryncipally come to hysng id
ward & said that the mortimer would hym bestride for that
he that they had accused hym of hysng id ward & that hys
fader & pryncipally him that he would murther hym in his ryghte
land & that was the hysnges to pursue his quarrell sir william
moungton sir william de bogun sir william his brother Sir
robert of berford sir william of clinton

And Sir John Hauke of Hereby and many othe of his
 knyghte & all eschevins wente upon the hille to mayntene the qua-
 anty as much as they myghte. And it befell so aftir that
 Sir William Mountagu was one of the ligges frede must
 have the hiltburgh in the castle for the Mortimer but he
 was & couthe hiltburgh in diverse places in the countie of
 Northampton and the Westmarch for a good life that ches-
 tiner shold him to stalle. And in last ches- tiner was by to King
 Edward Sir William Mountagu after that he was in the
 Castell & paucely wold him that he ne none of his compaignie
 shold nor take the Mortimer or his wive nor help
 of William of Alton Constable of the same castell nor be
 there with him. And King Edward was well. And after that I cou-
 theill you be that ye goo to the forsaide Constable & commaund
 to him in my name that he be your friend & your help for
 to take the Mortimer all eschevins & life upon wall of life
 & by him. And the said Mountagu he myghte graunte mercy
 by. And the wite forth the forsaide Mountagu and came to the
 Constable of the Castell and tolde him the Kinges wille.
 And he answered and said that the Kinges wille shold be
 done in as much as he myghte and that he wold not spare
 for no maner deche and so he went & made his othe. The
 said Sir William Mountagu to the Constable in hearing of
 all that was done helpping by to the quene. And he com-
 manded the said hiltburgh for to be kept & do by your quene for to
 take the Mortimer with that ye be kept of the castle & have
 the Kinges & your ward for to be kept. But ye understode
 what the gates of the castle be tolled with the tolling that
 was. And Dame Isabella send hiltburgh. And he myghte. The
 King the Kinges othe. And the Kinges hiltburgh under the
 hiltburgh of the hiltburgh by to the Mortimer and so ye may nat
 wite to the castle by your hiltburgh. And I knowe
 that ye shal sturche out of the castle. And the Kinges

the fo: said Castell that goeth in to the Walle Whiche alþy da
me Isabel the Quene ne none of hir men ne the mortimer
ne none of his compaigne knoweth it not ¶ And so Al
foll the go:burgh that they so ye shull come in to the
Castell withoute aspyre of any man that ben your enemies
¶ And the same nyght Sir William Mountagu & all the
bailies of his quarell and the same Constable also went he
to hors and made semblance as it were for to went out
of the mortimer sight ¶ But anon as the mortimer herd
this rydyng he went that they wold have gon out the see
for drede of him & anon he and his compaigne taken council
amonges hem for to be hir passage and send letters anon to
the portes so that none of the garte bachelers shold wente home
to hir & the contrary due of they were asked & take ¶ And
among othe chynge William Bland Constable of the
fo: said Castell pryncely had Sir William mountagu and
his compaigne by the fo: said way vnder creche so till they
men in to the castell & wente by in to the tour thur the the
mortimer was in ¶ But Sir Hugh of Trumpington hem
ofered hys self & said Almyghty it is all for nought that
ye be comyn in to this Castell ye shull die ye an euell de
uergedone ¶ And anon one of hem that was In
Mountagu in compaigne by with a mace and smote the sa
me Hugh vpon the he: that the Gyngne burst oute And
fell on the grounde and so was he dede an euell de
¶ The murtherer the Mortimer as he armed him at the
turre: door when he herd the noise of him for drede and
herd the Quene Isabel for the mortimer was take
he made moche for to be in here And the Warder by to him
said ¶ Now what hast thou to do that ye done now has
the lord of the land and the king and the lord of the land
and the king and the lord of the land and the king and the lord of the land
and the king and the lord of the land and the king and the lord of the land

Edward III

commanded to bring him in sauf Ward but anon he
saw the King consent by to the mortimers to give him
that he was ask: the King and his men and partly by
myghte were out of the town and in the night he
mornynge & lpyd by on his hands as well as the myght
And so that same year that the mortimer was tak: he had
at his maner in some English: Richard: squyers & small
tro of armes & footmen. And also the mortimer had to
London & Sir Symond of Burford was his Wiche him & was
told to the constable of the town to keep. But after that
was the mortimers lpyt examined at Westminster before
the King & before all the great lordes of England for all that
myghte fall to the name and to requyte also Wiche were affe:
ting to Sir Ed: Ward with the Kingis father also through
Whom the scowis escaped from Stanhope in to Scotland with
out the Will of King Ed: Ward And also to the ch: trea:
surer was desired by to the scowis Whom the homages
& feaumes of Scotland were withyned that the scowis shold
doe ever more by to the Kingis of England for the Res:
me of Scotland Wherfor in his absence he was dampned to
be drawe and hanged for his treason. And this mischief
came by to hym for he was even in the year of Incar:
nation of our lord Jhu crist 1327. CCC. and 27.

How King Edward gets apene on hym graciously
the homages & feaumes of Scotland wher of he was put
oute through false counsell of Rabell his mother & Sir
Roger mortimer that was newe made erle of the mar:
the CCC. xlii.

How King Edward gets apene on hym graciously
the homages & feaumes of Scotland wher of he was put
oute through false counsell of Rabell his mother & Sir
Roger mortimer that was newe made erle of the mar:
the CCC. xlii.

The first time of his body begotten & to this Johan made fe
 out & homage to King Edward Henric's son & in for his
 lands of Scotland And to after War & Dick said his for
 more church muncip of the scots in the pen of our lord
 M. C. C. lxxv. & sent by to the portburgha false fugger
 can that he made his othe by to the forsaide King Edward
 over his afeir & his Will of. With othe the pope him affoil
 the church his by to him & sent & anon as King Edward
 said that of he ordeyned anon his barons & come by
 to Bergham & requerd the house at which conquest the W
 allaynt & D. M. & D. C. & the baillof that was King
 of Scotland came & yeld to him by to King Edward and the
 King after War & shewed him out of the town of the lon
 & all the good lordes of Scotland. With him that, Went
 to the first by the & yeld to him & sayd that to go in to Scotland
 and the scots his church his falseyess. Wrote apd King
 Edward & when Sir Johan Baillol King of Scotland saw
 all this he went & put him over the sea by to Dunprie and
 laved the King his owne hand as well as he myght till
 the scots wol remede him of his wyl & dre & trespass
 And with him Sir Edward his son & his for the scots in
 the of him called him Sir Johan & turne aback for cause that
 he wol be not offe & ne trespass & penis King Edward. Of
 England & to the forsoke his name of Scotland & sette the of
 his hand & King & this Sir Johan longe tyme dwelled in fra
 nce till that he died. And Sir Edward by
 sons & underfeng his barons & And did homage by to the
 King of France for his landes of Dunprie and So is
 the of Edward that Edward that was Johan Baillol's so
 ne had with him a squier of England that was born in
 the of the was called John of Barnaby & this Edward
 had of him much & bought him and full price
 And so this John Barnaby was in that with a frelland

Edward

in the toun of Dunprie & so he quelled him & went in his
way in all that he myght in to the castell for to have socour
& help of his brether & anon come the officers of the toun
to take Johan of Barnaby as a felony & Sir Edward his brether
help him & rescued him & by myght made him wende out
of the Castell & so he went his way & come in to Englonde
with out any harme. And when the King of France
saw that Sir Edward had rescued his felony he became wroth
for wroth agens Sir Edward And anon let him be arres-
ted & take in to his hande all his lande. The Dauid Sir
Edward in prison In to the tyme that Sir Henry of the
aunount come in to France the which Henry sometime
was Erie of Angos in Scotland; though his wife and he
as put out of the forsaide Erie dome When the aynyd was he
went Englonde and Scotland thurgh the Queene Isabe-
ll and Sir Roger the Forreiner and his companie for
the mariage that he made Sir Wene Dauid that was Ro-
bert the Brus sone and Dame Johan atte tour Aynyd Ed-
wardes suster of Englonde and Well Buterfode this that
at the ende he shold come to his ryght But yf it were th-
urgh Sir Edward Baillol that was ryght heir of the
ame of Scotland And the King of France Lodowick
hued moche this Sir Henry & he was with him full pry-
ue and thought for to make a distance of Sir Edward
Baillol's body yf he myght by any maner wise The pry-
ue the King that he wolde graunte hym of his grace Sir
Edward Baillol's body In to the next parliament that he
myght byne with his own wille in the mene tyme And
that he must stand to be Jured by his pryve at the parleme-
nt The King graunted hym his praye and made the forsaide
Edward be deliuered out of prison in the maner aboue said
And anon as he was out of prison Sir Henry take him
forth with hym and led hym in to Englonde and made

him ducly pryncely at the maner of sandewich vponse in p
erishment with the lady Descey & so he ordeyned him thre an
longe tennance of xpl of Englyss men & also of alies
for to conquer agene his heritage And so he paye moche sil
uer vnto sooldiers and to aliens for to helpe him ¶ And
they behote for to helpe him in all that they myght but they
failled him at his most nede And at that tyme donald er
le of moray hit telle to the that sir Edward was pryncely
come to him & made hit & hym grete Joye of his comyng aye
nt & said to him & behight him that all the grete lordes Of
Englond shold be to him intendour & shold him holde for
kyng as righte hie of scotland & so moche they wolde wille
that he shold be crowned kyng of that land & dyen to him
homage & feaute & so come sir henry of beaumont to kynges
ward of englond & prayed him in wey of charite that he
wolde graunte of his grace vnto sir edward bailloill that
he must safely go by land from sandhale vnto scotland
for to conquer his wyght heritage in scotland the kyng answ
ered & said vnto him yf that I suffer the bailloill Wende thy
urgh my land in to scotland than the xpl wolde saye the
I shold be assenchingg vnto the xpl no we sir I pray
go we that ye wolde graunte him due to take vnto him so
iours of englyssmen that they myght safely lide him th
urgh your land vnto scotland & Sir vpon this couena
nt that yf it so befalle that god wille that he be discorde in
his tyme church the swetes that I & also all the lordes that
holde with bailloill bene for evermore due out of our re
ntes that we haue in englond & the kyng vpon this couena
nt graunted hit done as cholesing him and also that we
w of the same quantite the which clamed for to haue lodes or
rents in the name of Scotland

¶ And these ben the names of the lordes that pursueden
this matter that is to say sir edward the bailloill the echal

lenged the name of Scotland sic Henry leanmonut erl
of angos sic Dauid of strobolperle of achiles sic Gefay
of Monbray Walter. compne and many ocher that he
put out of his heritage in Scotland When the pps was
made sic Went England & scotland as before is said And
ye shall vnderstand that these lordes took with him v. thou
dred men of armes & ij. thousand archiers & of footmen and
tho wente in to shippes at rounespor & sailed by the see till
that they comen vñ to scotland & comen to land at Lynke
some viij. myle from Seint Johannes toun & anon sent
out the shippes agene for they shold nas be hurt ne empierd
neither that no man shold gone in to the shipp agene chonst
that they had neede be abyd at alle perilles & nat the que
stonde & rather suffer death than the for to magnify hir rei
we quare When the Erl of fiffe a fere man and a stour
berd that the baillof was comen for to take the lade of sce
land he come in haste to Lynke toun with x. thousand foot
te for to destroubte him that he shold nat come to land but
Sir Edward baillof & his compaie there his discomfited
at the which discomfite Sir aliz audre of seton was they
quelled & many ocher ¶ The Erl of fiffe was tho fory &
full ylle a shamed that so litell a compaie had him discō
fited and shamelich put him and all his compaie that w
as a lyde for to flie

¶ Tho come Sir Edward baillof and took the cōrt all
about him till he come vñ to the Abbey of dunfermelgus &
there he founde vittailles for him and for his folke and among
ge all ocher chynge he founde in a chaubere a houte v. thou
dred of grete sta des of fine oke with longe pylles of yron ad
of stelle he took him and deliuerd him to the most strongest
men of his compaie

¶ And anon after he wente fwe chere and lodged hym in
a felde ij. myle from Seint Johannes toun And when

the Burghis of the toun herd to the Cite of fiffe War:
discomfited chury the Baillof they Wer for adrad and bot
ken theyr bagges that they had made ouer the Water of er:
us so that the Baillof myght not gone ouer ther for he log:
ged him ther all the nyght but littell he had toke of rest &
said vnto his peple ¶ No we thinke for ye know full
well that we be no wey logged but we are our enemies and
ye shal mo we be hamper ther is no loce but we be ther for
ye be abyd for all this nyght still I be that it shall
come to us moche for we and har me for the power of scoe
land may eury day wey and encasse and we may not
so done And we sent but littell peple as apens hem ther:
for I pray god for the but of. Al myghty god make we
be bold and hardy and that we may myghtely take the
Swete this nyght and bot all peple vpon hem and be as
purse hem this nyght and ye shal be tranailled. churche
be and they for our hardynesse so that our Swete this
comen and mete hem and see hem so tranailled & wey the
four wall they be adrad with us for to fight and for sel
than we shall fight with hem & vpon hem pursue for that th
urgh the grace of god al myghty all the world shall speke
of the hardynesse of our chivalrie ¶ And thus vnder
standeth well that all the companie comen with us for
ard and will be gannet well vnto that councell And we
ther of god and anon pursued vpon the scottes that they
become wonder wey ¶ And the Baillof and his compa
me for sold his hem and did hem mee for the church by
assault so that they myght not for fild he helpe & for let
all peple but the said the scottes amanges hem. What is
no we best that so littell a peple as the Baillof hath in
vynge done so moche cruaild And so we ¶ No we
certes ye sent us that be we churche by grace for he is to
be gracious in his quail and all we certes shall be in

or that we may come to him so far to get the rich that his
 our set of us no more And among all other things the
 Bailiff and his people passed the bar of Evesham that Sir
 Roger of Wignertone the son was fers and angry and
 went forth and they saw people of armes full well armed
 and forth they went by to him and with him foughten &
 quelled as many as bold abyde or toke And nothles
 at that assaute they went it had bene the grettest of sore
 land and when it come to the morne they gadred him to ge
 die and wted him a while But the while the English
 hmen wted him the noble baron Thomas of Welf and the
 noble Baron of Stafford raised his hors by and wuns by
 the hilles for to lipe the of Efters of the count And as they
 passed by and wuns they saw a grettest of good army
 dynd in their wynges with helmes & sheldres shilnges
 myng byn them And the come the in lordes apene by
 Bailiff the folk and said no we for the love of almyghty
 god bene of good confort for ye shall have Batall anone
 right And the spake Sir fouke the son of Campene a ba
 ron of gret amount and of bde of armes I have ledyn
 ges vnderstouder that I will sepe I have sepe many
 diuerse wynges as well amonge samyngs and I was an
 amonge the scottes And ye saw I neuer the fere the
 of the wynges fight and the for ye will abyde our
 nemies we be yno we for to fight apene him But ye will
 not of good here and of good will for to fight with him
 for certes we bene full fe we apene this companie And the
 for the love of god take by to be a good lord And he be
 bene bold and chynke we neether on our wynges ne on our
 chidren but onlych to conquer him in battail & church
 the helprof our lord god our enemies we shall overcome do
 with that come the hoste of the barons to warre him full
 feuly and apene Sir Edward the Bailiff in his battail

As Well armed in armur And Wonder forselp they cor
me to Ward the Baillolls men And When Sir donald
Erle of mercille sa We all this he said to Robert Erles the
sone of Robert the Brus thes Wordes Sir where quod he
full for me forwinked at myne here that thes folke that the
Bailloll had broughe With hym shold die With dyne swetish
I Word sich that they ben custen men as Well as We ben
therfor me chynliche that is Wea grette chanc to send By
to hem for to gete hem By to our mercy and grace and ra
unfome hem churgh grauous taunfome for as moche as they
haue taken our land and done gille And We artis quod sir
Robert the Brus I haue Well perqued that thou art on e
nemie and a traitour By to Scotland sich that thou Wyle
consent to saue our deely enemies that haue done us mo
che for We and same and nowe it semeth Will that ye ben of
hir assent Certes where quod Sir donald falsely ye lye I
am not of hir companie ne of hir consene and that hastel
ye shold see For I Wuld fighe With hem rather than any
of this companie And artis Sir where said he I shall ma
ge this iud assaule hem at eua And With that they pa
kiden hir fride forselp vpon Cassenore and hir Benges
hem folk wed on a rigne And tho come they a mite the baill
oll and his companie at an hongyng boughe of the more in
a stene passage and so fast they hastid hem By to the englis
hmen so that thousandes fell to the grounde the By ochir in
to a hys boche hors and man The Bailloll tho and his mi
nyghaly stod agens hem and fast quelled the stokes By
to the grounde and many sow they wound so longe Tyll
that they stoden vpon hem and fopned hem With hir Wer
des and spere churgh hir bodies and so sow mauailed v
pon hem till that they becomen full Wery and Wist nat what
for to done and the Doyles that Wia after alv besliden a
Way for to saue hem selfe in the best maner as they myghe

And also pursued him Sir Ed Ward bailiff his men &
 quelled of him till that was nyght and so then they we-
 ne by to seine Johannes toun & toke it & held him there
 & vittailed him selfe at his owne wyll for they founden y
 no be wher wiche to make hem mery ¶ Tho made the baillif
 off his men that were wounded gone to ship for to wende
 to England for to helpe his woundes And in that tyme there
 was a flummping in the see a stronge tife and robbet that
 was called crabe And this flummping was driven out of
 Flaundres for his wilkednesse And therfor he come in to
 swerland to helpe wiche the swetes & did as moche harm by
 to Engliffmen as he myght And this crabe met in the
 see the bailliffs men that were wounded in bataille that were
 sent apene in to England for to helpe his woundes & this
 crabe yafe by to hem a grette assaule & wold have quelled
 hem euerychone but the Engliffmen defende hem well and
 manly and discomfited crabe and his companie and also
 gone he fle in to swerland and as he come to Ward seine Jo-
 hannes toun he founde a grette companie of swetes that were
 come apene to gedden after the discomfite of Gaske-
 more which beseged bailliff and his men in the same to-
 une of seine Johan and anon told the swetes so that he
 was discomfited of the Engliffmen that were wounded at
 Gaslemore that were to Ward England for to helpe his
 wounes and said to the swetes that they shold have no myght
 ne grace apene Ed Ward bailliff for enche son that comfited
 and empyred al the cheualier of swerland wiche an honer full
 of men as to accompte as apene the swetes that were slayn
 wherfor he counsellid for to tremeue the siege from seine
 Johannes toun & kepe hem in the best maner that they coude
 and myght the swetes understode also that crabe sayd
 hem forhand for to kepe the siege and were thus by nyght
 halpe hem selfe in the best maner that they myght ¶ When

Edw 3

this thinge was kno we church Swel and so we the the
bodes and knyghtes were comfited at Gaslemore of scot
land church fir Ed Ward the baillof ye shull Understonde
the the bodes and ladies and the gentils of Scoeladcom
Wonde fast to seint Johanues toun and yel de him By to
the baillof and to him did in bouage and fraute for hir la
de and yelden him to his wra Aud. he him Receyued ful g
And so eene he went to the Abbe of scone and the he
was crowned kyng of Scotland And after he the the
was church oute all the land And at that same tyme ye
he fell the kyng Ed Ward hel de his parlement amonge his
kiges at the the castle Ap tyme for to amende the trespass
ces and the wronges that had be done in his land And fir
Edward the Baillof kyng of Swelaud come to hym the
der and did to him fraute and bouage for the Reame of scot
land And in this maner kyng Ed Ward of Englonde
gadered agene the homages and frautes of swelaud: Wher
of was put oute church counceill and assente of Dame J
sabel his moder and of Sir Rogier the Mortimer Erle of
the marche To take Baillof kyng of swelaud his lute Of
of kyng Ed Ward of Englonde And wente eene in to his
owne lande of swelaud and sette But litell by him that
had counceilled him and holpen him in his quarrell Wher for
they went to hym and went and lyued by hir lodes and
wra in swelaud And so it fel after nat longe. That
the kyng of Swelaud was mewed and come to the toun of
Glasgow and the the his dwelling and chidder come to
hym a compaign of knyghtes stronge men and. Worthye and
yel de him By to the kyng and becom him so fauour in dede and i
conceinaunce So that he trust moche vpon him And
anone as the traitours saw that he trust moche vpon him
they ordeyned amonges him felle in a compaign and wold
have quered hir kyng but church the grace of almyghte.

Edward 3

god he schal churgh a Walke as hole in his chamber And
as god wold asaped his treche and all his Men were
quelled and he asaped with moch durt In to the town of
Carduill and then helde hym for annoied and this befell
our ladies eue the conception ¶ Tho sent King Edward
the Bailiff to King Edward of England how falsly &
traitourly he was in litle tyme put to shame and for
churgh his liegmen upon whom he trusted woude moche
praised him for the love of god that he wold magnify hym
and helpe him agens his enemyes ¶ The King of England
had of him the grette pite and he ghyfte hym helpe and socour
and sent him word that he shold holde him in pris stille in
the forsaide Cite of Carduill till that he had gadred his poer
¶ Tho ordeyned King Edward of England a counceill
at London and let gadre his men in diuerse shires of Eng
land & when he all was ready he went to ward the town of
Berwike by a weye and chider come to his King Edward
Bailiff of Scotland with his poer and beseged the town
and made withoute the town a faire town of pavilions &
dilled hem all aboute so that they had no dre of the Scotles
and made many assaute with gonnes and with other en
gynes to the town wher with they destroyed many faire hou
ses and churches also were lette downe In to the Erth with
grette stones that spicoufely come out of gonnes and of o
ther engynes and nochtles the Scotles kepte well the town
that the two Kinges myght not come therein longe tyme &
nochtles the Kinges abyde ther so longe all the that were In
the town failled victualles and also they were so wery of
wakyng that they gysted yae what for to done ¶ And so
shall understonde that the Scotles that were In the town
of Berwike churgh commune counsaile and hit assente
to receyve upon the Walys of the town that they myght have
the poer of the Englishmen and ther of they prynced the King

of his grace and Mercy and pruned him of the Wes for his
 days Upon this couenaunt that yf they Were not rescued
 within the tyme of the toun to Ward Scotland and of the Swe
 as Wich. Vijn-daires that they Wolde yelde him by to. The
 kyng and the toun also And to holde this couenaunt they
 pruned to the kyng yhestages out of the toun of Berwik
 by the hostages Were deliuered by to the kyng anone the
 of the toun senten by to the scottes and told hem of his
 ioye and melschier ¶ And the scottes cometh priuely
 ouer the Water of Tweed to the bough of the Abbey and
 Sir William Dylce that Was to be Ward of Scotland &
 many othir that comen with him put hem there in Grett
 well of hem selfe as that tyme of his lyf for they comen o
 uer a Brugge that Was to broken and the stones a way &
 many of his companie Were there drenched but the forsaide W
 illiam Went ouer and othir of his companie and comen by
 the shippes of Englonde & quille in a barge of shull y brime
 And after they Went in to the toun of Berwyke by the
 Water side ¶ Wherfor the scottes held the toun alone
 and asked his hostages agene of the kyng of Englonde and
 the kyng sent hem word agene that they aged the hostages
 with wronge such that they comen in to the toun of Eng
 glondes fide for couenaunt Was he weue him that the to
 une shold be rescued by the halfe of Scotland.

¶ And anone kyng Edw. 2. commanded to yelde the
 toun or he wuld haue the hostages ¶ And the scottes sa
 id that the toun Was rescued wile y no wey ther to they
 wold hold holde hem

¶ When kyng Edw. 2.
 and saw the scottes broke his cōvenant that they made he w
 as Wader with & anone he take sir thomas fitz William &
 sir alixander of seto Wardene of Berwik the Wich thas
 Was persō of dunbar & he take first a few that othir
 hostages for each son that sir alixandres fader Was kept.

John will
 & Henry 2. and

may 12. 1296
 & Henry 2. and
 & Henry 2. and

John 2.

Flu

John will 2. & Henry 2.

of the tounne ¶ And also commaunded every day h. festi-
ges of the tounne till that they were all done By the which
due of they yelded the tounne ¶ And so he shold wete hem To
take hir counauntes ¶ And When also of the tounne herde
taken cynges they becomen wonder forp and senten to The
kyng of Englande that he wold graunte hem ocher xij.
dayes of respit so that he wold take two hundred men of Ar-
mes and xxiiij. of armes myghte he sturgh gone he wold
hem to the tounne of Berwike hem for to bataille that the
tounne must be holde for rescued And of so was that xxij. or
xxij. or more was slayn of the two hundred Before sayd
that the tounne shold nat be holde for rescued and this cou-
naunte to be holden they sent to him ocher xij. of the tounne In
hostage the kyng of Englande graunted hem hit prair and
to be the hostages in seint mar gannes rue in the year of gra-
ce a M. CCC. & xxxij. the scottes come ferly in xij. Ben-
ges well armed in armes for to mete kyng Edward of En-
gland & Edward the kyng of Scotland And With hir poer
and come fast and sharply agens euensonge tyme & The
same tyme was flood at Berwike in the water of the
de that no man myghte wend ouer on hir hors nor on foot
and the water was b. & bene the n. kynges & the name of
Englande & that tyme abyde the scottes in that ocher side
for enclose that the Englissmen shold haue bent dunt for
flayne

This was the aray of the scottes how that they comē
in batailles agens the knynges of england & Scotland & the
vaillward of Scotland were thes lordes. ca. du. xxiiij.

¶ he erl of. mont iaco. kassell simon kassell Walter the
Bar. wygnold theghe patric of gutha Jos. & gra-
unt James of Cardwell parake parkes ¶ Robert Calte
cor. philip of gylldrum The Thomas Gylldre. m. f.

Byseman Adam Surdwe Johannes gramat Robere lo
 yd Hugh parke With xl. knyghtes we be dubbed and, vj
 C men of armes and in M. of communes ¶ In the fyrst
 partie of the halfe bataille Were these lordes the st Ward of
 Sweland The Erle of mowat James his uncle William
 Douglas David of Lynsdoye Ma ncolyn flammyng Wil
 liam of the dunkanham balle With xxx. bachelers newe y
 dubbed ¶ In the second parte of the bataille Were these
 lordes James st Ward of Cheshy aleye st Ward William
 Gibbshy William morice Johan fitz William Adam le
 mose Walter fitz Gilbert Johan of cerlton Robere Walle
 ham With vij C men of armes and ydij. of communes
 ¶ In the iii parte of the bataille of sweland Were these lor
 des the Erle of marche Erle of Rosse the Erle of straberne
 the Erle of socheerland William of kyrtely Johan cam
 bron Gilbert of lase William of Ramsay William prync
 Bgeft kprstyn hart William Surdwe arnold Bar & tho
 mas Dolphyn With xl. knyghtes newe dubbed ij. C men
 of armes and ydij. of communes ¶ In the iiii Warde
 of the bataille of Sweland Were these Lordes Archibald
 Douglas the Erle of Lennox Alixaundre le Brus The
 Erle of fyt Johan Cambell Erle of Acheles Robere La
 Beecher William of Wybourne William of Bonstone Johan
 de labele Groos de Shetwale Johan de lynchep Alpy
 saundre & Gray Ingham de Wynterbill Parake & polles
 Worth David the Wymer Michel Scott William Landy
 Thomas & hops Roger de Moreuwer With xxx. Bachelers
 newe dubbed iij. hundred men of armes ydij. M. & iiii
 C. of communes the Erle of Dunbar keeper of the Castell
 of Berwick helpe the scottes With l. men of armes and st
 alisaundre of sion keeper of the firsaid toun of Berwick
 With an hundred men of armes and the communes of the
 toun With iij. hundred men of armes and With hem vij

hundred of foemen To somme of the Erles and barons also:
we said amounteth by vi. Tho somme of the bachelers ne be
dubbe & amounteth to an hundred and xl. The some
me of men of armes amounteth ij. M. M. C. Tho some
of the commons amounteth liij. M. CC. Tho somme total
of the people about said amounteth lxxij. M. viij. C. xl. v. &
the lxxij. gunn barons ladden all the other gunn barons about
said in iij. battailles as it is told before till on for And
kyng Edward of england & Edward kyng of Scotland
had well apparailled hir folke in iij. battailles for to fight on
foote agens hir enemies And the english mynstrelles & the
the trumpes and the pipes and buselly aseried the scottes
And the had every english baron iiij. Wynges of pike archi
ers the which at that battail shewen as was so fast and so.
som that the scottes myght nat helpe themselves and they s.
an the scottes thousande to grounde And they gunn for To
the few the Englishmen for to save hir lxxij.

And Whanne the Englishs sawe the swiftnesse
and the scottes fall fast to the grounde they perilled hir ma
sters hors with the spore for to keep hym to perill And see
the masters at no force And When the Englishmen sawe
that they lepen on hir hors and fast pursued the scottes &
all that abyde they quelled downe righte Then men myght
see the doughtynesse of the noble kyng Edward & of his
men how manly they pursued the scottes that fledden for
dredde and the men myght see many a scottishman cast
downe by to the grounde And And hir Baners displayed
balked in to pecys and many a good faburion Of steele
in hir blys barge And many a tyme the scottes were
dred in to companies but entremore they were discomfyed
and so it befell as god almyghty wold that the scottes had
that day no more forson ne myght agens the Englishmen
the xx. shepe stole but agens & wolves and so was the so

Edw. 3.

he discomfited & put the Swedes and Welsh men apene
one Eng. ssamen And the battail was done on halston
nebbelcospide the toun of hem Wike at the which battail
hem slayne of the swedes xxxv. M. viij. C. and xij. of Eng.
glissmen but only xij. the Welshmen And this die
wre befall to the englisshmen on seint margaret the eve of
the yere of the Incarnation of our lord Ihu crist M. ccc.
xxv. And while this wping laste the englissh pages
take the piller of the swetes churche, wem quelled every May
that he myght take without any challynging of any men
And so after this glorious victorie the kyng turned
him apene to the same siege of Berwyle and when the
king was a hard besyng Edward had spede thep polde
to him the toun wiche the castell on the moire after that
the battail was done that is for to say on seint margaret
the day And then the kyng ordeyned Sir Edward baillif
loke wiche oger noble and worthy men to be keepers & go-
vernours of scotland in his absence and hymselfe tur-
ned apene and came in to Englaund after this victorie by
ch much Joye and Butship And in the next yere sewing
that is for to say the yere of Incarnation of our lord Ihu
christ a. CCC. xxv. and of kyng Edward viij.
Went apene in to scotland in the wynter tyme at wiche
the Biage the Castell of Lulbrygge in scotland for him &
his men that wiche hymen men he ordeyned And had apene
the Swetes all at his owne luffe And in that same yere
in Sir Edward baillif kyng of scotland had his parli-
ment in scotland wiche many noble lordes of Englaund
that were at that sam parliament for defence of the lordes &
lordshippes that they had in the name of scotland & heften
all of the same baillif And in the viij. yere of
his rege about the fest of seint Iohn baptist Sir Edward
baillif of the Berwyke came kyng of scotland as by gentyl

and righe kyng made his homage and feaute by to kyng
Edward of England for the Reame of Scotland at the
We castle by kyng in the presence of the many worthy barons
and also of communes lordes of the names of england
and also of swel and anon after in the same year kyng
Edward of england assayed of the duke of Britaigne
his homage for the Erle Dume and lordship of Richemond
And so folowynge in the year of his regne after Michael
masse kyng Edward went in to Scotland the was fast by
Sainte Johannes toun all most alle the Wynter tyme and
he held his cristmasse at the castle of Rossburgh And
in the same year thurgh oute all England aboute seint Cle
mentis tyme in Wynter the arowe such a spryngynge a
wellyng by of waters a floodis bothe of the see and also of
fresshe riuers and springes that the see bankes walles and
castles baken by the men bestes a houses in many places
namely in the wynter violently a sodenly was dryene
And driuen a way and fringes of the Erle thurgh con
tinuance a habundaunce of waters of the see ever more af
terward they turned in to more salenesse and to drynesse
of sauer the wynter of kyng Edward was agayne kyng Edward
ardened the Scottish see after mydsomer and to many
of the goodly be past battell and overcome And many
he came and so went by to his priore church his daughter
nesse And after mychelmasse day neye folowing was the Er
le of morris take at Edinburgh a brought in to England
a put in to prison And in the moneth of Juny a July
the neye folowing in the year of his regne was seyn a ap
ped in the firmament a bryght star the which shyned as
a comete a the star was seyn in diuerse places of the firmament
where afe anon there folowed in england good shepe a good
the grete plenty of all cheape vittails a marchandise a the
foger scarce meschance a need of money in so much that a

the year of the
king's reign
the year of the
king's reign
the year of the
king's reign

quarter of wheat at London was sold for two shillings & a good fare of at a noble & a good boune brides for a penny in which year died sir Johan of Eleham Erle of Cornuaille & King Edward's brother and kith at Westmynster. Thow King Edward made a duchie of the erlesdoms of cornuaille & also of vi. othir erles thar were new made & of the first chalenging of the kyndome of fraunce

Ca. CCxxv

In the yere of our lord M. CCC. & xxxvii. and of King Edward vii. in the moueth of marche during the parliament at Westmynster in the xpm. King Edward made of the erldome of Cornuaille a duchie & he is callid the duchie of cornuaille the which duchie he gave by to Edward his first sone with erldome of chesster And also King Edward made at that same tyme vii. othir erles & thar is so: to say sir Henry erl of Lancaster sone erl of Arcestre William of Bughene Erle of northampton William of molleyn Erle of salisbury Hugh of a Wyke Erle of Gloucestre Robert of Wford Erle of southeolke And William of elyton erl of Guntyngham And in that same yere it was ordeyned in the same parliament thar no man shold wear no cloth that was brought out of england as cloth of gold of silke velvet or damask saffyn banderlynne nor ne suche othir ne none wylde Ware no fur of beyond the see bute such as myghte spend an. C. pounde of wnt a yere bute this ordinaunce and statute was of litell effect for it was no chynge folde

In the viii. yere of his regne King Edward went oute for to Italyan wyth Quene philipp his wife thar being child at and there thar he dwelled more than a yere to wiche with the duke of braban & othir allied. In to the of his chalenging of the kyngdom of fraunce to King Edward of Englonde by ryghte and by brimge after the deth of karoll the guth King of fraunce

brother germane of queene Isabel kyng Edward's ma-
 douer which was holden and occupied burghisfulp by
 philipp of Valloys the Emes son of kyng Karol the which
 duke and all his in the forsaide chynge & in all oerth che
 to hnggung with all his men & goodes kyng Edward found
 wdy by to him & madyng & behyng him seure by good fe-
 ith & cruse & after that the kyng basted him in to england
 apene & lufe che the queene stike behynde him in braban
 ¶ Than in the viii. yere of his reyn whan all the lordes of
 his name & oerth that fallen to be at his parlyment were
 called & assembled to gadre in the same parlyment holden at
 london after the feist of seint hilary the kynges nedis be-
 came forech & promoted as thouching the kyngdome of fraunce
 for which nedis to be spid the kyng ayed the fifte part of
 all the mebles goodes of Englonde & the dukies and the
 skife of every counte And the lordes of every counte were
 ch ching shold be taxed & gadred shold answer to the kyng
 ether of & he had it & helde it at his owne lust & will wout
 for yf I shall knowleche the veray treuth the ynnys lous
 of the pepyl was turned in to hore & ch. commune prynces
 in to cursing for cause that the comune pepyl were so ferd
 gely grieved also the forsaide philipp Valloys of fraunce had
 gadred by to him a gret hoste & destroyed there in his par-
 ties and kyndome many of the kynges frendes of englonde
 which townes & castelles of many oerth of his lordshippes &
 many harmes & damages & spoyles & den in the queene ther-
 for kyng Edward whan he herde this tydynges was ferd
 gely meued & ether with an angred & sente diuerse letters o-
 ver see to the queene & to oerth that were his frendes glar-
 dyng hem & certifieng hem that he wolde be there him self
 in alle the haste that he myght And anon after after
 when he had spid of alle thing that hem nedis and come
 he went ouer the sei agene of whos comyng the queene and

210
all his fandes. With Woudre glad and made moch Joye,
And all the Frenchis enemies oud apens him hel den mas
Thas moch for the. In the same tyme the kyng thurgh
warrant of his councill and counceill of his lordes the
the Warr passed With hym token the kyng of Fraunce na
me. and toke a medled the kynges armes of fraunce quar
terd With the armes of England and commaunded forch.
With his wigne of gold Under the escapion and the Waring of
the name of England a of fraunce to be made best that my
ght be that is for to sege the foryne. the was called the
noble pris of Br. shilling. By pris of sterlynge a the hal
fe noble of a shilling in shillinges in pence the forch of a
How kyng Edward came to the selups. Lue. xx. pms
a discomfited all the power of fraunce in the haven.
Capitula ducentesimo xvi

And the next yere after that is for to say the y. v. ye
re of his wigne he commaunded and the Warr I his char
ter Warr and othe the date of the regne of Fra
nce first And With the the was thus wyng and trua
kyng in fraunce thurgh his councill he Wore to all the
pauers outis Erles and barons and the noble lordes Of
the contre And also to diuerse of the commune peple diuerse
littres and mandementz bringh date at Baudaune the
vii. day of July. And anon after With. in a littell
tyme he was agene in to England With the Quene a her
chidren and with the same yere on mydsomer eue he. began
to fute the Warr fraunce agene manly and styfly till v
pon the day of Salope the With huge tyme lay a had ga
ved to his full charge a dyntone myne of diuerse nacids
in the death of slayng a the the foute to geve the kyng
of fraunce a With he lyste for my day By to the in fone
in the contre With the the Warr signe xxx. men of
the kyngs company of footmen and many shippes And

wyer were taken And so church goddis helpe had them
 the victorie and from thence a glorious chivalerie. And
 in the same yere also the same James the Duke of
 Britayne Omer Robert of aucthis which was of Eng-
 land and Flaunders which he caught among the Duke of
 Burgoyne & his fronsmen at which battail the Duke
 layne & take of the fronsmen & barons lxxx. English
 & shippes and barges were take by the number of CC
 & xxx. In the same yere the King making a abedynge
 upon the siege of eurney the Duke of Henand which English
 archiers made an assault to the towne of Seint omond
 by the help of Wel. Englishes and many other & also destroyed
 the towne And in the yere of his regne the King
 the Wynter tyme the same King dueled still upon the said
 po siege and sent of it into England to his cosyn & other
 purcheours for gold & money that shold be set to his che-
 in his nee & his procurours and messagers cursedly
 & full shewly served him at his nee & him damaged by
 his default and lacke the King took the Duke of
 the King of France. And the King full of so for the
 same in his heart which he him self the siege and went into
 Britaigne & there was so great strife for victualle that he lost
 many of his peple And when he had done that that he will
 for he dressed him over for into England Ward And as he
 sailed to Ward england in the high sea the most tempestes
 stormes and tempestes hundred and lxx. shippes full to
 hym in the sea the which was sayd that it was done and
 caused church and spirytis made by forswere & ungodly
 de of him of France to suffer the Kinges heart was full
 of sorow and angust. Which & highenge said by the
 our lady in this wyle of blessed lady saint marie. What
 the cause that our men goynge to France all engynes &
 where fallen to me Iogful & lxx. shippes & lxx. shippes

hane ben Due all the euenyng in the Englonde Ward all
chugis fallen Unposible & harme full. much later he con
pyng all: pikes of the see as god Wold coue. by nyght. to
the towre of London & shewed yee the kyng. held his castma
ffe a c mence & send word to the swete by the messagiers
that he was wdy & Wold figher with him but the swetes W
old nat abyde that but shadder ouer the scottish see & hed
him as well as the wyghte And in the 8th y^r of his re
gne about the feste of conuersion of seint paul the kyng edw
ard when he had be in scotland & sa w chat the swetes were
shadder he come apent in to Englonde And a littell byfor lee
was the turnement at dunstaple to the which turnement
were all the yonge barons & chualars of Englonde with
many other Erles & lodes At the which turnement the kyng
edward him selfe was the p^resent And the next yere for
the kyng in the 9th Bishop of his wyne at his parlement hol
den at Westmynster the quene of castile the kyng edw
ard the thad^r made Edward his first begotten son prync
of Walys And in the 10th y^r of his reigne anon after 1
Januer by fore land the same kyng edward he make full
nobill Justices & gub^r festes in the place of his birth at Wynd
esore wher ther were neuer none such seen ther by fore at whi
ch fest and malle the kyng & quene the prync of wa
lys The duke of cornwall & Erles & countesses barons
and many burgis the which nyghten not lightly be nom
bered and of diuerse landes beyond the see were many str
angers And at the same tyme when the Justices were Done
the kyng Edward made a gude fowr in the which he assigned
fast & began his wand^r well & ordeyned & sheweth the day
of the fowrward with table to be holden ther at Wyndesore in
the 12th y^r for the currowe yee And in this tyme english
men so much loved & claud to the bodinesse & folg of the
knights that for the tyme of comyng of the Hyndons

3.
The first yere passed they ordeyned and charged by every
in diuers shapes & disguising of clothing of large large
& by clothes & stature & descent from a lorde honest & good
Usage And an othe & messore clothes and strength was
they lagged & laye and on every side slawed & slawed wi
th slawes & capites of furres & to be ouer long and ouer
more hanging that yf that I the forschall say they were
more lich to tormauntours & duelles in hir clothing and
shopyng & othe auyr than to men And the women more ny
fel y pe passed the men in auyr & conouslaker for they were
so sturpe clothed ege they let hang for willes so wed bines
within hir clothes for to be and hid hir arses the which dis
guysing & prude par aduentur afterward brouge forth &
caused many mysshapes & mischis in the name of Eng
lond The xx yere of hyng Edward he went ouer in to
Britaigne Gascoyne in wloes compaign went the Erle of
Warwiche the Erle of southe the Erle of huntington &
the Erle of Arundell & many othe lordes and commu
nys in a grette multitude With a grette nauye of CC. xl.
shippes a howe after mydsummer for to auenge him of many
woundes and harmes to him done by Philip of Valoye.
hyng of France & sent the Erle of Arundell & grette the
which Erle he falsely and vntrewly by cauellacions lo
sed and disquait.

¶ Thow hyng Edward sailed in to normendie & arri
ued at hogges with a grette host. Ca. CC. xxvii

¶ At the xxi yere of his hyng Edward thurgh co
uncille of all the grette lordes of the reame of Eng
elond called & gadred to gedre in the parliamēt at Westm
ster before iustice ordeyned him for to passe ouer the see & sent
for to disseye & distrouble the abelles of France. & Whi
nauye was come to goring made ready he went with an au
ge host the xij day of July & sailed in to normandie & at

him the kyng of heme the duke burgne And Erls also
of flandres Dalaunson blys baroun anmarke & nes
vers and many othe Erls barons heis knyghts and
men of armes the nobles of a. M. D. C. l. j. without fore
men & othe men y armed that. But no thing warned
And for all this the Unghous philippe Withdrew his
With the wisdom of his peple Wherfor it was said in commu
ne amonge his othe peple no sterbal for weyte That pe
is for to say our fair Withdrew With hym The kyng E
dward & our englyssment thanked god al myghten for such
a victorie after his grete labour taken to him all thing ne
dfull to his sustenance & saung of his lye for deed Of
his enemien restid him there and full ertly in the morning
after the fawssmen With an huge passeng hoost come agene
for to geue battaille a fight With the Englyssmen Wi
th Whom metten and cumetted Erls of Barrople nor
hampton & northfolle. With his compaign and shewen e bo
thousand & to hem many prisoners of the gentile of hyn.
And the comenante of same hoost fladd in myght this
And the thirde day after the battaille the kyng went to
Calpe Ward desceping all the wene as he wote Withdrew
Whay that he was come that is for to say the thirde day of
September he began to descepe the count With the castill ad
continued his sege for the forsaide thirde day of september
By to the thirde day of Auguste the next yere after And
in the same yere during the siege of calpe the kyng of scot
land With a full grete mulcitude of Scotis come in to in
ghind to se the biltre cross about saint Lukes day the wenge
left hopping and trussing to have founde all the land with
entire void of peple for as moch as the kyng of england
Was beyond the sea for only pasture and of holy church
and gymmen and children and yomen and fawss othe
laborers And then they collected and dreyne much peple

Edw. 3

for he but ye founde they y no be elac him. Withstod. By
 the grace of almyghty god And so a day of battail was
 assigned he wente hym a certayne lordes and. Men of holp
 church that were of elac wene With othir commune peple
 fast by the Cite of durfment With day church the grace
 helpe of almyghty god the Scottes were overcome & ye
 were they in-feld so many of him as of Englishmen And
 that was slayne all the chivalrie & knyghthode of the wa;
 ame of Scotland. And then were take as they wol
 to have fled. then David the kyng of Scotland him self;
 the Erie of Menteith Sir William Douglas & many othir
 gentlemen And after that our Englishmen when they had
 rested hym a fewe dayes & had ordeyned the keepers of the
 Northcoast they comen by to London & broughen With he
 David kyng of Scotland and alle these othir lordes that
 were taken prisoners by to the court of London With alle the
 haste that they myght And then they left hym in safe kee-
 ping by to the kynges comyng and wenten home agene
 by to hir owne countee and after ward was the kynges re-
 turne of Scotland taged by to on C. M. marc of field
 to be payed in p. p. that is for to Segne every yere & M.
 marc

How kyng Edward beleged calys and how it was
 y wonne and tolde to him Ca. C. C. xxviii.

In the xxv. yere of kyng Edwarde wene he wente o-
 ut that se in the wynter tyme & lay alle the wynter
 at the siege of calys the which yere the which the siege la-
 sted philip the kyng of france cast and purposed to choul-
 wyle & Withstod to put a way the siege & come the xxv. day
 day of july in the same yere With a gude host & a stronge
 go with & night by to the siege of Calys the which ph-
 lip the last day of july sent to kyng Edward word that
 he wold yere his plene battail the iiij. day next after that

W. iii

about euefouy eyme yf he durst come fro to flege p abyde ye
and when king Edward herd that without any long tary
eng or longy a difeuent he accepted gladly the cap and
hont of batulle that philipp had assigned And then the
king of fraunce herd that the next nyght after he shold
his tentes a fire & ymened and went a way thenceward
ly Then they that were in the toun & in the castill be-
ged seynge all this so to that they had none othir helpe nor
four of the king of fraunce ne of his men And also the
hir vitailles which they had spent & wasted and for
defaute of vitailles & of refressyng they were in such care
the & mys for to keep hir trowthe as longe they as myght
And when they sawe that was founde amonge they at the last
that they had no ching amouge hem for to be ne lye by ne
no four ne rescuenge of the fransshemen of that othir side
they wist well that they most needs dy for default or elles
yeelde the toun & anone they wenten & toke the toun the ba-
ners and the armes of fraunce on euery side that they shoulde
ged oute & wenten on the walles of the toun on diuerse
places as naked as they were borne save only the shirtes
& the breeches and holding hir swerde naked in the point do-
ward in hir honde and putten ropes & halteres about the
neckes and yelde in by the lynes of the toun & of the Cas-
tell to king Edward of Englonde which gate fro and dore
of hys And when king Edward sawe this as mercy-
ful king and lord rayged all to grette & he was of the grette
ast personers of state and of gouernance of the toun he se-
te in to Englonde ther to abyde hir ransome & the kinges
grace and all the commynalte of the toun the king he goth
whidre they wolde in pitee And without any harme and
let hem be with hem all hir chenges that they myght buye
& came a way lepyng the toun & the Castell to hem selfe
they churche mediocid of cardinals that were sent fro the

ten of the
calif. 14. 15.
way. 16. 17.
18. 19. 20.

AS

[Faint handwritten text, likely bleed-through from the reverse side.]

¶ And whē kynge Edward herde this he tolde with his the
nobles & gentle lordes & many othre worthy & oved mē
of arms that were there present with him for the solēmn

of that high feste And well & Wyse in alle the best that
he myghte & as pryncely as he myghte he went over se

¶ And that same yere the good kyng Edward helde his
Costmasse at hauring And the morwe after the xxviii
day the kyng Was in the castel of Calys With his men of
armes that none of the alians Wist the of And that fals
conspitours & traitour Gifford of charney sech that he
myghte not openly have his purpose of the castell pryncely
stealynge he come in and helde the towne With a gret hoste &
Wher he With his men Was comen in he paid the so said so
me of shewys as countenour Was he went hym to a Gent
Wep in the towne that Was knyght of the castell and consen
kyng to the same Gifford in all this falsnesse & trechery
& boorden the English mynisters and servauntes that Were
in the castell that they myghte not helpe hem selfe ne the hem
of hir purpose And that they Weryuge that they had the siller &
no the they spoken all hir Wyllednesse & falsnesse openly
an high that all men myghte hem

¶ And no the shul ye hem to the they Were disguised for
they comen yn by a priue postern ouer a lytell bygge Of
ere and when they Were comen yn fortilly & pryncely the kyng
ge Was dymben by & kepte the uone of hym that comen
in myghte gone out ne no more come in to hem And anow
our Englishmen Wenden out at priue thes and Wende W
and ouer the Wallis of the towne and of the castell & Wen
the ¶ And saughem manly Wyth the fresshmen that W
ere Victours ¶ And had the helpe of hym
the & sich When they Werten occupyd By hym selfe
on the 17th the kyng that Was borthyn the towne having
Wyth hym Seerale But yow men of armes du to out
his sword and with a hude dogs cryd an hygh a signe
Edward a seint George

¶ And wher folke herd that they were comynng to he &

13

gave them to his armyes so gude assaule that the French
 mo than 2 thousand men of armes and many other
 layng many fleddy a day & so by the grace of god al
 myghty the French were full to the Englishmen. Then the
 king took with him this Gifford that was snyder of the
 church in And also many other famous prisoners & which
 a while after went a pence in to england And in this sam
 year & in the year's fore and also in the year next after was
 so gude pestilance of men fro the east in to the west And
 names of church books that the day filled on this day dy
 ed on this day to the which men that so died in this pe
 stilance had deu bue lictell aspiit of bygging. The pope
 climentz of his goodnesse and grace gave them full remissio
 & foryeuene of all synes that they were shewen of and
 this pestilence lasted in london fro mikelmasse in to august
 next folowynge almost an hole year And in the se daies w
 as the without for the beddinges without frendship w
 yllfull pnaunce & death without searce & flyng wiche
 & refuse or socour for many fledde fro place to place. Be
 cause of the pestilence but they were infected & myghte not
 aske the death after that the prophet I have leach who that
 flecth fro the face of death he shall fall in to the ditch and he
 that thrust him out of the ditch he shall be hold & wiche w
 ich agynue but when this pestilence was risen as god w
 old wunnes the y part of the peple was left alys. And
 in the same year began a wonder thing that all that curre
 wiche some after that pestilence had a new chellenge in hit be
 & lisse than they had a fore

In the year of the king
 was a great pestilence
 & a very many
 died in London
 from mikelmasse
 to august next
 followinge almost
 an hole year

Edward king Edward had a grete bataille with span
 nardes in the ree fast by wynchelsea. Ca. 1337
 and the year of his reign about seint Johannes
 day I heruest the see fast by Wichelese king Edward
 had grete Gamell wiche men of Spayne where that he

Wichelese
 07

Shippes and nauy lay chained to gader that other by my
fize or drechte And so when all our Dorchmen of arms
e the seecostes fast by Wyndesore and Romeny War gader
to gedre e our nauy e shippes aX to the warre the en
glishmen meyn manly e stifylly With hir enemies comyng
feisly aX moX And when the spanysch vesselles e nauy
were closed yn all aboute ether men myght for a steege
battaille ether new but fewe ether foughen ether they new
tousely hurt and foul And after the Battaille ether War
xxij shippes of loss y take And so the englishmen had the
better And in the next yere folowynge of his regne that is
to say the yx viij the kyng thurgh his counaill let orde
yne e make his uttre money that is to say the xxij the gro
t of Value of iij pns And the halfe groat of Value of ij
pns but it was of lase weighe than the olde steepling was
by v. shilling in the pounde And in the vij. y. of his
regne was the grete dreche of vitailles the which was cal
led the drete somer And in the xix vij yere of his regne in
the parlemēt holden at Westmynster after osten sir Henry
Erle of Lancastre was made dulle of Lancastre e in this
same yere was so grete a dronght ether fro the moneth of
marche yn to the moneth of Julyl ether yll no Rayne e
the creche wherfor all fruytes sedes and herbes for the most
partie were lost in default Therfor of ether come so Grete
dile of men And herbes and dreche of vitailles in En
gland so ether this lād ether euer a fore had he plentifulous
had ned ether tyme to selle his vitailles And refrefshyng
of othir oute yles and countrees
And in the xij yere of his regne edward it was accorded
granted e sworne betwix the kyng of fraunce e kyng of Eng
land of england ether he shold haue age all his lād e leyd
shippes ether lād ether to the Duchie of guynes of ether ether
which had bene with dū the e Redgful occupied by dūso

Kynges of France before hand to have and to hold to Kyng
Edward & to his heirs and successors for evermore full
pissibly & in good quiet upon this covenante that the Kyng
of england shold have of & use all his right and clayme
that he had & claymed of the kyngdome of france & of the
rele that he tolde ther of upon which speche and covenante
it was sent to the count of comen both sides of the kyng
gra that the forsaide covenante shold be embold sue god
ordyned better for the kynges welshe of england for w
that churgh furd & dische of the schawmen & that chur
gh lashing of the pope and of the count of comen the forsaide
covenante were discha & lye of. And in the same yere
the kyng moved by his wyl & discrete counceill the staple
of wullen out of flandres in to england with all the li
bettes franchises and for customes that longen ther to &
ordyned in england in diverse places that is for to say at
Westmynster Caunterbury chichester byrsto & lyncolne hulle
with all the forsaide chynge that longen ther to

in the year of the
reign of Edward I
the first of the
month of June
the king of France
sent to the king of England
the following letter

¶ And that this chynge that shold thus be done the kyng
I don him selfe ther to and prince Edward his sone by
th othyr many grete witnesse that ther were present
¶ And in the xxx yere of his regne ynone after Wyfson
day in the parlement ordyned at Westmynster it was tol
d and cerified to the kyng that philp that tho helde the
kyngdome of france was dede and that Johan his sone
was crowed kyng & that this Johan had yene karoll his
sone the duchie of guylene of the which thiglynged was
whe he wiste ther of had grete indignaci on to his & was
wonder wroth & strongly ymewed And ther for a fore
all the worthy lordes that there were asschid at that p
lince he called edward his soe on to his to whe the duche
of guylene by right heretage shold lye to & pafe it his the
re bydynge and stretchyng him that he shold ordyne him

1199
6.4.0
6.2.7

Edw 3.

to defend him and smygge him by his enemies and save
e make his rige And after that king Edward his selfe
e his eldest son Edward went to diverse places e set
to in Englonde on pilgimage for to have the more helpe e
grace of god and of his knyghts and the in hal. of July
Wher all thing was ready to the biage e battail and all
his retinue and power assembled e his name also redy to
to the with him the Erle of Hereford the Erle of southe
the Erle of Salisburie e the Erle of Ounford and a
men of armes and as many archers e in the nation of
our lady to the ships at. Pl. ymmoneth e legons say
le II And wher he come was arrived in Gubinne by
a other worshipful toke and espyed of the most noble
men e lordes of that countie And anon after king Edward
ard toke with him his knyghtes that is for to say Sir Ro-
nell Erle of Ulster e Sir Johan his brother in law of Richerd
e Sir Henry duke of Lancastrie with many other lordes and
men of armes e in. M. archers and sailed to Wardmur
e e visited his a while at Calice e all ward the king went to
ich his folk a foraid e with other somours of he yonde the
see that the abode the kinges comig the secod day of noue-
ber e which is iornay to ward king John of France the as
he intended to have founde his fast by Oromasum as his lres
e eduenawre made mencio that he hold abge hyn then by
ch his host and the king John of France had of the king
ges comig of mglad he went a way with his me e camage
to Wardle e shafte lye e. Vastig all viuals out the
the glisome shold nat have the of And when king Edward
ard heard tell that he shold be pursued his with all his cost
all he went e the he shold dig the Vastig e the lant of Vi-
tail the also the wardise of the king of France he turned ag-
in Vastig all the e drey and shill all other chiges by a
yng the socer prync e he nyght toke the toue of the vil

(knyng him that wistode him & na may elles but that god
 god the castell neuer latter was saued & kepte by englyss
 maye the were the yn the knyng purposed all the
 turned agene into Englonde as woche as he myghte to
 befor in plement at Westmynster was graunted to the knyng
 of every sake of wote l. shilling during the tyme of vi.
 yere that he myghte the myghtestlye fyghe and defende the
 same agens the scoche & othe myddes. And so when
 all the knynges were wdy the knyng fasted him to the sege ward
 How knyng Edward was crowned knyng of scotland
 a how prince edward to be the knyng of france & sir phi
 lip his yonger. lone at the bataille of presters ca. xx. yre
 and in the xxvi. yere of his regne the xiiij. day of Jan
 uary the knyng in the castell of Berwyke with a few
 men but haung ether faste by a gowthost the toun was
 polde to him without any maner defence or disencle the
 the knyng of scotland that is for to say sir Johan baillof
 considering to what god did many meruailles & gracious
 thinges for knyng Edward at his owne wyllfro day to day
 he tolde and pafe by the name of scotland & the crowne of
 scotland at robesburgh in the knynges honde of englonde
 vnder his pater noster ther y made & anone after knyng ed
 ward in pater of all the palaces & dworch mē & lordes
 that then were he crowne him knyng ether of the name of
 Scotland. And when all the knynges were wdy
 And ordyned in eplie contens at his last he turned aye
 ne in to Englonde with an huge burthen And while
 this biage was a knyng in scotland he Edward prync
 of Wales as a man enuynd in god was in gnyng in
 the cite of burdwy creyng & spilling of the chalyce
 of the kynges righte of englonde that he had of the rā of france
 & that he wold ouercome the wyche fro the hōd & the palat
 yres & myghty men of that cite consided well to his

now just edward
Edward to the king
Edward to the king
Edward to the king

1357
Sir Edward the prince with a great host of good men to his
the fifth day of July went from Burdun going and
travelling by many diverse countries and he took many
prisoners more than vi. M. men of arms by the way as
he journeyed and took the towns of amontaign in saloigne
And besieged the Castell vi. dayes and at the vi. dayes on
the day of the Castell by him And then went to take
the lord of couene and Sir Bursingand and many other
knights and men of arms more than lxxx. And two of them
by some of the fast by chineney his noble man that were
with him had a strong battle with schallmen a n.
C. of his men of arms slain And the Earl of Daill
re and the steward of France were taken with an C. men
of arms And the which was the viii. day of September
fast by night the saint Pante with a M. of horse
and men of arms and archers ordered a battle to King
John of France coming to the prince Ward with vi.
M. chosen men of arms and other much people in an huge
passing number of the which the was slain the duke of
Burbon And the duke of Arches and many other no-
ble men And of the prince men of arms a grand Of o
other after the first battle and returning viii. hundred
And the king of France was taken and Sir philip
his young son and many dukes And noble men and vi.
other knights And men of arms about ii. M. And so
the victorie fell there to the prince And to the people of En-
gland by the grace of god And many that were taken pris-
oners were set a free man And upon his strength ad-
vancing were charged and had him to go But the pri-
nce with him to the king of France And philip his
son with all the military that he might And went a pri-
nce to Burdun with a glorious victorie The foume of the
men that were taken prisoners And of the. Men that were

slayne the day of bataylle Was iiii. M. iiii. C. xl. And in
 the xxviii. year of kyng Edward the 3. day of may Prin
 ce Edward with kyng Johan of fraunce & philipp his son
 & many othir Worth psoners arrived graciously i the
 haven of plymouthe & the xxviii. day of the same moeth
 about ii. after none they comen to london by london brigg
 & so wenten forth to the kynges palace of Westmynster &
 ther fell so gret a multitude & piers of peple aboute hym
 to behold & se the wonder & that riall sight that Dunces
 this for mydday till nyght they myght come to Westmynster
 & the kynges ransome of fraunce Was tayed & set to iiij.
 millions of scutes of Whom ii. shold be Worth a noble and
 ye shul understonde that a myllion is a M. M. & after so
 many his ransome Was sette a iiij. M. M. floryns & all
 is one in efface And this same year Was made solempne iu
 lies smethfeld kyng ther presente the kyng of Englonde the
 kyng of fraunce & the kyng of Scotland & many othir W
 orth & noble lordes At the xxviii. year of his reigne the sa
 me kyng Edward at Wyndesore as well for love of kny
 ghthod as for his owne Wurschip & at the reuerence of the
 kyng of fraunce & of othir lordes that Were there at that
 tyme he held a wonder riall and costely the fest of seint ge
 orge passyng any that ever Was holden afore Wherfor The
 kyng of fraunce in somyng said that he sa We neuerne herd
 such solempne festes ne riall as holdyne done with caples
 without payng of golde or siluer and in the xxxiii. year of
 his reigne the xiiii. Dal. of July he Johan erle of richmond
 kyng Edwards sones Wedded Dame Blanche duke Burie
 is daughter of Lantastre whyn to the same Johan by dispe
 sacion of the pope & in the next tyme Weterdred Ju
 lies at london iii. day of the magnans that is for to say
 the more of london with his xxiii. aldermen agens Al
 that hold came in Whos name & sette the kyng priuel & with

The xxviii. year of
 the reign of Edward
 the third
 the xxviii. year of
 the reign of Edward
 the third

Edward 3.

34
36. 7/35?
his iiii. sones Edward Leouell Johan & Edmond & othe
yng grette herdes helthen the fel'd wich Butship & this same
yere as it was told & said of hem that so we it shal come on
the 15th of the month of thomas some tyme Erle of Lancast
er as fast as the day that he was to dwelle And in the
same yere King Edward chose his sepulchre & his lyngg
at Westmynster fast by the shane of seint Edward And a
none after the vii. day of October he went out for to call
ye malignyng prouocacion that he wold neuer neuer come a
yne in to Englonde till he had full ended the Wars betwix
Fraunce & him And so in the yere vi. yere of his regne In
the Wynter tyme lyng Edward was & cruellid in the
Viquewester & aboute seint hpland & he departed his hos
te & went to Burgoigne Ward wich whom than met he
fithly the Duke of Burgoigne who yng him lxx. thousand
floryns that he shold spare his men & his peple. & the King
gumind at his request & durled them to the vii. day
of marche the which tyme come to King Edwardes that
strange theues on the se Under the Erle of seint poule the
vi. day of marche liggng a wayte vpon the townes of Has
tynge Rye & othe places & Villages on the se coste haddyn
entred as enemyes in to the toune of Wyndesore & shew
all that euer Wyndesore hem & Wichlaid her compnyng W
herfor the King was greatly meued & wached & he tur
nyng open to parisward & commaunded his hoste to fith
ye & the wich dyne & strengch of fithed hem that he had
before hand & spared & the xii. day of April the King co
me to paris & there he departed his hoste in diuerse parties
to wich iiii. C of knyghtes ne he dubbed on that one fith
of him & he Henry duke of Lancastre Under this & the
Went to the pates of the cite pufyng to hem that wold a
byde a tannell in the fel'd Under such condicion that if the
King of Englonde were ouercome there as god forthe ge

Edw. 3

that they shold neuer challenge the kyngdome of Fraunce
 And whiche had of him due assent & a. scornfull answer
 to telle it to the kyng & his lordes. Whiche he had hard & whiche
 they said. And then forth the newe kyngs whiche many
 othe making assent to the cite to the destruction. Longely
 the subvertes of the cite. And while alle these thynges
 was a doing the Englishmen made him a wyde to be
 named. By the name of a. despite that was done that year
 at. Bachelors and ordyned a name of lxxx. shippes of m^e
 of London & of othe marchantz. & viij. thousand of men
 of armes and archers & went and shered & shymmed.
 the sea and manly to the helpe of the Isle of Caye. Wherefor
 the fransmen that is for to say the abbot of clunye the Er
 le of Thaukerulle and barlpygand that they was. Scir
 ard of f. m. and many othe men of the same countre by
 comune assent of the lord charles that was wyene
 of Fraunce they hastid him & went to the kyng of england
 assaying & shewing him sturfast wile and everlasting upon
 wiche condicions that there were the wid water the whiche
 the when the kyng and his counail had seen it pleased him
 near a lile but for it was to be none othe in. time of the
 ar. accorded and shewacion the fransmen helpe and w
 ich grete in fraunce as was in w. For her costis and the
 kyng graunted him. And in the mor
 he after the day of pasche the kyng turned his wyche his
 hastid to Bordoune and shewing and wisting all the co
 ste by the wyche. And as they wenten chidder ward the
 fell upon him such a storme and tempest that none. Of
 our nacion hard ne sawe none such churgh the whiche
 thousandes of our men and of his horses in her. Donne
 ping as it were churgh. Donne so duntly were shap
 a. pressed the whiche tempest full much yet fered not the
 kyng ne moche of his wyche that they ne wenten forth. In

15
Edw 3
The bishp that they had beyond wherfor about the first of
holys mod day in may fast by Incarnacion the forsaide bishp
of France meeting the bishp the king of Englund a
pysch accord & a small byn treyue condicions & guals
was articulerly gadred & wate to gowernours for to
last full dyscretly made & to with apuzes possibill & to
for wantes both with our assent of charles the agent & of
gouernour of France & of the prynces of the same name & of
then & made. Under the of weneu the & bishp of May
they of fard & poford to the king of englund & guals by
guals in all the pnces wiche that wold bynnyng & amite
hem & hold hem ferme & stable to hem & to his heirs for
uer more thyns forth the which the pnces & articles whiche
Edward had seyne hem he guals he for that both pnces
shold be & wome on goodes body & on the holy euangelys
that the forsaide weneu shold be stablissed & so they des
corded glaciouly. Therefore the weneu ordyned & dressed
every side h. lantion. lantion & h. lantion to admit and
worne the othes of the lord that is agent of France & of the
Edward of Englund. And the day of may the weneu
gen & folmpne masse or parve after the ih. Agnus dei
sege with dona nobis pacem in pasence of the forsaide men
that weneu ordyned to admit & worne the othes & of all
or his that ther myght be. The same charles weneu his kygge
bond on the parve with goodes body & his life bond on the
missall & seide. We. N. f. weneu on goodes body & the holy ges
pelles that we shall enly & shodfastly hold & weneu be
the pnes & the accord made by weneu the h. lantion & in no
maner to be the weneu & the weneu all his lordes for the
more but & fteiges of weneu. And & apard the weneu
of the crown of the castle to the lantion of Englund and
the weneu to the h. lantion in the fustay weneu the same
maner & the pasence of the forsaide lantion and of othe

21

But when he the belighan the to kep & old odyr & duens
untz that were the were he y or signed & in this same yre
menys bestes ones & housing with fode & rest & stronge ligh
dring were prissed & ex druell apped to be in many
likensse to moche peple as the were in diuise places in
the cotes & (pote to ben)

How the grete companie aros in frace & the whis
te companie in lumbardie & of many othir meruaille

ping Edward in the xxxi yere of his reygne
his wyue auone after castmasse in the fest of courent
on of seint poull hito his plament at Westmynster in the wh
liche was put forth & the whiche acord & the tounes that w
as stablissed & y made the were the n. knyghtes the whiche
acord pleased to moche peple & therfor by the knyghtes coma
ndement the were gadred & come to gedem in Westmynster the
the first sonday of iune that is to say the h. cal of seint
et the forsaide englissmen & fawsshmen when was longe a
masse of the reynite of the Erchebisshop of couterburie mai
sir simond Asp & when Agnus dei was done the knyghte
ping the with his sones & also with the knyghtes sones off m
un & othir noble and gret lorde with chawdels y lichte &
erousses y brought forth all that were called the to that w
as not sworn afore & borne that same odyr that was done
by ypo goddes body & on the masse bolle in this wise we
N. r. N. / When ypo holy goddes body & on the gospelles the
fastly to hold & kept to ward be the pres & the accord y ma
de the were the n. knyghtes & neuer fer to do the cōmune and
the the had thow y borne they wold hit seyn was that
hit othres were cōpounded in to the notuns & this same ye
in the ascensioe out about midday was seyn the Eclipse of
the son & the folk wold saych a drouge that for default of w
ne the was gret harnesse of true feue & by & I the sa
mo neeth the viscal of Juyne the fill a sang wyne mge

17
 18
 19
 20
 21
 22
 23
 24
 25
 26
 27
 28
 29
 30
 31
 32
 33
 34
 35
 36
 37
 38
 39
 40
 41
 42
 43
 44
 45
 46
 47
 48
 49
 50
 51
 52
 53
 54
 55
 56
 57
 58
 59
 60
 61
 62
 63
 64
 65
 66
 67
 68
 69
 70
 71
 72
 73
 74
 75
 76
 77
 78
 79
 80
 81
 82
 83
 84
 85
 86
 87
 88
 89
 90
 91
 92
 93
 94
 95
 96
 97
 98
 99
 100

1
 2
 3
 4
 5
 6
 7
 8
 9
 10
 11
 12
 13
 14
 15
 16
 17
 18
 19
 20
 21
 22
 23
 24
 25
 26
 27
 28
 29
 30
 31
 32
 33
 34
 35
 36
 37
 38
 39
 40
 41
 42
 43
 44
 45
 46
 47
 48
 49
 50
 51
 52
 53
 54
 55
 56
 57
 58
 59
 60
 61
 62
 63
 64
 65
 66
 67
 68
 69
 70
 71
 72
 73
 74
 75
 76
 77
 78
 79
 80
 81
 82
 83
 84
 85
 86
 87
 88
 89
 90
 91
 92
 93
 94
 95
 96
 97
 98
 99
 100

almost like bld at burgole & a sag wyne crosse for morn
 by to pme was p seyne & appered at solbigne in the rite
 the which maug a ma sa w & after it meued & fill i the mpy
 to see & in the same time in frace & in englod & in ocher ma
 nglad as they that were i pkyne cōrtres & dferet lare w
 ienesse fodely ther aoped n castels of the which were oute
 n hostes of armed mā & that one oost was cheked & held i
 white & that ocher in bla ke & when battail bit wene hem w
 as behd us the white outcome the bla ke & anone after the bla
 ke to be hre by to hē & overcome the white & a lē that they
 were apene in to hir castels & than the castelles & all the ho
 stes banysshed a way & in this same yere was a grete and a
 hōge pestilence of peple & namelpe of mē who wyse as wis
 men oute of gouernā to lēy houe bōks as wel stragiers
 as ocher lēd & slyt peple the wh ch forpytting hir o wne
 honour & wne shype & lēre che coupled & married hem with hē
 that were of hō be digne & lēdell reputaciō in this same y
 died hēre duke of lancaster & also in this yere ed ward pil
 as of wallas wedded the cōsse of hēre that was sir thomas
 wyse holden the which was departed souer tyme & druyd
 for the erle of salisbury for cause of the same lūggh & abou
 in this tyme lūgā & a lēre a grete cōpanie of diuise uacids
 gadied to gedm of whō hir lēdres a gouernours were En
 glish peple & they were chepid a peple without an hēre the w
 hich did moche harme i the pte of frānce & noe lōge af lēre
 a lēre a grete cōpanie of diuise naciōs that was called
 the white cōpanie the which in the pte & gēms of lūlardye
 did moche for the this sate yere sir John of gaulte the sone of
 lūng ed ward the in was made duk of lancaster by wsonad
 cause of his wife that was the dought & hēre of hēre some
 tyme duke of lancaster
 Of the gēms wynde & hō wynde ed ward to be chepid shyp of
 gūghene of his sate & wēre chepid

CC. xxij

Edw. 3.

And in the xxxviii. yere of. kyng edward the y^e day
 of Januar that is to say on feint maides day abou
 te enesong tyme ther amos & come such a Wynde oute Of
 the south With such a fersenesse & strengeth that he brast ad
 ble the tounes to grounde high houses & stronge bildynges to
 ure churches & steeles and othir stronges & all othir str
 ge Werkes that stoden stille Weyn shalle. ther With That
 the y^e bene yie & shull be enermore the febler & weyker W
 hile they stode and this Wynde lasted without any as
 syng vii. dayes continuell and anoue after ther folowed su
 che waters in they tyme & in herneft tyme that alle folde W
 erkes Wem stronghly lictre left vndone & in the same. yere
 prince Edward toke the lordship of gwynne and did to
 kyng edward his fader foute & homage ther for & Wene on
 see in to gascogne With his Wife & his children & ane aft
 kyng edward made fir donell his sone duke of. Clarence
 & edmons his othir sone Erle of cambrigg. ¶ And in the
 xxxviii. yere of his regne it Was ordeyned in the plemene
 that men of the We bothe of the temple & of holy church sh
 We fro that tyme forth shold plete in hir moder tunge and
 in the same yere comen in to Englond the kynges that is for
 to seyne the kyng of scotland the kyng of cyprus. & the kyng
 of Sweland by cause to visite and speke With the. kyng
 of Englonde of Whom they Wem wonder Welcome and mo
 che y^e Wurshipped & after that they had be here longe tyme
 of hem Went ayeue home in to hir owne countres & kyng
 domes but the kyng of scotland thurgh grete sikkenesse and
 maladie that he had let still in englonde and in the xxxix. ye
 re of his regne Was a strange & an huge frost & that lasted
 longe that is for to say fro saint andrewes eyde vj. to the
 xiiii. kal: of April that the tilth & sovyng of the yere &
 othir such felde wurkes and hand Werkes Wem moche let
 & lye by to for cold and hardnesse of the cress. And at

oray in bataigne that tyme was ordeyned a grette bataylle
tulle the wene sir Johan of moultre duke of bataigne
sir charles of blois due the victorie to the forsaide Sir
Johan thurgh helpe & socour of the englysshmen & there were
take many knyghtes & squyers & other men that were
noble in the which battail was slayne charles him self
with all that stood aboute hym & of the englysshmen were slay
ne but viij. And in this yere died at lanoy iohan the kyng
of fraunce whos service & requies kyng Edward the first
did in diuerse places wryth wrythfully to be done & to done
of wrythshipful men ordeyned hym wrythful to be ledde
with his owne costes & expens and from thence he was sette
in to fraunce & buried at seint denys In the xl. yere of kyng
Edward the first of feuerer was borne edward prynces
edwards sone the which when he was vij. yere olde he dy
de And in the same yere he was ordeyned that seint petrus
pene fro that tyme forth should nat be paid the which kyng
some tyme kyng of england & the countes of West Saxons
that began to wge in the yere of our lord C. lxxix. firste
granted to come for the soule of england ther to be con
nued And in this same yere ther fell so moche mayne i
hep
tyme that he wasted & destroyed both wyne and hep and
ther was such a debate and fighetyng of spawes by diuer
se places in these dayes that men founde innumerable
multitude of hem & in felde as they wenten and ther
felle also such a pestilence that neuer such was sene in no
mannys tyme & at tyme a lyue for many men anone As
they were go to bodde hole & i good wile so delly they tye al
so that tyme & gyltesse That men called the pestilence
bothe men and women thurgh hir infectyng And In
the xli. yere kyng Edward was how at Burgh Richard
the second sone of prynces Edward of england the which
charles kyng arthur of amoyce heued at honestone after
he was callid richard And this same richard when

his fader Was de & a kyng Ed Ward Was de also Was crou-
ned kyng of england the y^r of his age thurgh night
l put & thurgh & also by comune assent and desire of the co-
minallte of the reame About this tyme as kyng Ed Wardes
cōmaundement of england Whan all the castles & townes
Were sold to him thar linge Were sold in fraunce by a gre-
te compaignie assembled to geve the bartray chyldeyn knyght &
orped man and a good bartrayour Went & purposed hym
to put out Piero kyng of spayne out of his kyngdomes
ith helpe of the moste partie of the forsaide grete Compaignie
trustyng also vpon helpe & fauour of the pope for as moch
as it came to his tow that the same Piero shold be & be
the most worst and fustillst lye oute the which Piero &
mylen With drede of this tpydng fled in in to gascoyne.
to prince Ed Ward to haue helpe & socour of hym And Whan
he Was fledde oute of spayne being his brother the Was a
bastard by assent of the moste partie of spayne & thurgh hel-
pe of that fustillte compaignie that I speke of erthe Was made
& crowned kyng of spayne & the nombre of that same comp-
paignie Was reckened & seth at the nombre of lx. M. tyghelg
men this same yere in the moneth of Juny tar come a gre-
te compaignie & nauye of chivalers & gadred he to godes In
the north the purposing hym to come in to England to
Kenne and to robbe and also to slaye With Whom they con-
ced and mee in the see Mariners and other orped figher-
yng men of the countre and disparshid hym ¶ And they as-
sailed Were come opene in to hir owtcountre ¶ But a-
monge all other thet Was a boystons and a stronge vessel
of hir nauye thet Was oversailed by the

¶ Englishmen and Was perished And dregh In the
schep thet Ward & other worthye and good men of Samar-
ke Were take prisoners & by the kyng of england and bys
counaill & prisoned the which shal be the dace of Wardes

& fought all about for to haue had With her goodde. That
 they had lost & they not Well a paired ne pleased of the asuene
 that they had ben turned for Wardes apene leuynge & hyn
 they in her prynces pryncely & wath in scrobes & on walesper
 shall dancs wast eke wanes ch a haped eke an english W
 par & worte apes the danc in this maner Wif he shall
 dancs for her danc & in this tyme pierce kyng of spayne W
 Ich othe kynges that is to say the kyng of nauerne and the
 kyng of malaga kyng menes Wethen he were & prynced w
 will & helpe of sir edward the prynces thurgh wds edwill
 he had vnderstand his articles and that he was in
 quited of the kynges heche he was & aslamed to say nay &
 wnetane of one northelose he was a gaste list it shold be any
 pryncia agens the pope a longe tyme taded hem or that
 he wold graunte or consene ther to till he had better edwill &
 auisement With good deliberaciō of kyng edward his get
 at and his fader ¶ But when he was die euery dapes
 and courinuel bescheunges of many noble men & requy
 ad and spoken to and Wich many prynces & send and ma
 to die were hem chan prynces edward sent to his fader bothe
 by plynynge letters & also comfortable wntepynge all his
 suggestions and causes With all that othe kynges Epe
 lles and letters for to haue comfort & helpe of the wrons
 are not only to the kyng of spayne & do but also for
 such thynge as might fall to othe kynges Also yf it w
 in not the sonner to lynn and a mended thurgh the com
 helpe of kyngstode to hem that it asked & desired the whi
 the let wthan the kyng

¶ And his wife conuella had seyne And vnderstand
 he had gret compassion and heynesse of such a kynges l
 poynting and wobbng Wich much meruaille ¶ And send
 apene comfortable letters to prynces edward his sone & to
 that othe for said kynges & warred hem for to arme hem

& ordeyne him agene that myghter. & to Wicheford him by
 the byp of god that was such Exempes to knynges that
 this noble prince had ordeyned this letter him selfe by
 that othe knyngs before said alle his lordes called to god
 or that he wold. In Wicheford quene he wold a sure law
 the knyng that was deposed with a gude othe that he for
 law that he wold ever after magnifye the kyngs helthe & fo
 of holy church and holy church also. With all his myght
 freynghes & libertes to defende from all his enemies & all
 mysdo. And all that were his apertly to punyssh
 & trouble all the rightes libertes & privileges of holy church
 the merite and magnite & awerde & all thinge that were
 wrongfully broken. Wicheford he bore a day by him or
 by any othe by cause of him fully to restore open & to
 duyn and pnc on the lawes & all othe myghted pnc
 ouer of his kyngdome. With alle his strenges & to wer and
 suffer he admyte none such for no maner thing he cause
 to duelle ther in. And that when he had take a cristen woma
 he shold never come in none oth. Womans he shold never
 ne othe manys. By the to do. All the shold chenges
 the which for to be wnter was a fullp. as all his lye
 me he was bound by othe a for no maner in presence & to
 icence of the knyng. With othe princes. And that
 the gracious pnc & prince Edward shold take the cause
 and the quarell of the knyng that was deposed. & to bynde
 him. With the grace of god to restore him agene to his kyng
 dome and he ordeyne and gadre to gedre with his knyng
 last his. & auge. With myght of armes for to werre and fyght
 in this freland cause.
 And in this lachman by the shold of the scottis for the
 many a myght for to gedre ther. By law & by the
 that which shold be out of the south.
 And that othe ouer Of the North. And cravynge
 a frengly the fought to gedre and to myght to gedre.

497 75 mays Kido
 meama le qau y
 felle pa y skye m
 beada maim a qy

A.D. 1967

2

Item: of a C. M. And passing wth
her for the sharpnesse & ferrenesse of his aduersarye with his
full hostes & gude strenges made & driue the right full p
to a by a gude waye but church the grace of almighty god
passing any man's strenges that huge host wasdispleased mye

fully the noble duke of Lancaster & his host on that the prince
 Edward came nighing. And when Henry the lastard
 saw that he turned with his men in so good haste & stragg
 to that an longe company of him in the forsaide fild &
 of the druggs that of fildyn done & pressed. And also the
 Wen take the Erle of Arundel and Sir Laurence Belyngton
 Was chiefe master & cause of the Wren & also chieftayne of
 the Duke Ward of the battail. With many otheir good lordes
 & knyghtes to the nombre of two thousand of whom two
 hundred Wen of France & many also of Scotland and
 the Wen fild in the fild on our enemyes six of lordes &
 knyghtes with otheir men ype to the nombre of vi. thou
 sand & more of Englishmen but a few. And after this
 the noble prince Edward astound the same. Where in to
 his kynge dome agene the which piers after Ward thurgh re
 chure & falsensse of the forsaide lastard of spayne as he fete
 at his mee was strangled & dyd. But after this victorie
 many noble and hardy men & noble of Englund in spay
 ne thurgh the flight & otheir diuers fildensse tolen hit deth
 And in the same yere in the marche was seyn stella Co
 mado his Wene the northwestern and the Wiste whos Wenes
 stocched to Ward fraunce. And in the yere next faryng of
 kyng Edwardes wyue y. in. Apoll the Leonell kyng
 Edwardes sone that was duke of clarence Wene to Ward
 mylaine with a chiefe meyne of the gentils of Englund for
 to wedde calysa daughter and laue hir to Wyse by whom
 he shold haue half the lordshipe of mylaine but after that
 they were solemnely wedded. And about the Mari
 ee of our Lady the same yere off mylaine was And in
 the same yere the
 The fustmen breken the pte. And the er Bis. Wyndesore
 on the leuges ground. And lordshipe of Englund In the
 shire and countie of Pountef. And tolen & held. Castel

Engl. 3
Edw. 3

He and to make the Englishmen on bond falsely ad
foresay that they were cause of buryng of the earl of Arundel
this same year died the duchesse of Lancaster And is buryed
and worshippfully in saint pauls church ¶ The yllur pees
of king Edward was the grete pestilence of men
of grette bestes and by the grette fallng of beastes that fi
ke at that tyme that was grete synnynge & destroyng. Of
whiche so muche that the next year after a bussell of whees
was sold for xl. pence ¶ And in the same year aboute the
laste ende of may king Edward held the his parliament
at Westmynster in the which parlyament was created a spott
of the orche and the earl of Arundel was broght before him and
the king of France and so by the myghte upon his wronge
he auenged In this same year in the Assumpcion of our
lady dyed Quene philipp of England a full noble & good
woman and at Westmynster full worshippfully is buried
& entred and aboute mydsomer the duke of Lancaster And
the Erle of Hereford with a grete compaignie of knyghtes we
ny in to France wher they gotte hem due a littell worshipp
& name for that was a huge oost of frenschmen upon chalk
hull brigge & an ocher hoste of Englishmen fast by the sa
me brigge that longe tyme had layne there and many worz
thy men & grette of the Englishmen ordyned a grette wyll
for to fight and geue battail to the frenschmen. But
the foresaid lordes wold no thing consente that to be affer for
no maner thyng

¶ Then anon after it hapned that the Erle of Warwick
came thider ward for to serve and when the frenschmen
hard of his comynge Or that he come fully to land they
left his tentes and pavilions with all his viualles And
fled & went away pryncely & when the Erle was comen
to land with his men he went in all hast to ward Norman
die & destroyed the Isle of Arundel churche dyne of / Ward and

the earl of Arundel
was buried in
saint pauls church
the 10th day of
may

eschuyr sir huc Gylas in his abouryng to Englund &;
brothre apert at calys he was take with hymselfe of pesti
lence & died not luyng behynde him after his sayes so no;
he a kynge & dyed of armes ¶ In which tyme reigned
a herod child: orde luynghe sir Johan la Wile Wode that
was an Englishman borne luyng with him at his gouer
nauour chylde: which companie that is a for y nempued ch
which o tyme apens holy church & an othir tyme apens
lorden Werd and ordeyned gite lathelles & eht in the
wnter he did many meruoullous thynges & about the co;
uersion of seint paul the kyng when he had ended & due the
encheuing & the requies with gite coster & nathas about the
sepulchur & luyng of quene philip his wif he held his p
lement at Westmynster in which parliament was ayed Of
the clergie a chur pntis dymme that is for to seyne a gite dy
me to be paid in yea during And the clergie pue it of and
Wold not graunted by to Ester next comyng & eht they
graunted Wold that in iij yea by certeyn termes that dis
me shold be paid and also of the lay fee was a iij yeres &
y graunted to the kyng.

¶ How sir Robert knolles with othir certeyn lordes
of the reame went ouer the see in to fraunce and
of his gouernance Ca. CC. xxxiii.

¶ And in the y. l. v. yere of kyng Edw. 3. in the begyn
nyng kyng Edw. 3. with byse counsell And
vndiscrete boorded a gite somme of gold of the prelatz lordes
marshall & othir rich men of his reame seynge that
it shold be dispended in defendyng of holy church and Of
his reame nauerthe howe it profited nouze What for about
mydsomer after he made a gite host of the bestest men of
his reame Amonges which Wem some lordes that go for
to say the lordes Wem and the lord graunson and othir
Barth luynghe of which luynghe the kyng ordeyned sir

Robert Knolles a proued knyght & a well affaired In de
 of armes for to be gouernour & that thurgh his counsell ad
 gouernaunce all thing shold be gouerned & dressed and w
 dy they were in to France as longe as they duelled & hel
 to him to be to geue the franshmen durst not fall vpon him &
 at the last about the beginning of Wynter for enue & que
 tize that was amonges him & also discorde they found. &
 parted him in to diuerse companies In Wysely and folly.
 But fir where Knolles & his men went & kepten him sauf
 withyn a castell in buraigne and when the franshmen saw
 that our me were diuided in to diuerse companies & places
 nat holdyng ne streghthug by to gedres as they oughe for
 to do they filled fersely on our men and for the moste parte
 toke him or shewen him & tho that they toke led with he pri
 soners And in the same yere pope Urban came fro Rome to
 Auinione for encision and cause that he shold accord and
 make ptes betwene the kyng of France & the kyng of englod
 for eustoms But allas our began his tates he died with
 lienes the xiij day of Iunij & was buried as for the ty
 me in the cardinall church at auinione fast by the high au
 tar & the next yere after when he had liueso his bones wer
 w taken out of the erth and buried ne bein the abby of se
 int Victor fast by marche of the which abby he was so
 many yeres addeed him selfe And in both places that he was
 buried in the be many good miracles done & wrought thur
 gh the grace of god almyghty to many a mannes helpe and
 to the worship of Almyghty god And after whom to be
 bed next and was made porphygore Cardinal. Desien
 that he was called phrengur In the same yere when
 of rimage abelid & fought agaynst the pnes as other times
 in gyltless did for god & his owne and mansones that
 they were not and so to be prynced Ed Ward which char
 ges were impossible and to chargeable wherof they turz

ued for him & filled to the kyng of france and Whyn prince
 Edward sa we this he was for chased & gaurd & in cur
 ryng hom ward agene in to england with four tharmys
 & fighing & grete assautes foughe with him & toke the for
 said cite and destroyed it almost to the ground & so we all
 that were founde in the cite & elan for diuerse sicknesses &
 mala dies that he had & also for default of money etc. he
 not myghte withstande ne take on his enemies he hidde hym
 agene in to england with his wife & his meyne luyng he
 hynde him in gascoygne the duke of lancaster & sir edmond
 Erle of Cambridge with other worthy & oerdm men of ar
 mes In the y^e vi. year of kyng Edward at the crismaun
 & sendyng of kyng Edward the kyng of Nauerne come
 to him to claugdon to cote with him of certayne chpyges
 touchinge his werra in normandie Wher kyng Edward
 had left certayne seges in his filds till he come agene But
 kyng Edward mighte not speke of that that he asked Of
 hym And so the kyng of nauerne with grete worship ad
 gatte pyses toke his leue & went home agene & about the be
 gynnynge of marche When the parlyme at Westmynster be
 as begonne the kyng asked of the clergie a subside of .l. m
 poude the which by a good consensment & by a general con
 uocacio of the clergie it was granted & ordeyned that ye
 shold be poied & payed of the sayd fee And in this parlyment
 at the request & assyng of the lordes in barons of men of so
 ly church the chaunceler & the iustice that were bishoppes.
 & the clerke of the pynce seal were named and put out of
 office and in their filds were secular men put in And While
 this parlyment lasted there came schampne embassadours
 sent fro the pope to the kyng of france & said that the
 pope desired to full fill his good assentes With leue But
 for all his comyng the pynce of his purpose

1373

¶ Of the beleegnyng of rochel & how the erle of penbry;
ke & his companie was ther y take in the haven with
spaynardes & al his vesselles ybrent Ca. re xxxv

(1373.)

¶ The 19 day of June kyng Ed Ward 14 the. yf 11.
yter of his wigne helde his parlement at Wyndesore &
yt lasted sue viij dayes to the parlymēt were sompned by
writ of men of holy church iij. bisschoppes & iij. abbottes Wy
thout any mo this parlymēt was tolde n for marchaūtez of
london of norwiche & of othir diuerse places in diuerse
chynge & poyntes of consayd that they were disamed of that
is for to say that they were wille & wolde use agēs the kyng
this samē yter the duke of lancastre & the erle of cambrige
his brother comen out of gascoygne to england & token
wdded hit to wifes & daughters some tyme kyng of
frayne of which ii. daughters the duke had the Elder & the
Erle the yonger & that samē tyme they were fine ii. cardys
nals to the pope that is to say an englysh Cardinal & a
cardinal of paris to care of pres bit were the ii. wames
the which wlen they had bene both longe tyme in his pynnes
& in places in contres fast by cōsepyng of the forsaide pres
at the last they toke with h in her lēz of pcuracio & went
apone to the court of Rome Ward without any effect Of
hir purpose in this yter also the was a strong bataille on
the see bit were Englyshmen & flammynges & the englysh
men had the victorie & token x. ships & charged Wyth
sate slayng and breching all the men that were ther yn.
Du Wythpug beny that they were of that contre And redly
moche harme was doon by cause that of ne had pres and accord
the Idner bit were beny And in this samē yter the fransh
men to sege the towne of the Rochelle wherfor the erle of pe
brylle was sent in to gascoygne wile a good companie of men
of armes for to withste the sege the which passed the see ad
men sauf to the haven of Rochelle & wher they were there

at the haven mouth or that they myze inter so dely with
pon hem a stronge nauye of spayne the which overcome the
the englishmen in moche blampisynge hurtynge & fleynge of
many persones for as moche as the englishmen were na t
than wyde for to fight ne was of hem & in the couynge v
pon of the spaynardes all the englishmen othir they were ta
ke or slayne & y of hem were wounde to the deeth a all the
shippes y shone & the the toke the erl with a huge exfo
ur of the name of england & many othir noble men also
mysfomer tven the which is seint Edmunde day & leden
hem with hem in to spayne And of this meschif was no
gret wonder for the erl was a full euill lyeuer as on o
pen lechous & also in a contrarye parlymee he stod & was a
pynst the rightes & franchises of holy church And also he
counsaillid the kynge & his counsell that he shold as more of
men of holy church than of othir ysones of the lay see and
for the kynge & othir of his counsell acceped & toke the
well opinions & causes agynne men of holy church & they did
for to defende & magnify the righte of holy church it was
fene many tymes after for lake of fortune and gress they
had not no less a wyse so gress victorie ne po were agens his
enemies as they did & for this same yere the kynge with
a gress hoste entred the se to remeue the sege of rochelle but
the wynde was euery contrarye by to him & suffred him not
longe tyme to go fress the land wher he alode a grete
pyn & me I pou the see costis abydynge afayr a good tyme
for him & yis comit is not so of the last he comit thes wyth
him y to lsd wasd apout & anon as he was a londe the
wynde bega to turne & was an othir wyse that he was afayr
How the duke of laudre with a gress hoste wyte
in to flandres & palied by paris church burgois and
thurgh al fransetel he come to burdeng ca te p r r bi

1 One after in the y^e viij. y^ere of the regne of kynge ed-
ward the duke of Lancaster with his great host went in
to flandres & passed by parisburgh burgogne & thurgh
all fraunce till he come to Burdeux without any maner.
Withstandyng of the frenchmen & he did hem but litell har-
me save he took & ransomed many places & townes & many
men & let hem after gone frely ¶ The same y^ere the kynge
sent certen embassadours to the pope prayyng him that he
shold leve of & medle not in his cure of the keepynges &
reservacions of benefices in Englonde & that the that were
chefe to bisshoppes seis & dignites shold be with full right
myght Joy & have as he confermed to the same of hir metropolitanes &
Archbisshoppes as they were wont to be of olde
tyme. Of other pointes & of other touchyng the kynge & his
counseil whiche they had hir answer of the pope the pope enjoin-
ned hem that they shold certifie him agene by hir lres of the
kynge's wylle & of his name or they shold be deemed ought of the
foresaid articles In the same y^ere died Johan the Archbissh-
opp of yorke Johan bisshopp of Ely William bisshopp of
Wurcestre In whose steddes folowed & were made bisshoppes
by auctorite of the pope master Gylsaundre newell to the es-
chebisschopp of yorke Thomas of arundell to the bisshopp-
riche of Ely & sir Henry Wakefeld to the bisshoppiche of Wur-
cestre In the which tyme it was ordeyned in the parlyment
that all Cardinall churches shold Joy & have hir electiōs
frely & that the kynge two that tyme after ward shold not
interfere hem that were y^e chesmen but rather helpe hem by his
lres to hir confirmaciō And this statute was kept & dyd
much profit & good ¶ And in this parlyment was graun-
ted to the kynge a disme of the clergy & y^e B. of lag for the
next y^ere after of kynge edward y^elde y^e B. day of Jun-
ne died master William Wyllespe archbisshopp of canturbury
Wherfore the monkes of the same church asked & desired a car-

Edw. 3.

duall of england to be Ercebisshop & therfor the kyng w
as agreed & had ment & purposed to haue cōfirmed the mōz
ked of the same hous & so they payded moche good or they
myght haue the kynges grāce apene & his loue but yit wo
ld the kyng nat consent nā grāte to his election of the car
duall ne the pope also ne his cardinals & aboute the begi
nyng of august it was tēted & spoken at brugges Of ar
teyn pointz & articles laupng hit wene the pope & the kyng
of england & this tēpys last all most in pte at the last it w
as accorded hit wene hem that the pope shold that tyme forth
shold not vsane dele with the tēseruacions of benefices in e
glōd & that the kyng shold nat grāce nether no bñfices by
his wite that is callad quam ipēdid but as conchpung the
Elections about sayd ther was no thing touchid ne do &
that was y wpted and ynt vpon certaynes elegles the w
hich rather supposed & hoped to be auauced & p̄moted to bis
shoprickes whiche they desired & couēted by the court of Ro
me rather than by any elections This same pte aboute cā
delmasse ther mette to gedres at burges many noble And
worthy men of both reames to tēte of pte hit wene the ii
kyngdomes & this tēpys lasted in pte with grāte ostēce &
hūge expēse of both peies And at the last they went &
depyed thens without any accord or offere The next pte
after the .l. pte of kyng edward in none of may beynge it
void & vacante the Ercebisshopricke of. Caunterbury
maister simond sudbery bisshop of london was made Er
cebisshope & maister William Curyney that was bisshop
of herford was than made bisshop of london and the bisshop
of lincōne was made bisshop of herford And this same tē
me in a certeyne tētis & speyng of pte tētis was taler
hit wene fraunce & england for mydsomer to iudsoner come
apene alle an fole pte & aboute the begynnyng of. Appril
the Duke of Britaigne with many other baron and other

Edward 3

Withynne of englond went over sea in to budaighe where he
hath had all his lust & for a purpose he had the forsaide cte
We be so fone y take the which letted hem moche this same
yeme the Ile of constantine where that the castell of seir sau
our is in that longe tyme was foughe at & besized of the
franshem was than golden to the franshem with all the a
pportenaunces in to gite harte & hpyndyng of the name of
Englond And this same yeme there was so gite & so pa
sng bnt the which all a gite pestilence in englond & in o
ther diuerse ptes of the world that it destroyed & shod bio
dunely & stronghelly bothe me & woman wicheoute nombre
This same yeme died sir edward the lord spruce a woz
the knyght & a bold & in the mynster of reukeburz wur
shipfully is buried & lastyng this pestilence the pope at the
instaunce & praiser of an englyssh cardinaill graunted to all
peple that dwel in englond that they were forye & wyte for hir
synnes & also shauen full remissid by h bullis vnder led.
vimonches that they were to last In this same yeme the Erle
of pembroke was take & mouned by harte man chpyghn
e went paris & callys as he come to ward englond vpon se
pnt pnt doreys day the which seme as it was said the sa
me Erle of the cymer had offended & wichein a while after he
died & in nouembre next after that mette at briges the du
ke of lincolne & the duke of angoy with many othe lord
dys & palatys of bothe names for to take of pte.

Of the deth of prince edward & of the lord latimer
adams aliter petes thurgh whom a hit maintenours
the same meny a day was misgouerned carter per nil
n

Of the deth of the lord latimer & of the lord laimer
he ordeyne & hold at westmynster the grettest plemet
that was for many a yere afore the which plemet be a red
of the commynall of the name as he had done & for a
subsidis he graunted to hym for defendyng of hym And

Edw. III

of his name but the commons answered that they were so of
a day by day growed & charged with so many talliages &
subsidies that they might no longer suffer no such burthens
& charged & that they kne Ben & Wille Well that the King
had p uo w for saupug of him & of his name yf the name
were well & truly governed but that it had be so longe
ned p governed by euell officers that the name might ne
chirchplentuous of chaffare & marchandize also with Ri
chesse And these thynges they proued homself if the King
wold certeinly to proue & shew by And if it were founde
& proued after that that the King had ned the wold tha
gladly euery men after his power & state him helpe & lene
And after this the were published & shew in the pla
ment many plaintes & fautes of diuerse officers of the re
ame & namelý of the lord schawer the Kinges Chamberla
ne both to the King & the to the name And also as the
last the was spoken & taled of dama Alice prou for the go
te wronges and euell gouernaunce that was done by hir &
by hir counsell in the name the which dame Alice prou the
King had hold longe tyme to his lammey wher for it was the
lesse wonder thought thurgh the swelw of the womannes ey
cureug & hir stering be conseutad to hir h wduesse & euell co
uncill the which dame Alice & also the lord schawer & o
thir such that staid the King to euell gouernaunce agens his
pfit & the names also all the cominalte ayed and desired
that they shold be meued & put a way & in hir stedes wyse
men & wozshy that were true & well assaid & proued &
of good gouernaunce shold be put in hir stedes so amonge all
other then was one amonge the commons the was a wyse
Knyght & a trewe & an eloquent man whos name was py
ers de lamore & this same piere was chosen to be spiker for
the commons in the parliamene And for this same piere
wold & published the trouthe and reformed the wronges &

Edward 3

pens the forsaide dame alie an othir ardyn psones & The
Kyngees counail as he Was boe by the edes And also cruz
fyrng moch for to be supported & mayntyned in this mater
by helpe & fauour of the prync anone as the prync Was &
de ac the in stanc & request of the forsaide dame. Alie this
piere de lamare Was Jugged to ppetuall prison in the ca
stell of Northyngam in the Which he Was ii. yere & in the vi
kal. of Juyll lastyng that same parlamente died prynced
Ward kyng Edward the fyrst sone that is to say in tynge
sonday in the Wurschip of Whichefest he Was Wone eury y
ere wher that euer he Were in the World to make and hold
the most solampnite that he myghe whos name & fortune of
kyngth & but yf it had he of an othir Ectour all men so
the cisten & hechen Whilk he luyed & Was in good point W
ouered moch & dmad him wonder how whos body is Wurs
hipfully & buried in Trichprech at cauterbury. And In
this same yere the men & the irles tenautes of Warrwyke
arise maliciously ayes the abbot & couer of instam & hir
tenautes & streied firstly the abot & the toun & wounded &
bet hir we & fllwen of him many one & wenten to hir ma
ners & places & did moche harme & broken dune her par
kes & hir closes & brennyd & fllwen hir Wylde bestes & Chas
ed hem brekyng hir fyllpounde hekes & lte the Water of hir
pōdes steeles & riuers rēne out & toke the fyll & here it Wich
he & did he all the harm that they myzt I so forsoch that
forsoch they had destroyed ppetuelly that abbot With al hir
meibtes & apportnallors but if the kyng the sōner & holpe ic
& take hed there to and therfor the kyng see his lre to the
Earl of Warrwyll chargyng him & comādyng that he
shold stie redressed & amended the euell doers & brekers of
his pes & so by manys of lordes & othir frādes of boche
sides pes a good awrd & but Was made sic bene hem &
prehis hurlpung as it has said the kyng Wolde. Mac 89

gouverned at that tyme by his lordes that ther were in the
pment but he toke a man his sone the duke of Lancaster
his gouernour of the reame the which stode so still as gouer
nour till the tyme that he deide The same yere anone after
canal masse or the plente was to the kyng asked a subside
of the charging of the lay fee & it was graunted him that ys
for to say that he shold haue of every persone of the lay fee
both of man & woman that passed yij. yere age iij. pence
outwite pence bidders that were kno we openly for nedg pec
ure bidders and that he shold haue of every man of helpe ch
urch that was benifited or promoted yij. pence and of othir
that were not pmoed iij. pence outwite take the iij. ordres Of
the fures bidders This same yere after withal masse richard
prince of Wales was made prince Of Wales to be
from the kyng yafe also the duchie of cornwall & the
lordom of chestre & aboute this tyme the cardinall of engl
land the iij. day before marie magdalene day after miche so
lenly was impoynted to take Wiche a palace & lost his speche
and on marie magdalene day he deide

¶ Of the dech of kyng Edward a sir iohan monester
with knyght was drawen & hanged for his fallenelles.
The iij. daye anone aft in the iij. yere of. E. 3. the viij.
kyng Edward the begynning of octobre pope grego
rie the xi. brouge & renewed his court with his fre aumid
to Rome the yij. day of apriil Johan monester with knyght
accond was drawen & hanged & a beheaded aft his body
quartered & sent to iiii. chief townes of england & his head se
t upon london brigg for this same Joha was full burs
er & to the kyng & to the reame & full covetous & instable
for he toke oftentimes grete somes of money of the kyng
& his counail for his of armes wages that he shold haue pay
ed be & wher to his & wher he deide that at the last
he shold be hanged & crucified for the same cause & put to the

kyng of fraunce & Was [Wor] to him & to come his man and
rehyght him a grette nauye oute of spayne in to confusion &
dstryng of england but ryghetfull god to Whom no priu-
te is vnkno we suffred him first to to stand & spile or thae
he so traitously & falsely his liege lord the kyng of Eng-
land & his peple & his name in the which grunde the same
Johan Was how Wyllkedy churgh bataille d'strope or brig
his cursede purpose aboute In the fest of seure gregorie the
next after kyng Edward pafe to Richard of Burdegh his
heir that Was prynced wardes soue at Wyndesore the or-
dre of kyngthode & made him kynghe the which kyng ed-
ward the Wyth he had regned lxxvii & more the xi. kal. of Jui-
ne he deide at shene and is buried Wurschipfully at Westmi-
ster on Whos soule god haue mercy Amen ¶ This kynged
ward Was for sothe of a passyng goodnesse & full gracious
amonge all the worthy men of the world for he passed & lio-
ne by vertu of grace y gone to him fro god aboue all his pr-
deffours that Were noble me & worthy & he Was a well &
a hardy lirted mā for he deide neuer of no mistayes ne har-
mes ne euell fortune thae myzt fall a noble Wernours & a
fortunat for both on lond & on see & in all batailles & ass-
bles Wicha passyng glorie & Joye he had euery the Victorie he
Was meke & kyngne homely sobre & softe to all maner of
me as well to strangers as to his owne subgettes & to othir
that Were vnder his gouernance he Was deuote & hol y both
to god & to hyl y church for he Wurshiped hal y & maintained
hyl y church & his mistres With all maer reuerence Was re-
table & well auised i trespall & wordly uices Wise cōsaill
discrete softe & meke & good to forke which i his deide a man-
ere full getill & well y taughte haug pite of hē thae Wer i
duse pletions i penyng bnfaites a masse hel y a curiose
i bildig a full lighel y he lere a sufred wredges a harmes a
Whe he Was yue to ampoynment hylse al othir thig for the

menes tyme & sent ther to semely of body & a mene. statur
haung all wey to high & to lowe a good chere & cher spran
ge & stoness moche graue of him that what maner man had
behold his face or had dreemd of him he hoped that day that
all thyng shold haue to him Joyefull & lykynge & he gover
ned gladausely his kyngdome by to his age he was lar
ge in peupug & wyse in spyns he was full yld wich altho
neste of good manere & veruees vnder whym to lye pe
was as for to regne wherfor his fame his & his sprange so
ferre that it come in to kenne & barbare for wyng & cel
lyng his worthinesse & manhood in all landes & that no
land vnder hie had broughe forth so noble kyng so gen
tile & so blissed or myghte wile such an oche he was &
de neuer the latter lachere an meupng of his flessh haun
ted him in his age wherfor the rather as it is to suppose for
by misurable full tyng of his last his lyfe shoud the so
ner. And hie of take good hede like as his & so before here
wieness for as in his begynnyng all thynges were Joye
full & lykynge to hym & to alle peple And in his myghte age
he passed all peple in high Joye wurship & blessednes so ri
ghe so wher he dwelle in to age dwelle dwelle thurze
lecherie & othe fumes lital & lital all the Joyefull and
blissed thynges & prosperite decreed and myshaped & in for
eunat thynges & vnpofitable crimes wich may welles
began for so to sprage & the more harm is it continued lye
go tyme after

And after kyng edward the iii. that was borue in
wynde sore regnes richard of burdeux that was hie
te edwardes sone of walpo which prince edward was
the sone of kyng edward Ca. duen quadragesimo

And all the good kyng edward the iii. that was borue at
Widfor wined richard the ii. that was the good stied

Edw. III

Richard 2. 13

Edward four prince of Wales which King Richard was
borne in the cite of Burdeuy in gascoyne & was crowned at
Westmynstre in the vi. yere of his age & in the second yere
of his regne for debaite that was betwene the lord Latimer
& sir Rauf feavers knyght that weren agens the well & sha-
ll squires for the prisoner that was take in the battail of
spayne by these knyghts & the which the lord Latimer & sir
Rauf feavers wold have had the which prisoner was the
Erle of Gene that they toke in the battail of spayne wherfor
these lordes comen in to the chireh at Westmynstre & found
this ouer squere bringyng his masse bese & same Edward the
fourth & ther they shew him the which was called the well and
shall was arrested & put in the tour of london & ther he was
as longe tyme for he wold not deliver the erle of Gene his
prisoner un to these lordes by sir Allyn bughill constable
of the tour And by sir Rauf feavers one of his aduersaries
till the king granted him grace In the xiiij. yere of King Ri-
chard come the galeys of fraunce in to england un to dy-
nerse portes bryne & robbed & shode moche peple of england
that to say at Wyndesore Kyng and bastynge portes mouche
hampton stromon & grauesend & dede moche harme And
went home agens And in this same yere was a parlyment
hold at Westmynstre at that parlyment was ordeyned
that every ymmer woman and child that weren at the age of
xiiij. yere and above thurgh out all the reame pore folke &
beside shold paye to the collage iiij. pence wherfor comen and
fell of the wardour masehuf and moche dysse to all the
wytne al of the Reame And in the iiii. yere of King Ri-
chard the Regent the communes arisen by in diuerse parties of
the reame & diden moche harme the which they called the hus-
bandrye & they of lene and of iltse made hym in cheue
to go to the goun the companie of kee & of iltse that on
was called the floure & the roche was with & they comen

assembled him vpon the blake heth in Kent & on the xxij
 of xiij day & after they comen thune in fute Werke and breke
 vpon the prison hous that is to say the huyges heth and the
 marchalke & deliuered oute all the prisoners And so the sa
 me day they come in to London and ther they toke the pe
 ple & shew all alientz that they myge finde in the cite ad
 aboute the cite & despoilled all hir goodes and made haue
 the And on the fufday nexte after that was on the morn
 & they come then to the tour of London and the king being
 therein they fee oute of the tour the Bischopp of Caunter
 bury sir Edmund sudbury and sir Roberte hales hospitaler
 priour & maistir of seint Johanes house & a white fare
 that was confessor to king Richard & broughte hem v
 to the tour and ther they smytyn off hir hed & come agene
 to London & shew moo peple of men of lawe & othe wo
 men in diuerse parties of the cite And then they wente v
 to the dukes place of Lancaster beyond seint marie ston
 w that was called the saup & ther they deuoured and de
 stroyed all the goodes that they myge finde there & burnt
 a way & brend vpon the place And then after they went
 to seint Johanne without smythesfeld & destroyed the good
 den ther & burnt vpon that hous and wente to Westmynstre
 & seint martins church and made hem gone oute of The
 seinte wane all that were within for any maner of greue
 And then they came vnto the temple & to aliothe priues of
 of law & despoilled hem & rebbed the of hir goodes & alio
 re hir hokes of lawe & thale they all to lode & brake vpon the
 prisone & brake oute all the prisoners felow & othe
 of bothe countours & all the peple that were within the &
 destroyed all the hokes of bothe countours And thus they conti
 nued bothe saterday & soday vnto the morn nexte aff
 in all hir maner & thale they all to lode & brake vpon the
 richard With his hokes that were within the cite &

With the marie of London William Walworth that was the
cyme com. With the aldermen & the comunces of the cite and
come in to southe Werke to see & to knowe the entencion of
these rebelles & mys-gouverned peple and this Jak Straw that
made a nyope chafard that all the peple of accord shold com
new & see his clamours and his crie and his Wyll. And
the king & the marie & the aldermen With the comynalte ha
ving indignacion of his couerze & falsenesse and his foule
presumpcion And anone William Walworth that cyme be
ing marie drew oute his knyfe and shew Jak Straw we
anone might ther did smyte of his hede and sette hit vpon a
speere shaft & so it was howe churgh London & set an high v
pon London brigg. Anone as thes rifiers & mys-gouverned
men were vnde and clene banysshed as it hadde nouthe be
they & than the king of his gude goodnesse & by praiser. Of
his lordes made them vi knyghtes of good & worthy men
of the cite of London that is to say William Walworth that
that cyme was marie & shew Jak Straw & the second was
as nicholas brebrie & in Johan philipoe & the iiii. Nicholas
Wiford & the v. Robert laundes the vi. Robert gayton.
And than the king With his lordes & his knyghtes & coun
nyngmen by to the towre of London & ther he rested hit till
peple were better sead and sett in reste and piers and
by prouesse of cyme as they myght get & take thes rebelles
and rifiers they heuge gem vpon the next gale wees in eu
ry lordship churgh oute the reame of Englonde by xl. s.
by xxx. s. and by vii. s. as they myght be gotten ad
taken in any parties & in the v. pere of king richard re
gne was the grete reche qual & was gnaly churzt oute the
Booke the Wednesday aft. Wednesday the xiiij. of our lord
mccc. lxxvi. Wher of all maner peple were for agast & died
full of grete for drede of begyn that our lord shewes &
did & the byrgen of the regn of king richard fithery spe

Here in the year of
Richard III. was
a sign in heaven of

at Bisschop of norwich Bane Wit a confessor out the set in
 to the count of flandres & that they gat the count of graue
 nyng and the count of broburgh dunstall & ne report and
 that they laded & fraught li. shippes with pelage for to haue co
 me in to england with these shippes & goodes And the Biss
 op of norwich and his counsaill lette banne these shippes &
 th all the pelage in the same haue all in to hard ellies & ac
 dunsterle Was done a gude bataille be we the flammynge
 ges & the englishmen And at that bataille Was slayne a
 gude multitude of these flammynge & an huge nobel and
 then went the Bisschop with his counsaill to yppes and
 beseged it a longe tyme but ye myght not be gotten and so
 he left that siege & come apene in to england for our englis
 hmen Were foull & stoned & many died on the flye And
 in this same yere come quene Anne in to england for to
 be spoused In to kyng Richard & her father Was Empour
 of almaygne & kyng of berre and with her come the duke
 of Tasse her vncle and many other worthy lorde And
 luyghes of hir count of berre and of other duche longes to
 to hir Reutenes and Wurschip And sir Simond beure was
 worthy luygher of the garter and other luyghes and luygh
 er was beure the kyng & Embassadours brought in to en
 gland and so forthe to lodon and the pyth of the cite that is
 say the marke and the aftermer & all the communis rid
 In opens hir to welcome hir and every man in good amys
 & every craft with his mynstrall he in the best maner me
 et with hir on the black berre in berre and so brought hir in
 to lodon thyngh the cite & so forthe In to Westmynster In to
 the kynges palys & there she Was spoused In to kyng ri
 chard Well and Worthely in the abbey of Westmynster &
 there she Was crowned quene of england And all the
 frendes there come with hir hadde gude yllas And there
 Well thend And Ressted a longe tyme as they abe

The Bisschop of norwich
 The Bisschop of norwich
 The Bisschop of norwich

And in this same yere Was a battaille Done In
 the kynges palays at Westmynstir for certeyn poines of law
 the Wicestre Johan anslip thughe defendanc & carton squp
 et appelaune but this fre Johan of anslip ouer come thys
 carton & made him to yelde him Wicthyn the lysters & anon
 wasthis carton dispoiled of his barneys & dwelt out of
 the listes & so forth to tiberne. And after he Was songed for
 his falschusse And in the viij. yere of the regne of King Ry
 chard the Edmond of Angelyerle of cambrigge the kynz
 ges such went in to portingale With a fair meyne me of
 of armes & requies in strugehng & helppng of the King
 of portugale agens the King of spayne & his power And
 after the King of portingale had the victorie of his enemyes
 church helpe & confort of our englissmen And when that
 Journey Was done the King of cambrigge come home agene
 With his peple in to englon d in haste blessed be god & vns
 gracious yf a amen. And this same yere King richard
 sold his castelle in the maner of Eleham And the same
 yere the King of ermore fledde out of his owne land &
 come in to Englon d for to haue socour & helpe of our King
 agens his enemyes that had driven him out of his reame
 And so he Was brought by to the King to Eleham wheras
 the King held his hall fest of cristmasse and there our King
 Welcomed him and did him moche reuerence and Wurschyp
 & wysmaundd all his lordes to make him all the chere that
 they coude And then he besoughe the King of grace & of hel
 pe & of his confort in his neede And that he myghe be bro
 ught agene to his kyngdome and londe for the curtes had
 drouyn and distroyed moche parr of his londe and for dre
 de so he fledde & come hidde for socour and helpe
 And the King shewd haupng pite and compassion Of
 his grette myschance and gaue him disese anone he tolde his w
 unwill and ofred what Was left to done And after answe

And a said yf he lyked hym to geve him any good he wold
 well y do and as touchyng his peple to cruell so for he
 to out lante it wold geve him a gude Iudic & so the kyng gaf him
 gold and siluer and many richesses yf he wold and
 he wold he him to god and so he passed agene out of england
 & in this same yere kyng Richard with a small po wer wold
 in to Scotland for to wite vpon the scottes for the falsenes
 se a destruction that the scottes had done vnto. Englissh
 men in the marches And then the scottes come done vnto
 the kyng for to entice with him his lordes for to be as
 for certeyne yeres And soon after kyng a his counail ge-
 nated him ere he wold certeyne yeres vnto the kyng and our
 kyng turned him home agene in to England & when he wold
 as come vnto yorke that he also a wold him then And
 then sir Johan teland the Erle of Bentles brother slod the
 Erles sone of slagford & he hit with a dagger in the Cite
 of yorke wherfor the kyng was sore amoured & grieved & re-
 meued then & come to lound And then maie with the alder
 men & the comones with all the sollemnite that myght be
 done vnder apens the kyng & brought him vnto the church the
 cite & so forth vnto Westmynster vnto his owne palace
 And in the 19. yere of kyng Richardis reigne he held a p-
 amee at Westmynster & ther he made ii. dukes & a marquis
 yere & v. Erles The first that was made duke was the
 kynges vncle sir Edmond of langley Erle of Cambrige
 and him he made duke of yorke

And his other vncle sir Thomas of Woodstocke that
 was Erle of Burghingham him he made duke of Glou-
 cester And his yonger brother was Erle of. Wyndesore him
 he made marquis of Dorchestre
 And Henry of Bolingbroke chad sone of Lancaster hit
 he made Erle of Derby And his Edward chad sone of y-
 orke him he made Erle of Rutland his Johan sone that

Was the Erle of Kendal brother him he made Erle of hūz
 tyn don Sir thomas monbray Erle of norwygham & Er
 le marchall of Englon And sir michell de la polle knyghte
 him he made Erle of souresolke & chawcelier of englon And
 the erle of the marche at that same parlyment holden at West
 mynster in plapne plemene amanges all the barons & com
 munes Was pelamed Erle of the marche & hit appane to
 the crowne of englon after kyng Richard the which Erle
 of the marche Went ouer se in to Ireland by to his lordship
 was & londes for the Erle of the marche is erle of Ulster yn
 Ireland & he knyghte lynes & heritage & ether at the castell of his
 he lappede tyme And ether come vpon him a gret multy
 tude in buffhemetis of wil d rishmen him for to take & s
 strowe & he come out for sely of his castell with his peple and
 manly faughte with hem & ether he was take & he we all to
 pise & ether he tye on Whos soule god haue mercy Amen.
 And in the y. the ym of kyng Richard was ague the Erle of
 Arundell Went by to the see with a gret naupe of shipes
 charmed with men of abmes & good archiers and when
 they come in to the bode see they met with the hole the the
 comen with Wyne y lade from Rochel the which Wyne were
 enmpes goodes & ether our naupe see vpon him & toke hem
 all & broughe hem by to diuerse portis & haues of En
 glon & some to londen & ether ym myghte haue had a toune
 of Rochel Wyne of the best for y:shyngster lynes & so
 he had gret chye of Wyne thurgh out the wame at that ti
 me thanked he god almyghty

How the v. lordes arisen at rattercolle brige

Ca. CC. xli.

And in the tyme of kyng Richard the y. ym the v. l. for
 to ansey at mewe brige in the destruction of whel
 the that Wary that tyme in all the wame ¶ The first of
 the v. lordes was Sir Thomas of Woodstoke the kynges

23152

Duch & Duke of Gloucester & the second was Sir Richard Erle of Arundell and the iii. was Sir Richard Erle of Warr. Wyke. Was Sir Henry Bolingbroke Erle of Derby the 4. Was Sir Thomas Mowbray Erle of Nottingham And the 5. Was Sir John de Mowbray & mysgouernance the falsenes of the Kingis will. Wherefor they that were chief of the Kingis will fled out of this land over the see Charles to say Sir M. Saunders Remell the Archbisshop of York & Sir Robert le Veez markeys of Devon & Erle of Oxford Sir Michael de la poile Erle of Suffolk. And chaunceler of England And these in lordes wenten over the see & come neuer againe for they were. And than these lordes about said made a parliame at Westmynster. And ther they tolde Sir Robert casiliham the Justice and Sir Nicholl Bembre knyght & Citizene of London and Sir Johan Salisbury knyght of the Kinges houshold & Viscount of armee & many moos of oother peple. They take a Jugged by to the see by the counsell of these lordes in hir plement at Westmynster for cause that they put bypon hem to be dremen from the town of London church out the Cite & so forth by to Ryburne & ther they shold be hangged and ther her troth was to be cut and thus they were serued and died. And after that in this same parliame at Westmynster was Sir Simond Burde that was a knyght of the garter and Sir Johan Beauchamp knyght that was Sir Ward of the Kinges houshold & Sir James Berners. They foringged by to the see with a ship they were laden for to the town hill & ther they were by the sayng of a man & other moos by these lordes. In this same parliame & in the yere of King. Richard's wyne he let crie & ordeyne a general Justice that is called a curiement of lordes knyghts and squire. And this Justice and curiement was holden at London in the church of all maner of strangers.

of What land or countre that ever they Were and chidde they
Were right Welcome & to hem and to all othir Was holden o
pen hofhold & greet feſtes & alſo greet giftes Were given to
all maner of ſtrangers And of the kynges ſide Were all
of ſait hir wore hir armours ſhelles ſore ſcampes and all W
as White breſtes Wich crownes aboute hir neckes & chaunces
of gold hauping thes Upon and the crowne hauping to be
for the breſtes body the Which breſtes Was the kynges lpuery
the he gave to ladies & ladies ſupghers & ſquiers for to be
his hofhold from othir peple And in this feſt comig
to the Juſtes xxiiij. ladies had thes xxiiij. ladies of the gar
the Wich chaunces of gold And all the ſame ſute of breſtes
as is a ſore ſaid from the toure an hofhold thurgh the cite of
London in to ſmythfeld thet the Juſtes ſhould be holden
And this feſtes & Juſtes Was hold general & to all the
the Wold come of What land & nation that ever they Were
And this Was hold during xxiiij. daies of the kynges
coſt & thes xxiiij. ladies to anſwere all maner peple that W
old come thet And thet come the Erle of ſeine pound
of fraunce & many othir Worthy knyghes Wich him of dy
uerſe ptes full Well armed & out of holand & hennaud co
me the lord Oſtreuante that Was the dukes ſone of holand
and many othir Worthy knyghes Wich him of holand &
full Well armed & Whan this feſte & Juſtes Was Ended the
kyng thanked thes ſtrangers & gave hem many greet gif
tes And thet they taken hir leve of the kyng & of othir la
dis & ladies and Wenten hom agene in to hir owne countre
Wich greet loue and moche thank And in the viij. yere Of
kyng Richardes regne thet Was a battail don in the kyng
his Paleys at Wiſtmyſter thet Were a ſquyer of Nuquer
re that Was Wich the kyng Richard and an othir ſquy
er that Was called Johan Walshe for pointes of treſon
thet this nauette purpoy this Walshe men but this na

137

herne Was over come & yeld him carriere to his aduersary
w. And anon he Was dispoiled of his armur & drem
oute of the palays to cilourne and there Was longed for hys
falsenesse And the yiii yere of kyng Richardes regne Sir
Johan of gaunte duke of Lancaster Went ouer the see in to
spayne for to challenge his righte that he had by his wyfestil
to vñ to the crowne of Spayne With a great host of peple Of
men of armes & archiers and he had With him the duchesse
his wyfe & his iij daughters ouer the see in to spayne And
there they Were a yere While And at the last the kyng of s;
payne began to tute With the duke of Lancaster & they Were
aworded to geve the churgher bothe gold & this maer that the
kyng of spayne shold wedde the duke daughter of Lancas;
ter that Was the righte hie of Spayne and he shold yere by
to the duke of Lancaster gold & siluer that weren cost in to
grette wigges & many ocher Jewels as many as viij.
chariettes myght carie And every yere after during the lyfe
of the duke of Lancaster and of the duchesse his wyfe x. M.
Mark of gold of which gold the auenture & charges they
of spayne shold auenture & byng yemly vñ to spayne to
the dukes assignes by furete made Also the duke of Lan;
castre married an ocher of his daughters vñ to the kyng of
portingale the same tyme & when he had done thus he come
home agene in to england & the good lady his wyfe also
bore many a bore by man vpon the flie in that viage died
And in the v. yere of kyng Richardes regne he held his
crismasse in the maner of Wodstoke And there the Er;
le of pembroke a yong lord & andie of age held hie
Juste With a knyght that Was called sir Johan seine Jo
han & riden to gide in the parke of Wodstoke & there this
bore by erle of pembroke was slayne With that ocher kny
ghts spres as he left yefrom him When they had myld
& thus this good erle made there his erle & therfor the hang

e the quene made moche sorow for his deche And in the vi
pet of kyng Richardes wyng Johan hende kyng that time
maire of london Johan Walworth & Henry Damer kyng
sherues of london that same tyme a bakere man had a bass
ket of horsbide in to flatter to Ward an hostre & ther was
me a poman of the bisschopes of salisbury that was called
Romayn & he tolde an horselste out of the basket of the
bakere & he asked him Why he did so & this Romayn turned
a gume & brake the bakere hys & nerygours come oute & wol
d have arrested this romayn & he brake fro him & fledde by
to the hors place & the constable wol d have him oute Que
the bisschopes men shew fast the pafers & kepte the place & no
man myghte enter And then moche more peple gadied thid
der & said that they wol d have him oute or elles they bringe
by the place & all that were wiche in & they come the mayre
& shewes wiche othe moche peple & assed the malice Of
the communes & made every man to go home to his houses &
kepne the pors And this Romayn lord the Bisschop of salys
bury maister Johan Waltham that tyme was cunsour of e
gland went to sir Thomas Becket archbisschop of yorke
& also chaunceller of Englund & ther the bisschop made his co
pleine by to the chaunceller upon the peple of the cite of lon
don And then these ii. bisschopes of gret malice & dinged
a come by to the kyng to Wyndesore & made a gret complei
unt upon the maire & shewes And anon all the cite after
ward were before the kyng & his counail & they cast by To
the cite a gretuous here & wonder gret malice & anon for
wylp the kyng sent after the maire of london & for the ii.
shewes and come by to him by to the Caster of Wyndesore
for & the kyng rebuked the maire and shewes full foully
for the offence that they had done agens hym and his offi
cers in his chambere at London therfor he disposed & put ou
t the maire & both shewes & this was done a viij. dayes ago

in the feste of seint Johan baptiste And then the King call-
ed to him a knyght that was called sir Edward Teling-
ge & made him warden & gouvernour of the cite & chaum-
ber of London & ouer all his popl then & so he kepte that
office but iiij. Yeres for cause that he was so gentill & was
dece to the citizens of London therfor the King spoked with
him & made sir Walter Wynn warden & knyght that was che-
valier of the Kinges houshold warden & gouvernour. Of
his chamber & of his popl thing & chose by to him ii. Worth-
men of the Cite to be shewes with him for to governe and
keep the Kinges house & the cite one was called. Gilbarte
ma Welford & that other Thomas Newnton shewes and
then the main & the ii. shewes & all the aldermen with al
Worth men of London went on foot by to the tower &
then come out the constable of the tower & gave the main
& the shewes his othe & charge as they shold have take in the
Eschequer of Westmynster in the Kinges court of his Justy-
ce & thows of the Eschequer & then went they home agene
¶ And then the King & his counsaill for the grette malice
disputes that they had to the cite of London remued all his co-
urts from Westmynster by to the Cite of Yorke that is for
to say the chauncery the Eschequer the Kinges bench & the
commune place And then they held all the se courtes of la-
we for many somer that is to say the feste of seint Johan the
baptiste by to the feste of costmasse next fuping and then the
King & his counsaill so it was so pfectible that as it was
at London then anon it remued it agene by to London &
so to Westmynster for grette use of his officers & a baunty-
to the King & all the communes of the reame. And when the
popl of London saw a newe chawch & courtes then come
agene to the King & his popl also chawch the main & the al-
dermen with the chief communes of the cite for gadre a gre-
te some of gold of all the communes of the cite And ordred

Richard

And thus he was a great while in his coming to London and for to see
us his grace and good lordship and also his liberality and favour
chances granted by to him as they a few times had
And then by great instance a prayer of the Queen Anne
of his lordship and ladies the king granted him grace and this
was done at home in such manner and then the king Wyck in
days after came to London And the mayor of London with
his aldermen and all the worth men of the City afterward
addressed him the king in good array and to the king on the
side the manner of home submytting him humbly and meekly
With all manner of service and to him as they ought to do
ne And thus they brought the king and the queen to London
And when the king came to the gate of the Bury of Lon
don there they presented with him a mylk white steed sad
led and bridled and trapped with clothe of gold and red parted
to girdle and the queen a palfrey all white and in the same orna
ment trapped with white and red and all the condities of Lon
don counted with Wyck Wyne boche white and red for all manner pe
ple to drink of And the benevolent people of the city
there they were made a stage a wall standing up high and
there were many angels with diverse melodies and song
And then an angel came down from the stage and bygh
by a life and set a crown of gold upon his head with rich pearls and
precious stones Upon the kinges head a another up the
Queens head so the citizens brought the king and the
Queen down to Westminster in to his palace and then on
the morrow after the mayor and the sheriffs and the alder
men of London came down the king in to his palace at W
estminster and presented him with a booke of siluer
gilt full of copied gold the same of xx hundred pounds
praising him of his high mercy and lordship and giving
all grace that they myght have his good love Wyck The
liberality and favour as they have had before.

Richard

comes & by his letters patent & his charters confirmed & the
Queene & othe worthy barres and ladies fell on knees to
besoughe the kyng of grace to conferme this chauce the kyng
wote by the queene & granted hir all hir askyng & than they
chaunled the kyng & the Queene & within some ayeue And
in the y^e viith of kyng Richardes reigne withyne barres of
Swceland come in to Englonde to gete worship as he ferst
of armes thes were the persones the Erle of marre & Richa
luned the Erle marshall of Englonde to Juste wiche hym
ortepne pointes & horslake wiche sharp spres & they addē
to gedres as ij^e worthy knyghtes & barres ortepne courses
but not the full challenge that the swichshere made for he
was cast both hors & may & ij^e of his Rybbles broke wiche
that fall & so he was borne home oute of smychfeld some
ij to his yn And wichein a litell tyme after he was car
ied homeward in a litter & at porke the he wiche & sir William
Darell knyght & also the Banner of swceland was made
an othe challenge wiche sir piers courtayne knaghe and the
kynges banner of englonde of ortepne courses yre on horslake
in the same felde & When he had adden ortepne courses w
iche & assaid he mygt not haue the better he passethie ouer
& wold no more of his challenge & turned his hors & rode ho
me to his owne in & one wicheboen a squere of swceland cha
lengid sir nicholl ha wiche knyght of ortepne courses yre
wiche sharp spres on horslake & adden v^e courses to gedres
& at every course the swete was cast a doue hebe hors & mē
& thus our engliff lordes chaunled to god haddē the felde
& in the y^e viith of kyng Richardes reigne wiche the good
gracious quene Anne that was wife to kyng richard i
the mane of shen i the shire of surre bys wiche today & the
was she broute to lodd & so to Westmister & there was she
brued & worthely etred & fild & fild & fild & fild & fild & fild
soul almighty god haue pite and mercy Amen

Richard
¶ How kyng richard spoused dame isabel the kynges
doughter of france in the toun of calys & brought
hir in to england & let hir be crowned quene in the ab
bey of seint petres of westmynstre ca. Dccen. xlii.

¶ In the xx. yere of kyng richardes reigne he was at
Calys ouer the see by to Calys with dukes Erles & lordes
a barons and many othir worthy squiers with grete ar
re & commune peple of the same in good arraye as they shold
go to seek a worthy kyng & prince of his nobly and of
his owne pson to doue him curacye & obseruance as ouze
to be done by to the linge lord and so myght a kyng & en
prince in his owne to abyde & assyure that that worthy
and gracious lady that shold be his wyfe a yonge may
sure of yie yere of age Dame Isabell the kynges doughter
of france and many othir worthy lordes of grete name
both barons & knyghtes with moche othir peple that com
by to the toun of graueninge ii. dukes of france that o
ne was the duke of Burgoune and that othir the duke of
brun that wold no forerher lasse than they had pleges for he
¶ And than the kyng richard deliuered ii. pleges for hym
to go sauf and come sauf his ii. worthy vnclis the duke of
Gloucester And the duke of yorke

¶ And they ii. wenten ouer the water of graueninge to
abseyne them so for pleges. By to the tyme that the marriage
and the feste was done and that the ii. dukes of france
were come agene by to graueninge water.

¶ And than the ii. worthy dukes come ouer the water at
graueninge And so to Calys with this burshippfull la
dy Dame Isabell that was the kynges doughter of fran
ce and with hir come many a worthy lord and Erelady
& knyghtes & squiers in the best arraye that myght be And
they they pleyed with our monyng areatly the which was

Rich 289

comed hir and hir meyns With the best honour and munition
that myght be and so broughe her in the town of Calys ad
there she was receyved With all the solompnitye & worship
that myght be done by so such a lady and every they brow
ghe hir by to the kyng & the kyng toke hir and Welcomed
hir & all hir faim meyns and made them all the solompnitye
that myght be done ¶ And then the kyng & his counail as
ked of the frensch lordes Wherby all the wemen and fow
wardes With the compassioun that was ordeyned & made on
to the pries shold be cruelly kept & holde her bene hem: And
they said yee ther they sworn & toke hir charge upon a
holis and made hir othe Well and cruelly to hold in all ma
ner of pointes & conquestes Without contradiction or delaye
in any maner Wyse ¶ And then was she brought by to se
me Nicholas church in calys & then she was borthely
Wedded With moste solompnitye that any kyng or quene myght
be With Archbisschoppes & bisschoppes and all ministers of ho
ly church & then when broughe home by to the castell And
set to mete ¶ And then were served With all maner
of delicat of all maner meeting & dyners plentifully .to
all maner of strangers and all ocher and no creature was
arned that feste Que all were welcome for ther were gre
te lullis and trilles sette upon the grene Without the castelle
to welcome all maner of pple and every offier redy to ser
ue hem all And thus this Worthy Manage was solompne
ly done and Ended With all malle ¶ Then the
se h-dukes of Ffrynch With hir pple toke hir leave of the
kyng And the quene & Weneen aynes to Staunpynge W
ares ¶ And there the frensch lordes that
ye to say the 4. Dukes And all hys meyns were co
mynour the Warr to Staunpynge And there they met
by And every toke leave of ocher and so they departed
& our lordes came aynes to calys and the frensch lordes.

Rich 2

Went ouer the Water & so home in to France agene ¶ And
anone after the kyng made hym wyf With the Quene ad
all his bedes & ladyes & all hir peple With hym and come
ouer the see in to Englonde & so to London and the maier ad
the shewes With all the eldremen & Worshypp communes rid
den vpon hym In to the blake hethyn hene And there they
metten With the kyng & the Quene and Welcomed he & that
in good array & every man in the clothyng of his craft &
her mynystrales to serue hym And so they broughe hym In
to seint George barre in south Werke & there they toke hyr
lure and the kyng & the Quene ridden to Kenyngton and cha
the peple of London turned home agene And in turnyng a
pene to London bygge there Was so moche prynces of peple bothe
an hore & at foot that they Were dede on the bygge vij. prynces
of men of Women & of children on Whos soules almi
ghey god haue ppyte and mercy Amen

¶ And then after Ward the Quene Was broughe In to the
towr of London and there she Was all nyghte And on the
morrowe she Was broughe thurgh the Cite of London all o
uer and so forth In to Westmynster and there she Was cro
uned Quene of Englonde and then she Was broughe a pe
ne to the kynges palys and there Was holten and open ad
nialle fest at hir coronacion of all maner of peple that the
der come ¶ And this Was done the Sonday next after
the feste of Seint Clement in xxij. yere of kyng Richardes
reigne

¶ And then the xxv. day of August next
after by well excitaciō & false counail and for grete Wra
th and malice that the kyng had of olde tyme In to hye
Duke the good Duke of gloucestre & to the Erle of arundel
and to the Erle of Warwiche

¶ And anone the kyng by his well excitaciō & his well
counail malice late in the euenyng on the same day abovesaid
made hit wyf With his strygh & rode i to issy Untowerton

Rich. 3. 150

of Chelmsford & so come to plasse sodenly then hit thomas
of Wostokke the good duke of gloucestre lay & the good du
ke come to welcome the kyng anone And the kyng asked
the good duke him selfe he o'wne body & so he was lad do
ne to the water & anone put to a ship And anone had by
to calys & broughe in to the capitaynes Ward to be kept &
hold by the kynges commaundment of Englad. And that
tyme the erle marchall was Capitayne of calys And a
none after by the commaundment of the kyng & by his fals
counsell commaunded the capitayn to put him to chedre & a
none certayne pomen that had the good duke in keeping to
ke his counsell how that they wold put him by to the Sebe
chis was his apointment that they shold come vpon him. Whē
he was in his bedde & a slepe on a feschir bedde And anone
they bounde him foot & hand & charged him to lye still. &
When they had done thus they toke in his make to waite. &
made on him his hand knyghts & cast to waite about the du
kes necke and then they toke the feschir bedde that lay by
to him & cast it about him & then they drewe him to wa
ite the Wass & some lay by on the feschir bedde vpon him
by to the time that he was dead by cause that he shold make
no noyse & thus they streigled this worthy. Duke by to
the Sebe on whose soule god for his high pitie haue. Mercy
Amen. When the kyng had asked this worthy duke ad
his Duch and sent him to calys he come a yene to London
in all haste with a wounden gowne & as lone as he was
come he sent for the Erle of Arundell & for the good Erle
of Warwiche. And anone as they come they asked him
him selfe Sir Johan cobham and sir Johan cheyne kyng
has he asked him in the same maner & all he made his par
lament. And anone they were put in to hold Que
the erle of Arundell was at large by to the plement the foch
he shold suffre furth to daye this was the answer to

Rich. 2nd
all maner pntes that the kyng & his counsaill wolde pue by
pay him & in the viij. yers of kyng Richard wene he ordeyn
ned hym a parlyment at Westmynster the which was called
the great parlyment And this parlyment was made for to. Juge
this in. Worthy lordes & othir mo or byn list at this tyme
& for that Juggement the kyng he make in all lust a hon
ge & a large hous of tymber the which was called an hall
& wene with tyles ouer & it was open all about on. for
the sides & at the endes that all maner of men. Myghte see
thurgh out & the dome was holten vpon these foresaid
lordes & Juggement yete at this foresaid parlyment & for to
come by to this parlyment the kyng sente his writtes by
to every lord lorde knyght & squier in every shire thurgh
out all Englonde that every lord gadre and bring his ret
nue with hym as shoulde tyme & in the best array that they
myghte gete in maynteyning & in strengtheing of the kyng &
pens him that were his enemyes & that this were done in all
lust & they to come to him in payne of the. And the kyng
him self seue in to chaste shire by to the chivalryns of that
conter & they gadred a broughe a gude and an huge mulier
tude of peple both of knyghtes & of squiers & princypall
of women of Chastite shire the which women and archiers the
kyng toke to his owne court & paye hem so they were good
wages to be kepters of his o. in lord both be myght & by day
about all othir pntes & most lured & best trust the which so
ne aft ward turned the kyng to gude benefitt him derly &
his knyghts vnderpynge & distruched as ye shall here son aft
& that tyme come he herp. Erth of wysh. With a gude me
ne of me of armes & archiers & the erth of rutland come
with a fledge poer of peple both of me of armes & archiers
& the erth of hie. brouge a gude poer of me of armes & archi
ers the erth marchall come in the said maner the lord speare in
the same maner the erth of northumberland & he herp. &c.

sonne & Sir Thomas were the Erles brother and all the W
orthy lordes brought in a fair meyne & stronge power &
every man in his best array and the duke of Lancaster & the du
ke of York came in the same maner. With men of armes &
archiers folowing the kyng & Sir William stafford of
England came in the same maner and thus in this way
came all the worthy men of this land to our kyng and
all this people came to London in one day in so much that ev
ery street & lane in London and in the suburbs were full
of him lodged & p[ro]vided about London every way. A
fter people brought the kyng at Westmynster & went for
one ap[er]t to his lodging with his lordes and men & then on
the monday the xij. day of September the parliame[n]t beg
gan at Westmynster the which was called the great parliame[n]t.
And on the saturday next after the Erle of Arundell was b
rought in to the parliame[n]t amonge all the lordes & that
was on seint Mathews day the apostol & euangelist that
he was foryngeed to the deche in this tale that was ma
de in the psalms at Westmynster this was his Jugement
he shold goe on foot with his lordes & bound behind his
from the place that he was for Jugged in & so forth thurgh
the cite of London to the tower hill & there his bed to be
smytten of & so he was to in deede in the same place. And
vi. of the great lordes that sat on his Jugement ridden wi
th him to the place where he was done to the deche
& so to see that the execution were done after his doome and
by the kynges commaundment with him went on foot
of men of armes & archiers a great multitude. of chiefe
shire men in strengthe of the lordes that brought the
Erle to his deche for they durst not the Erle shold ha
ve be rescued & take from him when they came to London
Thus he passed forth thurgh the cite to his deche & there
he took it full patiently on whos soul god have mercy

And then came the faires aungles & tolls by the body and
the law of this good Eke & then it come by to his house &
banded him in his quene And in the morwe after was Sir
Richard Eke of Warwiche brought in to the parliament
then as the Eke of Arundell was for Juggid & they pass
the Eke of Warwiche the same Jugement that the forsaide
Eke had put the law had compassion of his cause & was
of more age & released him to prepetuall prison & put him in
the Jle of man And then the Monday next after the lord
William of Kent & Sir Johan Cheyne knyghte were brought
in to the parliament in to the same hall & then they were
gived to the judges & then the due churche the prynces & great officers
of all the lordes that Jugement was foryeue him & released
to prepetuall prison And this same tyme was Richard
Whitbyng done maire of London & Johan Woodcocke & Willi
am of Kent shewes of London And they ordeyned at every
part of London during this same parliamt stronge watch of
men of armes & archers & charges out every ward also
And the kyng made B. duke a duchesse & a markys and
four Ekes & the first of his was the Eke of Derby & he
was made duke of Gloucestre and the second was the Eke of
Rutland and he was made duke of a Demark & the .iii.
was the Eke of Kent & he was made duke of ferra and the
iiii. was the Eke of Huntingdone and he was made duke
of Exeter and the v. was the Eke of Norpyngham & he
was made duke of norfolk & the eke of Somers set he
was made the markys of Dorset and the lord Spencer was
made Eke of Shrewsbury & the lord newill of Raby was ma
de Eke of Bermerland & Sir Thomas Percy was made er
le of Northumberland And Sir William Scrope that was erl
of England he was made Eke of Wylshem. And Sir
John Mowbray Eke of York And then the
kyng had thus a newe & the parliament and hall full by

son & the Thomas preys the Erles brother and all the
worthy knights brought in a fair meyn & a strong power &
each man in his best array and the duke of Lancaster & the du-
ke of York comen in the same maner. With men of armes &
archiers folowing the king & the William first cousin of
England comen in the same maner and thus in this array
comen all the worthy men of this land in to our king and
all this peple comen to London in one day in so much that ev-
ery street & lane in London and in the suburbs were full
of him lodged & yong men about London every way &
the peple broughte the king at Westmynster & wenten for
me agene to his lodging with horse and men & euen on
the monday the xvj. day of September the parliament beg-
gan at Westmynster the which was called the good parliame-
nt And on the saturday next after the Erle of arundell was
broughte in to the parliament amonge alle the lordes & that
was on seint Mathews day the apostel & euangelist the
he was foringged in to the deche in this hall that was ma-
de in the palace at Westmynster this was his Jugement
he stode gone on foot with his hands & bound behind his
from the place that he was for Jugged in & so forth thurgh
the cite of London in to the tower hill & then his hede to be
smitten of & so yt was do in dede in the same place. And
vi. of the good lordes that saw on his Jugement ridden wi-
th him in to the place where he was done in to the deche
& so to see that the execution were done after his dome and
by the kinges commaundment with him wenten on foot
of men of armes & archiers a great multitude. of chesire
shire men in strengthe of the lordes that broughte the
Erle in to his deche for they durst not the Erle stode in
we be rescued & take from him when they comen to London
Thus he passed forth thurgh the cite in to his deche & then
he toke in full paciencly on whose soul god have mercy

And than com the faires aungles & toke by the body and
the hilt of this good Erl & hurte him by the hilt & hurte
him in the quene And in the morwe after was Sir
Richard Erl of Warwiche broughe in to the parlyment
there as the Erl of Arundell was for Jugged & chey pafe
the Erl of Warwiche the same Jugement that the forsaide
Erl had put the hilt had compassion of his cause & was
of more age & wised him to perpenell prison & put him in
the Jyl of man And than the wonday next after the lord
William of Beke & Sir Johan cheyne & myghte Wren broughe
in to the parlyment in to the same hall & there chey were
ged to be hanged & durst the due churche the pryncer & good istace
of all the bishps that Jugement was foryeue hem & wised
to perpenell prison And this same tyme was Richard
Whitbyngdoun maire of London & Johan Wodecote & Willi
am of Beke shewes of London And chey ordeyned at every
gate of London during this same parlyment stronge walls of
men of armes & archers & thurgh out every ward also
And the kynge made B. dukes a duchesse & a markys and
four Erles & the first of his was the Erl of Derby & he
was made duke of Gloucestre and the second was the Erl of
Rutland and he was made duke of a demark & the .iiij.
was the Erl of Hereford & he was made duke of sumer and the
v. was the Erl of Huntingdoun and he was made duke
of Exeter and the vi. was the Erl of Northampton & he
was made duke of Northfolke & the Erl of Somerset he
was made the markys of Dorset and the lord Spencer was
made Erl of Gloucestre & the lord Nevill of Raby was ma
de Erl of Westmerland & Sir Thomas Percy was made er
l of Northfolke And Sir William Scrope & Sir Thomas
Mowbray were made Erles of Wylshyre And Sir
Johan Mowbray Erl of Salisbury And Sir Thomas
Beke was made Erl of Devon & Sir Thomas Beke was

1

to all his lordes & to all maner of p[er]sons that shold be come
And this same yere died Sir John of gaunt the knyght
Duke & Duke of Lancaster in the bishoppes yere in belbom
and was brought from thence to saint pauls & there the kyng
made ghele his entremene with & borethly buryd all
his lordes in the church of saint pauls in london and there
he was buried beside dame blanch his wife the which was
ghat a hie to the good henry the which was duke of Lancaster
and in the same yere there fyd a disencion & debate betwene
the duke of hereford & the duke of Norfolk in so moche that
they waged bataille & cast downe hir gubens & then they
were take up and enfeld & the bataille royned ge[n]te day
for ge[n]te place assigned betwene & when a chieftid be at wunden
and chidder come the kyng Rich all his lordes at the
day & was seth in the feld and then there borethly bidde
men in to the feld clere armed & well armed with all hys
weyn & wdy to done hir bataille and weyn wdy in the place
for to fyghe at batayles ¶ But the kyng had hym self
to the chieftid in to his bond.

2nd foreth with aghe there p[er]sone cyllid the duke of hereford
for the arme of y. yere & the duke of Norfolk for euer
more And sir Thomas awondell Archbissopp of cantuar
bury was cyllid the same yere for euer & disposed out of
his see for malice of the kyng And anon these iii. borethly
lordes were commaunded & defended the knyghts Keame
anone they gate hem selfes at diverse lawnes & wunden
uer the see in to diverse lordes the his weyn. And the duke
of Norfolk went to Venise & there he died on whose soule god
have mercy Amen And then kyng Richard made a clerk
of his sir Reginald Waldey Archbissopp of cantuar And
in the yere of kyng Richards wene by hole counayll
and p[er]maginacion of Coucheus men the weyn about his
weyn made and ordyne shal chieftid and made hys in the

misled of all maner wiche men churged aucte the Reame in
muche that they compelled diuerse pple so fere by seale the
to & this was done for grete muchise wherfor All good breth
of the Reame they thus turned a way from him that was
kyng ever after. And that was wicheley distruction
made to him that was so high & excellent prince and kyng
and churche muchise & false counaill falsly betrayed allas
for pite that such a kyng myght nor for. And than kyng
Richard sette his kyngdome & his walfond & egnd to ferme
by to iij. persones the which were these Sir William step
p. Erle of Wylshyre & consor of england & Sir Johan Bus
sh & Henry gaunt & Sir. Johan Bageot knyghts which
thus turned him to mischies & drede dieing liue tyme as
ye shall fynde him after Wicheley. And than kyng. Richard
made grete ordinaunce & went him ouer the set in to Ireland
a many grete bides wiche him wiche grete hostes for to stregh
the kyng wiche men of armes archiers & much grete stuffe
and made good ordinaunce as longich to wiche & as he pas
sed the see he ordeyned & made Sir Edmond of langley his du
ck the duke of yorke his lieutenant of Englund in his ab
sence wiche the gouernaunce & counaill of these iij. knygh
ts that had by to do Englund to ferme of the kyng & than
he passed the see & come in to Ireland and there he was wel
& wicheley receyved and these nobles that bene calld by
p. the Irishmen anone hit churche & hit gouernours and
hit bides comen wiche by to the kyng & p. den him by to
his backe body & goods all at his owne wyll. & I wote to be
his liege men and the to him diche homage & feaute & good
seruice & thus he conquered the mooste parte of Ireland in a
littell tyme. And while that kyng Richard was there
in Ireland Sir Henry of Bolynbroke. Erle of Derby
wiche the kyng had made before duke of Hereford the which
duke of kyng had eyldowen of this land was a m. ap. n.

in to England for to challenge the dukedome of Lancaster
 as for his right & trewe heritage ¶ And he came downe out
 of France by land by to calys And there met he his
 Thomas of arundell that was Archebisschop of canterbur-
 y that was exiled out of England & with him came the
 Erle of Gloucestre his sone and him the which was in
 a keepynge of Sir Iohane Sturges knyghte some tyme
 with the erle of hunchyngton & with the duke of exeter the
 which was in the Castell of Reigate in southe sex & there
 he stalk him a way & come to calys and there he was kept
 well & worthily till that other two lordes were come to
 calys ¶ And then this worthy duke & the Archebisschop
 of canterbury Arundell shewed in the burgh of calys and
 drew he his course north ward and arrived in portesmouth
 & there faste by Wyndesore & then he come & entered
 the land and there he was with him and his meyne

¶ And then moche peple of the Reame that heard of his co-
 ming and knewe that he was anone they came by to
 him welcomed these lordes and so coraged him in all maner
 thing and passed forth in to the land & gathered moche peple
 When kynge Richard heard and wote that these ii. lordes
 were come agene in to England & were landed ¶ Then the
 kynge left his ordinaunce in Ireland & come in to England
 ward in all the hast that he myghte & come by the castell of
 fleyte and then he abode for to take his counsaill & myghte he
 make he done but to him come none ¶ And then he shewed
 to the Erle of Worchestre that was the kynge's brother & wote
 that he was anone he come in to the hallawongt all the
 peple ¶ And then he brake the perle of the hall knyghtes house
 ¶ And anone they were dispersed ¶ And every man went
 his way and forsoke his master and soueraign lord And
 left hym alone

¶ And thus was kynge Richard brought a downe & distressed

and stood alone without comfort or favour as any good counsellor of any man. Alas for pity of this wretched king.

¶ And anon came rynges that Sir Henry of Soling. Duke was by such a wonder strong power of people. And that all shires of England were by the shires in strong shing of hym agens the king Richard. And thus sone he was come out of the northen to Bristle and then he met with Sir William scope Earl of Wylteshire rector of England and with Sir Johan Buss and Sir Henry grent and Johan lagor. But he escaped from hem and went over the sea into Ireland. And these knyghtes were taken and by the shires of. And thus they died for his false counsel. ¶ Then was king Richard taken and brought by to the duke a noon the duke put him in fast ward strong hold by to his coming. To London. And was there a tower in London a strong house that king Richard came to Westminster and the people of London in raine chider and wold have done much harm and slake his wednesse. Mac the more and the Aldermen and other worshipmen saved him with force and turned him home again to London.

¶ And then was Sir Johan flake son of the king's chapel of Westminster taken and brought to London and put in prison in Ludgate. And lagor was taken in Ireland and brought to London and put in prison in Newgate. Then to be kept and to abide his answer. ¶ And sone after the duke brought king Richard privately by to London and him in the tower under sure keeping as a prisoner. And then came the heirs of the name with all their counsel by to the tower to king Richard and fasten to him of his misgovernance and extortion that he had done made and assigned to oppress all the common people and also to all the realm. ¶ Wherefor all the common people of his name wold have him deposed of his kingdom. And so he was deposed at that time in

the town of London by all his lordes counaill and commaunders
we assent of all the name. And ther he was put from
the town. In to the castell of Berke in Kent and ther he was
kept a while And then was he had from thence In to the
castell of Pontefract in the northcountie to be kept in prison &
some after ward eight the he made his end And then whiche
king Richard was deposed & had assayed his countie and
his kingdome and was kept fast in hold then all the lordes
of the Realme with the communes assent & by accord chose
for this worthy lord sir Henry of Bolingbroke Erie of Derby
by duke of Hereford & duke of Lancaster by right line and he
chose for his rightfull manhood that the people founde him
before all othere they chose him and made him king of England
amonges them.

Of sir Henry of Bolingbroke Erie of Derby that reigned
after king Richard whiche was the iii Henry after the
conquest Ca. dueneclima xliii

And after king Richard the ii. was deposed & put out
of his kingdome the lordes & the communes all with
one assent and all othere worthy of the name chose sir Henry
of Bolingbroke Erie of Derby for his worthy manhood that othere
men had he founde in him and in dede proved upon seint ed
wardes day the confessor he was crowned king of England
at Westmynster by all the Realmes assent next after the
deposing of king Richard then he made Henry his eldest
son and his prince of Wales and duke of cornwall &
Erie of cheshire And he made sir Thomas of Arundell Erches
bisschop of Caunterbury agent as he was before & sir Roger
Walden that king Richard had made Erchesbisschop of
Caunterbury he made him bisschop of London for that tyme
he stode void And he made Erles sons of Arundell that
were with him over the sea from France in to England

made him Earl of Arundel as his father had bene and put
him in possession of all his lands. And then he made homa-
ge and service by to his liege lord the king as all other bar-
ons had done. And then anon died king Richard in the
field of battle in the Northwiche for then he was enfa-
mored by to death by his keeper for he was kept there four-
or five days from meat and drink. And so he made his end
in this world. And much people in England and in other la-
nds said that he was a long many years after his death. But
whether he was a long or short while he held his false oppo-
nions and false tales men had in much people which come
to great mischief and foul death as ye shall hereafter read.
And when king Henry the sixth and his wife Bertrande
he was dead he let him in the best manner and closed it in
a fair chest with diverse spices and saumes and closed
him in a linnen cloth all save his visage and that was le-
ft open that men might see his person from all other men.
And so he was brought to London with torches light burn-
ing by to saint pauls. And then he had his mass and his
dirige with much murmur and solemnity of service.
And when all this was done he was brought from saint
pauls in to the abbey of Westminster and there he had all
his full service as yet. And from Westminster he was brought
to Langley and then he was buried on whose soul god have
mercy Amen.

And in the first year of king Henry's reign he held his
court at the castle of Wyndesore. And on the xxiiij. day
came the duke of a Berwick by to the king and told him that
he and the duke of Gloucestre and the duke of Exeter and the
Earl of Salisbury and the Earl of Shrewsbury and other mo-
st of his nobles there agreed to make a mourning by
to the king on the xxiiij. day at night and there they came
to the king in his chamber and thus the duke of a

Demarek Warned the kyng And than the kyng come the
same nyght to london princely in all the fast that he myght
to gete him socour and confort and counsell And anone
these othir that wolde have done the kyng to death fledden
in all the fast that they myght for they knewen well that
hir counsell was betrayed

And than fledde the Duke of Surm and the Erle of Sa
lisbury With all hir meynes vñ to the toun of Elyseire.

And there the peple of the toun wolde have arrested they
and hold not stode to hir awste but stode at defense And
saughe manly But at they last they were overcome & take
And then they smyte of the dukes head of Surm & the Er
le head of Salisbury and many othir mo & then they put
quarters in to salikes & hir herdes on poles born on high &
so they were brought thurgh the cite of london vñ to london
brugge and then hir hedes were sette vpon high & hir quar
ters were sente to othir good townes and cities & sette vpon
them And the open fore were take Blount knyght & benet &
ly knyght and Thomas Wynterfall squier & these were be
headed and quartered & the knyghts hedes were sette on poles
and brought to london & sette on the brugge & the quarters
sente forth othir good townes And in the same yere at
pyncel Well in a mill in a Esteyr then Sir Johan hold
the Duke of Exastre was take with the communis of the co
tre and they brought hym from the mill vñ to plasse and
to the same place that kyng Richard had caused Sir Tho
mas of Woodstok the Duke of Gloucestre And nyght there vñ
the same place they smyte of the duke of Exastre his head
and brought it to london vpon a pole and it was sette on
londonbrugge

And in the same yere at Bristol was take the lord
spencer that kyng Richard had made Erle of Gloucestre &
the communis of the toun of Bristol took hym & broughte

hym in to the market place of the toun and there they smy-
ten of his hede and sente it yn to london and there it was
sette on london brigg.

¶ And in this same yere was Sir Barnard brakspe and
nyghtmare and arrested and put in to the toum of london
and sir Johan shelley knyght and Sir Johan maudelyn
and Sir William ferby persons of kyng Rychard as they
were arrested and put in to the toum of london And thid
for come the kynges Justices and satte vpon hym in the
tore of london and there they were dampned all foure yn
to the tere and the dome was geue yn to Sir bernard bro-
kys that he shold gone on foot from the toure churgh lō-
don yn to riborne and there to be hanged and after his hede s-
myten of a Sir Johan shelley knyght and sir Johan ma-
udelyn and Sir William ferby persons were drembe churs-
gh oute London to Ribourne and there hanged and hys
hede smyten of and sette on london brigg.

¶ And in this same yere kyng Henry sence Quene Is-
bell come apene in to fraunce the whiche was kyng Rys-
chard wedded wyfe and yafe hir gold and syluer And
many othir Jewelles and so she was discharged of all hir
dowry and sente oute of Englonde.

¶ And in the second yere of the regne of kyng Henry
the four the was Sir Rogier of Claryngdone knyght
And also of his men and the priour of launde and viij.
frete Menours And somme Masters of daunty and o-
thir For treason That they broughte a prette kyng was
re drembe

¶ And haged at riborne all viij. yeres and ther began a grete
disceiō and debate in the coorte of Walys betwix the lord greg-
nache and othen of gledere squier of Walys and this othe ended

Reg. Henry 4
1402

John 4

a gude nombre of Falschmen & kept all that comen a bouz
a night stonge & did moche harme & destroyed the kynges
townes & shippes & burgh oute. Walys & wethered and so
we the kynges peple bothe Englysshe & Walysse And thus
he endured a yere & more. And he toke the bio geyr with
prisoner & kept hym fast in hold till he was ransomed of
prisoners of the marche And kept hym longe tyme in hold
& at the last he made hym wedde one of his daughters and
kept hym ther still with his wyfe and sone after he dyed
And then the kyng Henry the second this meschance destruc
tion & tounes that this o kyng hadde brought thanne anon
he ordeigned a stronge power of men of armes & of archers
& moche othir stuffe that longed to warre for to abate & de
stroye the malice of this fals Walysmen And then the kyng
come by to Walys with his power for to destroye this o
wen & othir fals Walysmen & anon they fledde
in to the montaignes & ther myght the kyng doue hym no harme
in no maner wyse for the montaignes & so the kyng
come in to Englund agayne for the kyng of mo of his peple and
thus he sped nought there in this same yere Was gude scar
ce of wheat in Engld for a quarter of wheat was a peny
shilling And there was marchaundize of Englund sent
in peys for wheat & anon they had had & fygge shippes
p no way come home in saufe blessed be god of all his gife
And the iiij yere of kyng Henrys regne the Was a sterre se
ne in the firmament that she wed his selfe & burgh all the
world for diuers tokens that shold befall sone aft the
sich sterre Was named & called by churche stells comete &
on seint marie magdalene day next folowyn in the same
yere Was the battaille of sbro Weburg and shold be comite.
Henry the first & the sone of northumberland with a gude
multitude of men of armes & archers & gese a battaille
the kyng Henry the iiij & burgh the fals council and Wyke

as of the
the kyng
the fals
the fals

the fals
the fals
the fals
the fals

Red wd. of Sir Thomas Percy his Duell Erle of Warwiche;
etc and then Was Sir Henry Percy slayne & the most partie
of his meyn in the feld And Sir Thomas Percy was and he
was fast in hold till the daye till the kyng had fete wth amoye
his peple on both sides And then Sir Thomas Percy anon
Was Jugged to he & he was longed & his he & smythen of
for his fals cusion at Wyndesore & his he & brought to l^d
In a fete on London bridge And the ocher peple that the
was slayne on both parties the kyng he he & and there
Was slayne on the kyngs side in that battelle the erle of Sta
ford & Sir Walter Blount in the kynges wth armur & in
the kynges banner & many mo Worthye men on Whose so
ull god haue mercy Amen And in the iij. yere of kyng
Henries wyne come the Emperour of Constantine nobly By
th many gude lordes & knyghtes & moche ocher peple. Of
his councill to Englnd to kyng Henry Wiche hys to smyle & to di
spoke & to see the good gouernaunce and condic^ons of our
peple & to knowe the comodities of Englonde & our kyng
Wiche all his lordes goodly & Wurschipfully him wscoued
and Welcomed him & all his meyne that comen Wiche hym &
did him all the wueruance & Wurschip that they cou^d & wize
And anone the kyng commaunded all maner. Officers
that he shold be serued as Worthly & riakly as he lodged by
to such a Worthly lord & Emperour on his o^{wn}ne costs as l^d
ge as the Emperour Was in englonde & all his m^e that com^e
Wiche hym And in this same yere come dame Jane the du
chesse of Bracygne in to Englonde & landed at fullmouche
in wiche waille and from thence she Was brought to the Cy
ty of Wyndesore & there she Was Wedded by to kyng Henry.
iij. in the abbey of sancte Marye of Wyndesore Wiche al
the solempnity that myght be done and made And sone after
she Was brought from thence to London and the maye & the
at home & the comuners of the cite of l^{ond}on riden ag^{ain}st hir

Henry

and hir Welcomed & broughte hir thurgh the cite of London
to Westmynstre and there she was crowned Queene of england
And then the King made a ball & a solompne feste for hir
& for all maner of men that shold come & in this sa-
me yere Dame Blaunch the eldest daughter of King Henry
the iiij. Was yfined over the see with the Erle of Somerset
hir Brother & with maister Richard Clifford then Bishopp of
Burchestre & with many other Worthie knights knyghtes &
ladies & Worthie squires & lured to such a Worthie Kinges
daughter & comen to calypp And chiden some the
dukes sone of here with a faire wyng as was sayd the
Worthie lady & then the Bishopp of Burchestre Wedded & so
went they to gedre as holy church hold

And then was made a ball feste & a great Justice & the
wurrence & worship of hym and of all peple that shold be co-
me And when this manage & feste was done the Erle and
the Bishopp & all hir myghte token hir leave of lord and lady
and comen home agene to England in shippes thanked be
god

And in the viij. yere of King Hen-
ries regne the lord Thomas his sone went over see and the
Erle of Here & many other lordes and knyghtes with me
of armes and archiers a great number to chasise the rabel
as they afore had done moche harme to our Englishmen
& marchauntes and to many towres & portes in England
on the seacoastes And the lord Thomas the Kinges sone com-
in to flaundres to fow a towne that is called the siluse &
monges all the shippes of diverse nacione that were there
re & after the they ridden with hir shippes amenge hem
& wenten a land & spred themselves iiij. dayes & came agene
to hir shippes & to ken the broder see and then they written
with in cartules of Jene that were to be with diverse
marcaundise & with a maner & other they fughten to ge-
dren longe tyme but the englishmen had the victorie and

Broughten the carrikis in to the Cambie before Wynchelles
e then they wanted their goodes and one of this carrikies
Was suddenly taken bene And the lordes e hir popl Tur-
ned from home agene e Wene no further at that time At in the
same yere ferth yoman of King Richard Robles come i to
Englond out of Scotland to diuise with the King
Richard Was a lyue in Scotland e so moche popl belued
in his Warden wherfor guth parte of the popl of the Reame
Went in guth erour e grucebyng agens the King thurgh
Informacion of lies e fal chiding that this Gerl had made
For moche popl trusted and belued in his sayeng Due at
the last he Was taken in the Northewm and by the Jug-
ged to bene drithe thurgh every cite e good burgh townes
in Englond e so he Was seruid e at the laste he Was bro-
ugh to London in to the Gild hall before the iustice e then
he Was Jugged for to be brought to the towne of London e
ther to be hid on an harrell e then to be drithe thurgh the
cite of London to ciborne e then hanged and chaquarande
his hede smyten of and seeth on London brigge e his quar-
ters to be sente to four good townes of Englond and the
wseete vp and thus ended he for his fals treason And dy-
scere

¶ And in the vii. yere of King Henries thre the iiii. the
Erl of marw of Scotland by sanfcondrye come in to En-
glond to challenge fir Edmond the Erl of Kent of arday-
ne courses of Werm on horseback And so this challenge W-
as accepted and graunted and the place taken in smyfeld
at London and this Erl of marw the sothe come proude-
ly in to the feld as his challenge asked and anon come in the
Erl of Kent and rode in to the sothe and manfully Ro-
de to gode with sharp spurs diuise Courses Due the Erl
of Kent had the feld e gat his moche wurship e thank of
all maner of mē for his manful deede e in the vii. yere of

King Henries regne the iij. Sir Richard Scroppe Archbishop
of yorke & the said Archmarshal of england gaue by
to him a stronge power agens King Henry. And the King
havinge ther of in all the laste that he myghte come with his
power northward & mette with him at yorke and then
were there ii. bawes y. taler & broughe to the King And anon
the Judges were set and there ii. bawes broughe forth. And
there they were dampned by to the death & both Sir Scroppe
Imprisoned of & there they made his end on Whos soules god for
his pitie have mercy Amen. And whan this was done the
King came to London agene & then willed him auons god Of
his grate goodnesse broughe & shewed many grate miracles
for this Worthie clere Archbishop of yorke that thus was
done by to the death And in the vij. yere of King Henries re-
gne Dame Lucie the Dukess sister of milant come in to En-
gland & so at London and there was wedded to Sir Edmund
Boland Erle of Here in the parish of saint marie oueris I
suche werke with moche solompnie and grate Burshipp the
King was there him selfe and gave her at the church dore
And whan they were wedded and masse was done the
King his owne persone broughe and led this Worthie lady
in to the Bishoppes place of Wyndesore & there was a
on the great feste y. holden to all maner of people that comen.
In the same yere Sir Robert Knollys Kneght a Worthie
berpoure died at his maner in northfolk And from thence
he was broughe to London vpon a hors there Rich Moche
drest light and so was he broughe in to the White freeres
in streete and there was done and made for him a sole-
pne feste and a riall entremee for the. that shold be Wol-
de come both yorke rich and there he lieth buried by Da-
me constance his Wife in the mydd of the body of the church
there on Whos soule god for his pitie have mercy Amen.
And thus in this same yere Sir Thomas Mowbray Kneght

Constable of the tower of London Was deputed at London
to seege as he come from Westminster to see the town in
a barge & all cheregh & dunnell And in the same yere da
me philipp the yonger daughter of King Henry Was lad
ouer the see With Sir Richard the dukes brother of Gaske ad
Sir Edmond Courtenay Bissopp of Norwiche & many ocher
lordes knyghtes & squires ladies and gentle woman that
apoynted to such a worthy knyghts daughter & come in to
Denmarke With his lordes & accompanied this worthy lady
for his Wyfe & Welcomed thes worthy lordes & did him mo
che reverence and grette worship And they Were broughe vñ
to a towne that Was called London in Denmarke & there W
as this lady Wedded & sacred to the King of Denmarke W
th moche solemnite & there she Was crowne Quene of Den
marke Norway & Swedan & there Was made a riall feste &
Why this feste and manage Was done & ended these lordes
and ladies with hir hure of King & of quene and comen home
apent in to England in last chaunced be Jhu.

And in the vij. yere of King Henries regne there Was
a man that Was called the Walffschlarke & he appyled a k
nyght that Was called Sir Percevall so W done of cresson
& there they Were Joynded to fight vñ to bestrance Wicht
in listes and the day & place and tyme assigned & they y
ed to be done & ended in smythfeld at the Which day the
ij. persons comen in to the felde and foughten for. & mize
ledy to gader but at the last the knyghte ouercome the cler
ke and made him yeld & he creaune of his fals Enysches
ment that he said on him And then Was despoilled of his
armure & drave out of the felde to Eilorne & there Was
he fougged & the knyghte take in grace & Was a good man
And in this same yere Sir Henry Erle of Northum
berland And the lord Boddolfe come out of Scotland
in pryncesse and distructed of King Henry Wherefor they of

the northwesterd outen Upon him and foughte with him ad
Iconfound him and took him a smythen of his hys a quar
ter and his bodye sente the heid of the Cite a quarter of the
bid but dose to London and the the Westre Spd the Bri
ge for false tason that they had purposed agens the Kinge
in the y. p. of King Henries rigne Was fit Edmond to
Dand Erle of Arund made Admirall of England for to be
with the seage Wete to the see with many riall shipes that be
ten full well armed & empared & Enarmed with many
a good men of armes & archiers & of good Exens of War
in the Kinges name of England and so he bud at the
last in the cost of Britaigne in the Ile of Guak with all
his peple and he beseged the Castell and sauld it and the
withstode him with grete defense and strengeche And ano
ne he bid his ordinaunce & in the lying of a gonne come
quarrell and smote the good Erle Edmond in the hede and
there he caughte dechead Wonde but gie they left nought at
all that they had got the Castell and all the Vert there pune.
¶ And there this good bid died on Whos soule god have
mercy Amen ¶ And than his meyne come home agene in
to Engloud with the Erles body and Was buried among
ge his Nuncestres right Worthelp ¶ And in the same ye
re Was a grete fust in Engloud that dured y. y. Wylles
¶ And in the y. yere of King Henries rigne cheiij. come
the senteball of Heman & with echir meyne to sele Gun
eres and to geve him Wurschippes in dres of armes bothe
on hors backe and on foot at all maner of pointes of Werre
& the senteball chalenged the Erle of Somerset & the Erle
delivered him manfully of all his chalenges and put his ad
versarie to the Werre in all pointes and Wanne hym there
grete Wurschip and the geve of the felde And the next day
after come in to the felde an echir man of armes of the Be
nethallie parke And agens hym come Sir Richard of Arund

kneghte and the Henaude had the better of him on foote
in one pointe for he brought him ouer his knee And the end
of day come in an othe men of armes in to the felde and a
prie hym come Sir Johan come Waille kneghte & manly
and kneghtly quyt him in all maner pointes ayens hys
aduersarie and had the better In the felde And on the iij.
day come an othe man of armes of Henaude in to the felde
& ayens him come Sir Johan cheynys sone and Manly
quyt him ayens his aduersarie for he caste hors and man i
to the felde And the kyng for his manhode at That tyme
dubbed hym kneghte And the iij. day there come an othe
man of armes of Henaudes parte in to the felde And to him
come in Sir Johan the Ward kneghte & manfully quytte hys the
in all maner of pointes & had the better And the vi. day
come an othe Henaude and to him come William porter squi
er & manfully he quyt hym & had the better in the felde ad
the kyng dubbed him kneghte at same tyme And the viij.
day come an othe Henaude in to the felde & to him come Jo
han standish squyer & manfully he quyt him on his auer
sarie and had the better in the felde & then the kyng dubbed
hym kneghte the same day And on the same day come an o
the Henaude & to him come a squier of Gascoigne a prou
dely & manly he quyt him on his aduersarie & had the bett
er And anon the kyng dubbed him kneghte And on the
viij. day come in to the felde ij. men of armes of Henaude &
to him come ij. soudiours of calys chat Wm Brecheten & the
Wm called Burghes & Well and manly quyt him on hys
aduersaries and the better in the felde & thus ended the chas
enger Wiche moche Wurschipes And the kyng at the wuer
e of the strangers made a gret feste & gaf him rich gif
tes & they taken hit hit & Wene home to hit o Wene counte &
in the viij. of kyng Henries agne the iij. then Was a gret
a fete the Wene in myghtful die Wene & so squiers chis on

Was called gloucestre that was appelleunt Arthur Was
the defendaunt and Walys manfully fonghten to gedre lo
ge tyme the kyng for his manfullnesse & of his grace to
ke his quarrell in to his hand and made him to go out. Of
the felde at ones and so they were deuised of his battelles
and the kyng gave him grace And the xij. yere of kyng hen
ries wyne the foureth yere dre a squier of Walys that was a
well anser and supporter to o wen of glendore that did mo
che destruction to the peple of Walys was taken & brought
to london and there he com: a fox the Iustices and was da
pned for his treason and than he was hid on an hurdell &
so drew he forth by to elborne church the Cite & then he was
hanged and let downe agene & his heid smyten of and his bo
dy quarewed and sent to iij tounes & his heid sette on Lon
don Brugge And in the xij. yere of kyng henries wyne the
v. yere Sir Johan Beauford the Erle of somerset that was
capitayne of calys and was brad at the abbey of tounes
hull on Whos soule god haue mercy Amen And in the sa
me yere the lord Thomas kyng henries sone wedded the co
untesse of somerset And in this same yere come the embas
sadors of fraunce in to Englon d from the duke of bur
goyne by to the pryncce of Englon d kyng henries sone
here for helpe and sowur of men of armes & archiers agens
the duke of Caliaunce And then went ouer the see the Er
le of arundell Sir Guillebert Dymfryll Erle of kente &
the lord Cobham Sir Johan of Beauford And many other
good knyghtes and worthy squiers and men of armes and
good archiers in to fraunce and com: to paris to the duke
of burgoyne And then he respyced & welcomed thes em
bassemen the lordes and all other meyne and then it was
done him to wyte that the duke of Caliaunce was come to
semech the fast by paris With a gret nombre of men of ar
mes and archers and chydre went ouer Englyssme

and foughten with him and gat the brigge of semtech Wea
then they shew moche peple of frensshmen and Arminas
lies & chawmenauue fledde and wold no longer abyde
And than our Englysshmen comen agene to paris & there
they token hir lue of the duke and comen home agene in to
Englond in saufe and the duke gave hem grete piftes
And nonefol wyng the duke of Orliance sent embassadours in
to Englond to kyng Henry the iiij. sechynge him of hys
help & socour agens his deadly enemye the duke of Burgoyn
And than the kyng made Thomas his sone duke of
clarence & his othir sone Johan duke of Bedford And his othir
sone Humphrey duke of Gloucestre & sir Thomas Beauford
Erle of Dorset and the duke of a Wamarle he made du
ke of York And than the kyng ordeyned his sone sir Tho
mas duke of Clarence sir Thomas Beauford Erle of Dorset
& sir Johan corne Waile with many othir lordes knyghtes
& squiers men of armes & archers to gone ouer the see In
to France in helppynge & seyngechynge of the duke of Orliant
And these worthy lordes with hir retinue shipped at Har
pton and sailled ouer in to Normandie & landed at Hoge
ges And there mette with him the lord hamble at hir lon
dynge with vij. M. men of armes of frensshmen & iij. serz
geauntes of armes with him And all were pue to fyghe &
taken of him vij. C. men of armes & CCC. hors with
oute the othir were slayne in the feld And so they adden for
the church oute fraunce & toke castles & towres & slo we moche
peple of frensshmen that withstode hem & token many preys
forre as they adden And so they passed forth till they com
to Burden & then they asked hem a while & sette the eders
in pise & asked all the wyntage were redy to saille And
than the duke with his menge come home in to Englond &
saufe thanked be god And in the same yere was the kyngs
grete wynt changed churche ouer Englond by the kyng and

John 15.

his counsell that is to say the noble hals noble & freching
of gold And yiii. yers of kyng hentries wgne the iiii. he let
make galeys of warre for he had hoped to haue passed the gyt
to see a so forth to Iherusalem & ther to haue ended his lyf
fe beue god visited him so sone after with infirmities & gni
te-sikenesse that he myght nat well endure no while so fer
uently he was take & broughe in bed at Westmynster in a
fawr chamber And as he lay in his bed he asked his chauncellor
layne what they called that chamber that he lay ynn & he
answered & said Iherlm And eday he said that the prophete
said that he shold make an ende & die in Iherusalem & eha
he made him wryte vnto god & disposed all his wyll & sone
after he died and was carried by water from Westmynster
in a barge vnto seuersham And from thence vnto canter
bury by land with moche torches lichte brennyng in to the a
kyrke of canterbury & ther he was entred and buried with
ine Thomas of Cauntrebury shane & thus ended the wor
the kyng hentry aboute myddelton sonday in the yere of our
lord a. M. cccc. yiii. on whos soule god haue mercy Amen
Of kyng hentry the v. that was kyng hentries sone.
Capitula ducentesimo xliiii

a And after the deche of kyng hentry the iiii. reigned King
Henry his sone that was borne at Monmouth in
Walys that was a worthy kyng and a gracious man &
a gatre conquerour And in the first yere of his reigne for gyf
te love and goodnesse he sente to the feres of Langely there
as his fadre had done lery kyng Richard the second and let
take his body out of the erch apur & did hang it at West
mynster in a riall cloth covered with black velvet and bus
kers of diuerse armes aboute & all the howe that was the
chare was covered in blake and beary with diuerse armes
and many a torch brennyng by all the wyll he come
to Westmynster and there he let make for hym a riall and

Henry 5th

a solemnne entremente & heard him by Quene Anne his
Wife as his owne desire was on the fether side of seue
Warres shant in the abbey of seint petrus of Westmynster
on whose soule god haue mercy Amen. And in this same
year were a certayne of sheldes taken & fals sheldes was
had purposed thurgh fals cunson to haue slayne our kyng.
As for to haue destroyed all the clergie of the Reame & they mi
ght haue had his fals purpos but our lord wold not su
fer it for in lastoure kyng had warninge that of & of all his
fals ordinaunce & wurchinge & come so dely with his poer
to seint Johannes withoute smythfeld And anon they to
ken a certayne of the sheldes & fals sheldes & broughte
by to the kynges presence & there told all his fals purpo
se & ordinaunce to the kyng wold haue done & broughte & they
myght haue agned and had his Wyl And then they told
which were his captayns & his gouernoure. And then the
kyng commaunded him to the towne of London & than toke
mes of him both within the cite & without and sent him
to Newgate & to both conuents And then they were broughte
in examination before the clergie & the kynges Justices and
then they were conuicted before the clergie for his fals sheldes
& dampned before the Justices for his fals cunson And then
was his Iuggement that they shold be drownded in the tou
ne of London by the seint Gilles feld & then to be hanged ad
benedicte on the gallows And also that was taken his Rozier
acton byngde for heretic & the for cunson agens the kyng &
the Reame and he come a fourth clergie & was conuicted for
his falshe to be drownded & dampned before the Justices to be drow
nded from the towne of London thurgh the cite of seint Gilles
feld & to be hanged & buried And in the second year of kyng
Henrys agens the Duke of Burgundy & a certayne of all the lordes of
the countee of Westmynster & other the puching this demaund &
prayed a viscounte lord of his goodnesse & of his good counsel

Hande
A good Wyll to shewe him as touchyng the tithes & the rize
charter had to Normandie Gascoyne & Guyenne the which
the kyng of fraunce which helde wrongfully & duryngeful
ly the which his Ancestres before him had be the tithes
of conqueste & right heretofore the which Normandie Gascoyne
& Guyenne the good kyng Edward of Wyndesore & his
aunces before him hadden hold all his lyves tyme & his
lordes gave him counail to sende embassadours by to the kyng
of fraunce & his counail and that he shold yene up to him
his right heretofore that is to say Normandie Gascoyne and
Guyenne the which his predecessours hadden hold afore his
or elles he wold it Wyne with dynt of sword in short ti
me with the helpe of almyghty god And than the Dolfyn
ne of fraunce answered to our embassadours & sayd in this ma
ner that the kyng was over yong and to tender of age to
make any Werry as ayens him & was not like yit to be no
good Warriour to do & to make such a conqueste that upon
hym & som what in scorn & despyte he sent to hym a toun
full of tryps lattes he cause he wold have som what for to
playe with all for hym & for his lordes and that he come
him better than to maynteyn any Werry And than anone
our lordes that were embassadours toke his lute & comen
to Englund agayne & told kyng & his counail of the Dolfyn
goodly answer that they had of the Dolfyn & of the pre
sente the which he had sent by to the kyng And when
the kyng had herd his lordes & the assent of the Dolfyn
he was wonder for agrieved & right evell paryed to ward fre
shemen & to ward the kyng & the Dolfyn & thought to avun
ge him upon hym as sone as god wold send hym good ad
myghte & anone he made many lattes for the Dolfyn & all
the best that they he made & they were grete gounes sent for
the Dolfyn to playe with all And than anone the kyng
sent for all his lordes & helde a grete counail at Westmynster

and told by to him the manner that they had of the dolphy
 and of the manner how he sent to him and to his
 brother and to all And that the kyng and his lordes
 should be redy in armes with hys
 and all the best armes that myght be done And gett men of
 archers that myght be gotten and alle othir stuffe
 that longed to Wern as to be wyth with all hys revenue to me
 at somptunton he lammesse nye se wyng without any
 delay wherfor the kyng ordeyned his nauy of shippes wyth
 all maner of stuffe & vitaille that longed to such a wer
 wur of all maner ordinaunces in the haven of Southeamp
 ton in to the nombre of CCC. xx. sailles And than fell
 there a grete disese & a foule meschief for the Wern iij. lordes
 which was the kyng trust moche And thurgh fals couer
 se they had purposed and Imagined the kynges deeth And
 thought to have slayne him and all his bretheren Or he had
 taken the see The which were named thus sir Richard. Erle
 Cambrigge brether to the duke of yorke the second Was the
 lord scowpe tressoner of Englonde the thridde Was sir thomas
 gray knyght of Northwiche And these lordes a few said for
 lucre of money had made promysse to the frenshmen for to
 slayne kyng Henry and all his worthy bretheren by a
 fals trepne so that they had be ware But almyghty
 god of his grete grace helpe his hely honde ouer him & saued
 hem from this pilous mayne & for to haue done this they
 were gaged of the frenshmen a million of gold and that was
 an trece openly proued And for his fals treason they were
 all there Jugged by to the see And this was the Jugge
 ment that they shold be laded at Burgh Hampton and wy
 thouth Northgate there to be laded And thus they ended
 hir lyf for his fals couerise and treason.

And thus as this was done the kyng and all his men
 made hem redy and Werten to shipe and token and sailed

forth With y^e S. C. Shippes and arrived With y^e seyne at ky
 Because vpon our ladies eue the assumption in Normandie
 With all his ordinaunce And so went him forth to darre fl
 te And he seged the tounge all aboute by land & the by w
 ater And sent to the capitayne of the tounge & charged hi
 for to deliuer the tounge. ¶ And the capitayne said that
 he none. Liued him he none he wolde to him yelde but had
 him done his best ¶ And then our kyng said his ordys
 naunce vñ to the tounge that is for to say gonnes Engy
 nes & cupgettes & shaten and cast to the Walles and the vñ
 to the tounge And cast to one bothe tounge a tounge. a lard
 hem vñ to the grounde And then he played at the tynge w
 ith his barde gonne stone And they that were With y^e the
 tounge When they sholde playe the songe Was well a waye
 Alas that ener any wch tynge shalles be made and Cur
 sed all the that were begon & the cyne that euer they were
 borne and on the morwe the kyng did ene ac entrey Gate
 of the tounge that eyn mā shold be made on the morwe to
 make assaute vñ to the tounge ¶ And William Boucheur. &
 Johan graine With y^e other Worthye Burgeis comen to
 the kyng & besought him of his mall pynshood and povert
 to Withdrawe his malice a destruction that he did vñ to
 him and besought him of viij. dayes of respite & to bes
 any rescue myght comen vñ to him & elles to yelde by the
 tounge vñ to him With all his goodes And then the kyng se
 t for the capitayne & kept the tounge still With him.
 ¶ And the lord Gaucourt that was Capitayne of the toun
 ge went forth to Rome in all haste vñ to the dolphyn for
 helpe and socour But then was none in no man of rescue
 for the dolphyn wolde not abyde ¶ And then the Capitayne com
 e agene vñ to the kyng.
 And yelde by the tounge and deliuered him the keyes & then
 he called his vñ the Sell of Dorset and made him to

pit
 es a
 men
 Wie
 e di
 ty r
 toun
 up f
 cha
 the t
 this
 Wor
 lnd
 stop
 all e
 p s
 no r
 yf b
 ¶ C
 soug
 as o
 to p
 m p
 me
 pose
 lgn
 ¶ C
 d e
 dim
 lfe
 p e
 our
 had

1435

pitayne of the towne of Barflete and deliuered him the keyes
and had him gone to put out all the frensh wyll bothe
men women & children and stuffed this towne of Barflete
with Englishmen And then the kyng sente in to englonde
& did crye in euery good towne of Englonde that what crafty
man wol be come thider and inhabite him there in that
towne he shold haue honer & housholde to him and to his heyr
for euer more And so thider went many diuerse mar
chauntz & crafty men and inhabytid hem there to stanzte
the towne And when wel come & when the kyng sawe that
this towne was well stufed bothe of vitaille and of men this
worthy prince toke his leue and went to Calles Ward by
londe & the frenshmen herde of his coming. They thought to
stoppe him his way that he shold not passe that way and in
all the haste that they myghte baken all the brigg: then any
passage was for hors and man in so moche that they myghte
no man passe ouer the riuer nother on hors ne on foot but
yf he shold be drowned.

And therfor our kyng with all his peple went. And
fought his waye from by to Maris Ward And there was
as all the kyngdome of Fraunce assembled and redy
to geue hym battail and for to destroye all his peple But al
myghty god was his gyde and saued hym And all his
myghte and defended him of his enemies power and pur
pose thanked he god that saued so his owne kyngdome And
kyng in his rightfull citie.

And then our kyng beholding and seying the multitudes
of his enemies to which stonde his waye & geue
him battail then the kyng with a meke herte & a good spyr
ite by his handes to almyghty god & besoughe hym of his hel
pe & socour & that day to saue his towne & seruauntz & then
our kyng gadred all his knyghtes and othere peple aboute and
had hym all be a good chey for they shold haue a fair daye &

Remind

gracious Dickie and the brother of all his enemies & pray
ed hem all to make him redy By to the battaille for he Wold
rather be dede than chep in the felds than to be take of his e
nemies for he Wold never put the Reame of England To
munfons for his persone And the duke of porke fell on his
eo & broughe the kyng of about that he Wold graunte hym
the day the a Daunt Ward in his battaille And the kyng
graunted hym his assyng & said graunte mercy wsh of por
ke & prayd hym to make hym redy And than he had every
man to ordeyne a stake of tre & sharp both ends That
the stake myght be pyght in the erthe a shote that his En
mies shold not ouer come hym on horse backe For that was
his false purpose and attayned hym all that for to ouer Ryde
our myghte soonly at the first comyng on of hym at the
first broune And all myghte before the battaille the frensch
men made many grete fires & moche muche with the wyng &
sho weing and plaid our kyng & his wydes at the dysse and
an archer all wey for a blake of his money for they weyn
all had bene here the mornynge the day gan spring
And the kyng by god awise let amie his battaille and his
wenges & charged every man to keep hym self to gedres &
paynd hem all to be of good cheere And when they were
up he asked what tyme of the day it was & they sayd pri
or than sayd our kyng no we is good tyme for all En
gland prayeth for vs and therfor be of good cheere & let vs
go to our Journey & than he said with an high vois yn
the name of almyghty god & of saint George aoure ba
ner & saint george this day thine helpe And than the fre
schmen comynge thus as they Wold haue ouer ridden al
l our myghte but god and our archers made hem sore to
stombe for our archers shot arer at weynge but it was
shes and broughe to ground many of the
For they shon that day for a Wager And once stakes

Henry

made him tope ouer tene tche on othir thae they lay on he
pe & two spere lunge the of hyshe And our kyng With his me
gure & With his men of armes & archers thae talted on he
so thikke With an we a lye on chith stakes & our kyng
With his othe boude faughe manly And thus almy
ghe god and seint George broughe our memies to gual
de & pafe By that day the Victorie & thea we slayne. Of
frenschmen thae day in the felde of agyncourt moo than
xj. M. With prisoners thae we taken & thea we nomb
ed thae day of frenschmen in the felde moo than six score
thousand & of Englishmen nat vij. M. But god that day
faughe for us And after come thea eydnges to our
kyng thae thea was a we be battail of frenschmen ordeyned
wde to stelle on him & comen to warde him And none oure
kyng hec erie thae oure men shold shie his prisoners thae
he take and anone armed his battail agene wde to fyghe
With the frenschmen & When they sa we thae our men lygled
dune his prisoners chaunt they With dowe hem and br
ke his battail and all his army And thus our kyng as
a weiche conquerour had that day the Victorie in the fel
de of agyncourt in picardie And thae our kyng wote
ned agene thea thae the battail was to shie thea peple were
de of Englishmen & yf any we were thae myghe be hol
pe And thea were dede in the felde the Duke of Bar
re the Duke of Alansone the Duke of Barlahe Ec
le of Nauerne the chif Constable of frenche and vij. or
the Erles and the Erchebyschop of Baunces and of good
Barons xy hundred and moo and of worthy knyghtes Of
gentil aduure of whos armures a thousand and five hon
dred And of English men was dede Thae day The
good Duke of yorke & the Erle of souesfolke and of all o
the of Englishmen thea were nae dede passig by Vi-lode
is thanked be god & this battail was on a friday Which

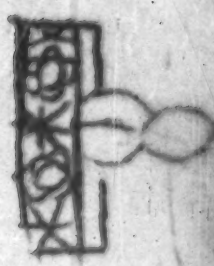
Henry VIII

Was crispyne & Crispyanians day in the moneth of octo
ber And anon the kyng commaunded to Berg farr & the du
ke of porke to be caried forth With him & the Erle of soue
folk ¶ And the other prisoners the duke of Gloucestre the
duke of Burbon the Erle of Bentome the Erle of Ewe
the Erle of Richemond & ser Bursigaune marchall of frans
unce & many other worthy lordes Were then taken with
hauille of agewour & Were broughe by to the towne of
Calys and so ouer the see With the kyng in to Englod
& landed at Douer in shute With all his prisoners in saute
thanked be god almyghty And so come to Canterbury &
offred at seint Thomasse And so forth he rode thurze
hente the nyte Way to Eleham & there he rested till, that
he wold come to london ¶ And then the maye of london
and the Aldermen thereus With all the worthy commu
ners and craftes come to Blakhehe Well and Worthly as
traied to Welcomed our kyng With diuers melodie. And
thanked to Almyghty god of his gracious victorie that he
had shewed for him ¶ And so the kyng & his prisoners pas
sed forth by hem till he come to seint Thomas Wateryng
¶ And there meete With him all Religious With processio
and Welcomed hym And so the kyng come ridyng With
his prisoners thurgh the Citie of london Where that the
re Was shewed many a faire sight at all the condupes &
at the crosse in cheyn as in beuety army of Angles Me
ching the Poetes the Prophetes and Virgines With dy
uerse melodie seking and spynge to Welcome our kyng
¶ And all the condupes reuynge With Pyne And the
kyng passed forth by to seint pauls and there meete With
him viij. Bishoppes reuessed and mistred With sensers to
Welcome the the kyng & songen for his gracious victorie
a Sanctus And there the kyng offred and tolde to
god Westminster And then the maye tolde his Loue of

Henry VIII

the kyng & wth some apene And in the 4th y^{er} of kyng
Henryes reigne the Emperour of. Almayne
kyng of Rome and of hungarie in to Englonde & so to the
Cite of london ¶ And the maye & the alderman Wich the
sheriff & Worchepreastes of london by the kyngs commaund
fremene mette Wich him on the Blake heche in the best array
that they coude on horseback ¶ And then they Welcomed h^{im}
& broughe him to london Wich moche honour & greet reuerence
¶ And at saint Thomas Watering they mette Wich h^{im}
the kyng Wich all his lordes in good array ¶ And then w^{as}
a Worchepreasting b^{etwene} the Emperour & the kyng
& then they kyssed to goodnes & embouchid the ocher & then
the kyng toke the Emperour by the honde & so they w^{ent} ry
dyng thurgh the Cite of london vⁿ to seint pauls and the
m they a light & offred and all the Bishoppes shoddy reuef
fed Wich senars in the honde sensing

¶ And then they toke h^{is} hors and riden vⁿ to Westm^{ster}
ster And there the kyng lodged the Emperour in his owⁿ
Pleas and there he rested hym a greet while and all the
the kynges cosse And sone after come the Duke of boland
in to Englonde to come and see there the Emperour And
to speke Wich him and Wich kyng Henry of Englonde
And he was Worchely resseved and lodged in the Bisho
pes p^{ar}ce of Elg and all at the kynges ceste ¶ And w^{hen}
the Emperour had well rested hym and say the l^{and} in
diuerse p^{ar}ces and knowe the commoditis than by pros
w^{ill}e of tyme he toke his due of the kyng but or he p^{er}ce he
was made knyght of the Barre & resseved and W^{erred}
the liuery and then he thanked the kyng and all his W^{or}
chep^{er} lordes and the kyng and he went ouer the see vⁿ to
Calys & abeyn ther longe tyme to haue an asuere of the
frensch kyng & at the last it w^{as} a p^{er}shid h^{is} myghte noze &
he t^{er}pour toke his due of the kyng & p^{er}sed forth i goodnes



2. Henry 5.

me & our kyng come ouer a penye in to Englon d in all the
haste that he myghte & that was on seint lukes eue that he
come lambiche And on the monday next after he come to
the parlyme at Westmynster And in this same yere was a
great drethe of come in Englon d but chanked by god it la-
sted noe longe And in the iij. yere of kyng henrys reigne
the v. he helde his parlyment at Westmynster in the begynnyng
of the moneth of October & lasted vj. to the purification
of our lady that next after & then was graunted by to
the kyng maynteyn his better bothe of spirituall & temporal
to any hold tyme & a disme And then anon the kyng prayed
all his lordes to make hym wdy to stranges him in his reigne
And anon he let make a newe tenure & charged all men
to be wdy at hampton in Wythson Weke that next after Whits-
southe any delay And then the kyng made the Duke of Be-
xford protectour & defendour of his Reame of Englon d
in his absence & charged him to keep his lawes & maynteyn
bothe spirituall & temporal.
And when the kyng had thus done & sette all thing in his
kyngdome on seint markes day that was that tyme holden Whits-
yday he toke his hors at Westmynster & come wdyng to you-
ke & there he offered & toke his lue And so wde forth that
gh he cam taking his lue of all maner of peple as well of
poures as of rich praying hym all in generall to pray for his
And so he wde forth to seint Georges & there he offered & toke
his lue of the maner charging hym. to keep well his cham-
ber. And so rode forth to hampton and there also toke he his
revenue wde redy and comen forth there was all his nauie
of shippes with his ordinaunce garned and well staffed
lodged to such a riall kyng with all maner of vittailles for
such a riall peple as well for hors as for mā as lodged for such
a verriour that is for to say armure godis trippes engi-
nes so the hastilys Bugges of lither scaling ladders.

5.
mailes spades shoules pikes pauers to wes and ares
to wistrynges Tounes chestes and pipes full of awes es
nedd for such a Worthy Werour that no thynge was. To
seche when tyme come chidre come to him shippes lade with
gonnes and gonnepoudre And when this was redy and
his attene come the kyng and his lades with all his riall
hste went to shipp and when the see and saild in to Normā
die and loked at toulle vpon the lamasse day than next and
then he made xl viij. knyghtes at his lording. And then
the kyng hring of many enemies vpon the see that is to
say in galle carrillies hulkes galleys and shippes that we
en come to trowe his nouye And anone he commaunded
the Erle of the marche to be chief chypetayne and many o
ther Worthy lades with him with men of armes and archy
ers to go to the see that none Enemies defouled his uange
ne encad his lode in no parte for to trouble his vyage
ne his Journey And anone the Erle toke his meynge
went to shipp and skymmed the see and kepte the see w
th that no maner of Enemy durst wite vpon the see and
anone the kyng sent his lades vnto the Capetayne of
Toulle and charged him to deliuer hym his Castell and his
toun and Elks he shold neither lue meune child a lye.

And anone the capitayne and iij. othe Burgeys of
the toun broughte the keyes to the kyng and besoughte h
of grace and the kyng depured the keyes to Sir Johan
Bpely and made hym Capitayne and commaunded hym
to put out all fasshmen bothe of the toun and of the ca
stell And ther best was the Castell of lours and the
the kyng sent the Erle marshall with a faw menge
and laund the toun And it was sold to the Erle. And
boughte hym the keyes And he broughte the keyes to the
kyng and the kyng toke hym the keyes and made hym ca
pitayne of the castell of lours and of all that loded ther to

Heremy M. B. ends.

and charg'd him to deliver out all the sashmen And the
the kyng held forth his wey to canerbat was a strange tou
ne a fair and a Riall castell theryn And aune he sent his
heraude to the Capptaine & charged him to deliver the to
une & his Castell as elles he wolde hem gete With strange
of Rode ¶ And they answered & said that he toke hem no
ne ne none they wolde deliver by to him And than aune
he laide his siege by to the toun & laid gunnes on every
side and beres a dunge boche Wallis and tounes and shewe
moch peple in hir houses and therein stokes and the good du
ke of clarence laide a dunge the Wallis on his side by to the
grounde ¶ And so Withyn a While the kyng by his counail
sa wold the tounz all about ¶ And anon the duke of cla
rence had entered in to the toun & shewe dunge right till he
come to the kyng and spak wothir may nechly and euer
they cried a clarence and saint George And ther was
de on the Wallis on the kynges side a worthy man that
was called springer the whiche the kyng commaunded to be
ried in the abbey of canterbury by William conquerour on
whos soule god have mercy Amen ¶ And than the kyng
come in to the toun With his brother the duke of clarence &
many othir worthy lorde With moch schampna & miche
¶ And than the kyng commaunded the capiteyn to deliver his
his Castell & he besoughe the kyng to graunte hym xiiij. dayes
of respit yf any rescue wolde come and yf none come to
liuer him the keyes and the Castell at his commaundment
And Under this composition was the toun and the Ca
stell of Baiours With othir tounes forresses & Villages
to the nomber of xiiij. Upon the hill before the Castell of
Cane our kyng right all his lorde that fomed a toun as
moch as Cane and by that comthynge that no rescue
wolde comthire ¶ And so as the xiiij. day at End the ca
pitaine come out of the Castell and shewd the kyng to

See 118 in
Chronicle of the Lewis 1493

for hussie & broughte yn to the tour of London. And anon
after he brake out of the tour and went in to Wales & there
he kepte him longe tyme And at the last the lord Ma Wye
mette with him & tolde him but he stode at grette defence lon-
ge tyme & was sore wounded or he wolde he take And so the
lord Ma Wye men broughte him out of Wales to London in a
wherlocke and so he was broughte to Westmynster & there
was examined of certeyne pointes that were putte vpon him
and he said no nay & so he was couinced of the charge for
his hussie & dampned before the Justices yn to the death for
treason And so he was led yn to the tour agene and there
he was layd on an hurdell & drawe thurgh the Cite to Se-
int Giles felde and there was made a newe pair of galews
& a swinge chayne and a coler of yron for him and there he
was honged & burnt on the Gallows and all for his wicked-
nesse and his fals opinions

a No in the vi. yere of kyng Henries regne the v. he see
his brother the lord Thomas Beaufort Duke of Exeter wi-
th a faire myght of men of armes and archers to for the cy-
tie of Rome and there displayed his banner and sene braueries
yn to the towne And had him yelde that Cite yn to our
kyng his liege lord And they said he tolde hem none to lies
in ne none he shold lene there but yf it were righte & yf
broughte and meued with his handes for othere answers wol-
de they none geue but goones And then the duke tolde go-
od auisement of the gownde all aboute And anon there
yssued of the Cite a grette myght of men of armes both on
horse backe & on foot & anon our myght mette with hem ad-
ouer came an hert of hem and there were slayne & take xxx-
pces of righte good menys bodies and the remenant
fledde agene in to the towne And the duke went yn to
the king and tolde him all how he had
sped and how he liked the gownde And anon as he was

24
go they cast a Toun: all hir subbarres aboute the cite By To
the hard ground for the kyng there no wasseng shold has
ui at his comyng and the fridag before l' amasse day cha
negt folde the kyng out kyng With his hoste come before rone A
anone he sette his siege wunde aboute that cite and anone
he ley his ordinaunce By to the toun And the kyng and
his lordes Were lodged in the charterhous & gatte stangels
aboute hym & that was in the Este partie of the Cite And
the duke of clarence lodged him at the West end in a West
Abbey before the porte chaunc & the duke of Exeter in The
Northside before the porte Beaunesy & he Wene the duke
of clarence & the duke of Excestre Was the Erl marshall
lodged With a swonge po War before the castell gate II And
thay Was the Erl of Dimond the lord Lexington and the
lord talbot With hir wenne nept him & thay fir Johan co
ne Wille & many othir noble knyghtes of name Wyth hyr
wenne lay With the duke of clarence and from the duke of
Excestre to Ward the kyng Were lodged the lord Roos the
lord of Willaby the lord phelpe & fir William porter kny
ght With hir wenne before the port of seint hilane And
tha Was the erle of montagne With his retails lodged in the
abbey of seint Katherine And the Erl of salisbury With
his wenne lay on that othir side of seint Katherine and
Sir Ihan gwy knyght Was lodged at the abbey that ys
called moun seint Michel And fir phelip de kynghe
the kynges tresorer Was legged he Wene the Water of sey
ne and the abbey & kept the Ward vnder the hill and the
Baron of cambe Was legged vnder the Water side to be
p the passage And Iohn the squier lay nept to him on the
Water side And thyn squiers kept manly the Water Of
seyne and fougte With hir enemier ofte tymes & on that
othir side of seyne lay the Erl of hunkyngdone And
maistir Reuill the Erls sone of Westmerland And Eyr

This is summe of the
5.

Gillert Buisaillie Erle of Here & Sir Richard of aris
all & the had seiers With his wane before port on poun
te and the of the had stronge ordinaunce And the
king did make at pounclarge ouer the Water of seyne a
stronge & amygghen chynen of Iron & put it churgh gate.
piles fast right in the ground and that went ouer the Ry
uer of Seyne that no vessel myght passe that in no kynde
And about that chynen the king he made a brigg ouer the
Water of sayne that may a hors and alle othir cariage my
ght go to & fro all ymes Whan nedd was And than com
the Erle of Warwylle & had gode Dountione by to the
king Henry of England

And anon the king sent the Erle of Warwylle to
Caudebecke to besiege it and Whan he come before the towne he
sent his brenders by to the Capitayne & had him yeld the
towne Upon pene of Death And anon he laid his seege and
the capitayne besoughe the Erle that he myght come to his
posence & speke With him And so the good Erle graunted
him & than he come out & four othir burgeis With him &
entred so With the Erle that this same town was by
the composition to done as the cite of Rome did & the Erle
graunted & consented the to Upon this condicion that the
kings name With his ordinaunce myght passe by by him
in saufe weyght any maner shipp or wrecchaunce & To
his composition they feth to the seales and the shippes pass
ed by by him in saufe & come before the cite of Rome in to
an hundred shippes & the chynen cast her ankers & than this ci
ty was besyged both by land & by Water & Whanne all this
was done and shippes comen by than come the Erle of Wa
rre Wylle agene to the king and Agged him by Wene the
Abbez of seynt Richman and the king will that the
Abbez entred and was yold by to the king And than
he remembred him this & Agged him before port mardenupl
66 in

1st page of 100

Henry

and also was the Earl of Salisbury commanded by the King
to make him wdp to wds but that come hasty tpdng and
made him to abide And so he returned agene & lodged h
beside the Earl of Huntingdon till the siege was ended and
then come the Duke of Gloucester the Kinges brother from the
siege of Chirbourg the which he had taken & gaten & stuf
fed agene to the Kinges house & profit by to the crowne of
England And when he was come to the King before Rome
a nothe lodged with great ordinace before port seite hildie mo
re new the town and his enemies than any othir day by y
wddes of laughter within shoc of quarrill And with him lay
the Earl of Suffolk and the Lord of Bergeuenez with alle
hir retinue & stronge ordinaunce and manly & proudly so
ughte every day with hir enemies euer When they issued
out of the cite ¶ And then come the priour of Egl magne
of Ireland ouer the see by to the King with a fair myne
of men of armes of hir owne contray gysse the somme of 100
C. good menys bodies & the King welcomed him & made
hem right good chym And then come tpdnges by to the
King the chalping of frounce and the Dolphin and the
Duke of Burgoyne wolde come a doun to rescue the cite of
Rome with a stronge power of all maner of nations and
broke the siege and he casted him to enen on the North side
of the hoste because that there was the beste entree & moost p
pnt ground And therfor the King assigned the priour of
Egl magne with his power & lodged him on the north side
of the hoste to stoppe hir passage & was by the feast of lions
¶ And of this ordinaunce they were full glad & so they were
forth in hast and kept ground and the place that the King
and his counsell had assigned hem

¶ And they quike hem as good Berriours by to the King
ye No We Well I all ye We Which was the chief Captay
nes and gouernours of the cite of Rome May We Our

Handwritten note:
K... ..

William Was chief capitayne both of the cite of the Ca
stell and Mon sie Tervigan he Was capitayne of port de
may mon sie de la Roche he Was Capitayne of the Disners
Mon sie anthonie he Was lieutenant to mon sie Guy boyl
he Henry chanseier he Was capitayne of the port de la po
unte Johan mantrivas he Was capitayne of the port de
la chastell mon sie de Puaug he Was capitayne of the por
t of saint hilaire the bastard of Tyns he Was capitayne of
the port martenille And guntre Jakes a Wyrtshyber
tior he Was capitayne of all men of Werra and he Was go
verneur oute Ward both on horsebacke & a foot of all men
of armes When they passed oute of the cite of all the por
tes he he married as they shold when With our meyne And
each of these capitayns had .v. M. men of armes and some
me more & at the first coming of our kynge there were no
bred by heraudes in to ecc. M. men & women and children
What ponge a orde and amonge all these Was many a ma
full man of his bondes & so they proved him When they p
sured of the cite both on horsebacke and on foot for they co
me never at one gate oute all one hure at iij. iij. gates & at
every gate .ij. or iij. M. of good mennes bodies & armed as
manfully contend With our Englishmen and moche peple
slayne diverse tymes With gonnes quawlls and othir or
dinounce And this siege durd .xx. Weekes And ever they
of the toun hoped to have he rescued but ther was none so
at the last they kepte so longe the toun that ther dyde ma
ny thousande Within the toun for default of me of men
of women of children for they had they hir hors dogges
and catte that was in the toun And othe tymes the m
of armes drove oute the poore peple oute at the gates of the
toun for spending of victuals And anone our Englis
hmen drove they in to the toun agayne
So at the last the capitayne of the toun sawe the meschief

My MS. C ends

Hen. 5th

that they were was assured and also the scarcity of victuals
e that the people so died for default of meat every day ma-
ny thousands And also said poughestown lie a soule spe-
modius paper e When the Chanons they sent by to the
king beseeching him of grace e mercy and brought the key-
es of the town by to the king e delivered the town to him
e all the souldiers voided the town With his hors e harnes
ys e the commons of the town for to abyde and dwell full
in the town perly to pay to him e to his succours for alle
maner customes and fee fermes and rathemes ¶ And
than the king entered in to the town e rested him in the cas-
tell till the town was sette in to the and in governaunce.
¶ How the king of England was made hither a regent
of france e how he wedded quene Katherine ca. cc. xl v.
a No anone after that time was gotten by and mas-
ny ocher townes in haas normandie pas them over
Wiehouse strole or siege When they understode that the king
had gotten roue Also this same year had bene a pite made e
I Worne his Worne the duke of Burgoyne and the dolphine W
hich were I Worne spy on our sides body that they shold be-
we and assiste eche ocher against their enemies e after this
conemy to this oche the duke Johan of Burgoyne was slay-
ne e pitously murdered in the presence of the dolphine W
herfore the frenchmen were greatly grieved e of betray ne-
cessite labound to have a emette With the king of England
for the king of England was daily of chary townes cas-
tles and fortresses also this same year was quene Jane
arrested and brought to the castle of Leeds in lank and one
foure ran dolfe a doctor of divinite his confessor. Which of
ward was slayn by the prison of the town falling at Ber-
tes and Selan And after Quene Jane was delivered.
¶ In the vii. year boche kynges of france and of Eng-
land were accorded and king Henry was made hither and a

gent of france and Wedd dame Katherine the kynges
wyght of france And Wedd dame Katherine the kynges
doughter of france after tynes in champayne on crinite / 3 day
And this was made by the mene of philipp newly made
duke of burgoyne which was / borne to kyng henry for
sauinge his fader dech and was become Englyssh And the
ne kyng which his ne we wife went to paris when he was
rially married And from thens he which his lordes & the
duke of Burgoyne & many othir lordes of france laid sie
ge to diuers castles & castelles that helde of the Tolpynus
partie and was hem but the tounge of melun helde longe for
cherin was good & few dours In the viij. yere the kyng al
quene came ouer see & landed on canelmasse day i the mor
we at doner And the xiiij. day of feuerer the kyng came
to london And the xxj. day of the same moneth the que
ne come And xxiiij. day of the same she was crowned at W
estmynstre Also the same yere auone aft Ester. The kyng
helde a plement at Westmynstre at which plement it was
ordyned that the gold in Englysh wyne shold be weyed ad
none resseped but by waight And anone after which son
dich the kyng sailed to calys & passed so forth in to frau
ce And in march the xxij. day before kyng came ouer the
duke of charce was slayne i fraunce with othir lordes & pry
soners as the Erle of buryngdon the Erle of somerset
which diuers othir & all was because they wold not taken
which hem archers but thought to haue doo which the frech
the selfe without hem And yit when he was slayne the
archers com & rescued the body of the duke which they w
old haue caried which he god haue mercy on his soule he w
as a valiant man And the same yere be we cristmas & ca
del mas the toun of melun was golt to the kyng In the
ix. yere on seint Nicholas day in decer was borne henry
the kynges first begotte son at Wyndesore whos godfader

Henry the first King of France
Henry the first King of France

at fonestone Was Henry Biffhop of Wyndesore and Jos
han duke of bedford & the duchesse of boland Was god mos
ter & Henry chicheley Archebiffhop of canterbury Was
godfader atte wifermynge And in the y^r y^e the cite of m^r
Was in b^re Was gotten Which had bene longe besegge And
this same y^e the quene shipped at hampton & sailed ouer
to the kyng in fraunce Where she Was worshipfully Re
ceyued of the kyng & also of the kyng of fraunce hir sader &
of hir modur & thus kyng Henry Wan fast in fraunce and
held a grette assise and satte at dincet at a grette fest in parys
crouned and the quene also Which had not bene seen to fore
& alle peple resorted In to his court But as to the kyng Of
fraunce he held a none assise ne rule But Was left almost al
lone Also this y^e the Weter wille Was sette vpon poulaus
steple at london And this y^e in the moneth of august the
kyng Weyte like at boye & vngone & Whan he sa W he stold
dye he made his testamēt & ordyned many chynges nobly
for his soule & digneuely assigued all the rightes of holy ch
urch in so forforth that Whan he Was enoynd he said the
seruice With the psalte and at the Vers of the psalme misere
re mei deus that Was benigne fac dñe in bona voluntate tua
spōn de edificauerunt muri Jerusalem he had wne chere and said
thus O good lord thou knowest that myne curiue dothe
ne & ye is if I myghte I wote to medifie the walis of jerusalem
& chene the priest pored forth & made an ende & anone aft
this moste noble pince & victorious kyng flour in his tyme
of castel chivalerie Whom all the world subbed gaf his so
ule in to the hōdes of god & dyde & mad an ende of his na
rrowell life at the said boie & dyde befor p^ris the xxv di y^e
of his age & whose soule god haue mercy & chene Was the
bodye charyd & caryd & laid in a wal char & an ymage all In
to hit Was laid vpon the wyse w^rith dūse mynys & bose
counted richell With barms of englōd & fraunce & alle w^rld

armes of seint Edward seint Edmond & othir & by the
gude multitude of lordis with whom was the kyng of scot
land & many othir lordis which accompanyd the body till
it came by to Westmynster by land in Englonde And in
every toun by the way he had solampnely his dirige On
thruen & masse on the merne & moche almisse was gyven to
poure peple by the way And the viij. day of nouembre af
ter the corps was broughe church londen with gude wuerre
& solampnite to Westmynster wher he now ligghe was.
Wurshifullly buried & after was layd on his tombe a ryall
ymage like to him selfe of siluer & gilt which was made
at the cost of queene Katherine And thus ended & this entred
& buried the noble kyng henty the fyrst on whose soule ad
all cristen soules god haue mercy amen.

¶ Of the lawde of kyng henty the fyfthe & what he or
deyned for kyng richard & for him selfe after his deeth
Ca. ducentesimo xlii

¶ It is to be noted that this kyng henty the v. was
a noble prince as he was kyng & crowned so he was
to for in his pouerth he had bene with riches & spared no
thing of his lusses ne thys but accomplisshid the after hys
kynge but asone as he was crowned enownd & sacred
auon soderly he was charged in to a newe man & sette all
his entent to lyue vertuously & mayntainyng of holy church
destrolyng of heretikes keepyng Justice & dyfending of his reame
& subgettes & for as moche as his fadre had depost by his la
bour & goodly richard & pitously made he to die & for the
fear done to his apell his liegallie he was sent to come to be
affoillid therof for which offence the pope & his fadre
enioned hym to make hym be penit for it & praye & liff
as he had done to be takid from hym his naturall lyf & ther
for he shold do this in hope to be delyvered about his
body that for the retyrd of his soule & his foundmynthe

James Pinner bound
Amongst them that
came by the Rens
not by the Rens

James Pinner bound
Amongst them that
came by the Rens
not by the Rens

Here my square type
copy ends.

Henry

mentend & Lye in Bury in spiritual lye & also that he
shold eury Welk on the day as it cometh about of his de
the haue a solempne masse of Requiem on the euen to for a
dridge Wich is l'sons & a dole to poure al Way on that day
of xi. shillings viij. pns to be del yd pnyng mels And onis
in the yere at his annpuersarie his heremene to be sol'den
in the moste honeste wise & to be del'd that day xx. pounde
in pns to poure peple And toke eury moult to haue xx.
shillings Which all these thynges pformed this noble kyng
for his fadre for h'ng Henry iij. his fadre pformed it not du
rnyng his lye Whom as it ys sayd god touch yd. a Was a
l'pner he died Also thine this noble pnce Lete to call
all the abbottes & priours of seue benettes ordm in En
ghnd & had thm in the Chappere hous of Westminster for
the reformation of the ordm Wherby he had comynpacy
on And also Wich bysschopes and men of the sp
rytuales in Sofer forch that they doubred sou he wol di
haue had the Temporaltes ouer of their honours Wherfore
by chaunge labour and procuryng of the sp'rytuales En
comaged the kyng to challenge Normandy And his nygh
in frunce to extend to sette hym a Werke thm that he shold
not sette occasions to them in so such moeres And all hys
lyue after he labound in the Werke in edifying gite
part of the Reame of frunce that by the a gument of the
kyng Charles had at the gouernance of the Vene of fr
unce And Was proclaimed regent and heyr of frunce
And so uoe Wichstandyng alle this gite Wth that he
had yit he mentend hys soule and also that he Was met
tall a muste die for which he ordeyned by hys lye the pla
ce of sepulchre When he is no to be buryd and eury day in
masses p'p'ual to be s'ogen in a laun almyll quere his sep
ulchre of Wich the myght masse the first & laste masse
shall beas is assign'd by hys as it ap'ryth by this folowig

Henry

Henrici misse quinti sunt hic tabulati
 Que fuassint sunt p monachos celebrata
 Die dñica Prima sic assumpta. In festo Virginis alme
 Poscit postremam xpūs de morte e resurgens.
 Feria ij. Prima salutata. festo Virginiis extat
 Nunciat angelicis. laudem postrema choris.
 Feria iij. Esse deum natum. de Virgine pma facitur
 Comemorat natam. sic vltima missa mariā
 Feria iij. Prima celebratur ad honore neupmatis almi
 Vltima cōceptam. denūciat esse mariam
 Feria v. Semp prima colit debet de corpe pprii
 Vltima sic facta. de Virgine purificata
 Feria vj. Condece de prima celebratur de cruce sacra
 Neqz salutata. fiet postrema marie.
 Sablato. Omnes alii. scdorest prima colunda supnos
 Vltima de requit. pro defunctis petie esse.
 Semper erit media. de pprietate dei.

¶ And þis the noble kyng Henry the 3. founde ii. houses
 of religion one called Syon by the brynford of the ordie of
 seinte Brigide bothe of men and women ¶ And on the
 othir lye of the Ryuer of Tamys an house of monkes of
 Chartreus in which two places he his continually pray
 for nyghte and day for ever whay they of syon wste they
 of the chartreus done their seruice and in lyke wyse whā
 they of the chartreus wste the othir goon and by the rpn
 gnyng of the bellis of eicher place the knoweth when they
 haue ended their seruice which he nobly endoweth e to day
 by the gte almesse & as in the chartreus cartue.
 cldren ben soude to soude & at his certate almesse giue daily
 ¶ And ye besyde all this he had founded a recluse whi
 che shal he al waye a preest to pray for him by the said char
 treus which preest is well & suffimely endoweth for his
 e a seruante to here may all princes take ensample by this

25406

noble prince that reynynge so litle tyme not fully .x. yere
 did so many noble acts as well for his soule to be ppeue
 ly remynde & proude for as in his worldly conquests &
 be king in his most lusty age despised & rebid sinne &
 as vertuous & a grete Justicer in so moche that all the pri
 ces of cristendome drede him & also of hebenes & had de
 mined in him selfe if god wold haue spared him that he w
 old haue spared him that he wold haue werd agayn the
 samyns & for to knowe the aide of othir princes & all the pa
 sages in that Journey he sent a knyght of brende Na
 med sir Hugh de lanoye vnto Iherlm but er he returned
 he dyde at Rops du Vincene in the xxxvi. yere of his age vnto
 whos soule god haue mercy

How kynge henry the vi reigned beyng a childe not
 one yere of age & of the bataille of vernoull in perche
 fter kynge henry the v. reigned henry his soka. cc. xl. vii.
 ne but a childe & not fully a yere olde whos reigne be
 gan the first day of septembre the yere of our lord M. ccc. xxii
 & his kynge beynge i child Was moche doubted & drede by cau
 si of the grete conquest of his fadre & also the wisdome & gub
 ding of his Uncles the duke of bedford & the duke of glou
 after this yere the xxvii. day of october the duke of glou
 & kech humed at seile denis & that was the duke of bedford
 made regent of fraunce & the duke of gloucestre was made p
 tectour & defendour of englond & the first day of march aftir
 as sir william milour prest departed of his prestice & the
 morne aftir he was brete i smythfeld for her he this yere sir
 Jaes sir Ward kynge of scote married dame Jane the duches
 doughter of clarence of hir first houshold chere of somerset &
 seile mary ouerwas also this yere the xxviii. day of august
 was the battail of vernoull i perche but wene the duke of bed
 ford regent of fraunce the duke of alafone which was a gre
 at battail & the duke of bedford had on his side with hym the

John 6

Erle of salisbury montagu and the lord talbot & alle the
poer that they wude make in Normandie the garnisons ke
pt And also many capitaynes With moche peple of The
duke of burgoyne And on that oehir side Was the duke of
alaunson the duke of conuoy that Was the erle Douglas the
Erle of boughair With many lordes of fraunce & grete comp
panie of Swethes & arminakes And thence the Erle dō
glas called the duke of bedford Johan With the liden swe
rd and he sent him word agayne that he shold fide that
day that his swerd Was of steel And so the battaille Joy
ned on boche sides & foughe longe that the wyse noman
who shold haue the better a gait While But at the laste as
god wold the victorie fell vñ to the Englyssh peie for the
were slayne the Erle Douglas Which a litell before Was ma
de duke of Tumpne the Erle of Roilayne the Erle of Al
marce the Erle of tounce the Erle of Baunton & the Vi
count of Nerbornen Which Was one of them that the Wi
duke Johan of Burgoyne liuel yng to fore the wolphyne &
many moo vñ to the nombur of ten thousand & moo & after
Was taken prisoner the duke of Alannson and many oer
hir lordes and gentils of fraunce But Swethes that day we
re slayne wune right the substance of them alle

¶ In the thaddre yere of kyng Henry the vi. the duke of
Gloucestre married the duchesse of holand & went ouer see to
ith hir in to flandre for to take possession of his wyfe encha
tunne When he Was honourably receyued & taken For
lord of the land But sone after he Was fayne to retourne ho
me agayne and left his wyfe and his tynfour that he bro
ught With in a towne is called Mounse in flandre Which
promysed for to be true to him not Withstandyng they de
lyured The lady to the duke of Burgoyne Whiche sent
hir to gaunte And from thence she escaped in a mannes a
raie & come to zeland to a touer of his owne called zeland

3. Hen. vi.

And few elens she wente to a towne in holand called. The
gto Wt & then she was stronge ynough & Wickford the
po duke of Burgoyne And sone after the duke of Glouc
ter sent ouer in to helpe the lord Fitz Water With archie
men of Weir And archers for to helpe and sowe the lord
sawp duchesse of Holand. Which loked at a place in zelad
called Bre Weris hauen When the ladies of the countie came to
une & foughte With hym & in conclusion he was fayne to
ithow he him and his meyne to the see a gane But yie he
the We & hure diuerse ladies & moche peple of that same con
trey And so returned home agayne With his meyne and
preuailled no thing Also this same yere Erle of Salys
bury the Erle of Sussex the lord Wilby and the lord Bea
lpe With their retinue had slege to the cite of Manus the
Which Cite was yolden to them in shere tyme With many
oerhir stronge townes & castles to the nombre Of. xxxv.
This tyme alle Normandie & a gret part of fraunce by to
Oulianee Was vnder the obeyssance of the kyng of Eng
land And alle the remenaunt of fraunce Was in gret tribu
lacion & meschief.

How ther was a grette attrape like to haue bene bi
twene the Cardinal and the duke of Gloucestre & of
the coronacion of kyng Henry the liete bothe in En
gland and in fraunce

Capitulo ducentesimo plviii

In the iij. yere the same nyghe that the Glaim of Bud
Johan Countre had taken his charge Was a grette
Wacche in London for offray that Was bidden the bisschop
of Wynechestre & the duke of Gloucestre pactioner & for
the maire With the peple of the Cite sold adde by the du
ke of Gloucestre as pactioner of the Kieame but by labo
ure of lordes that wente with him & in especiall by the lab
our of the prince of portingale ther Was a pactione take

that after was no harme done & after the battaille of Berners
in the duke of bedford came over in to england
And on Witsfunday this same yere at Wyndesore he dubbed
king Henry Angge And forth with the said king hen-
ry dubbed also these knyghtes whose names foloweth that
to wit Richard duke of york also the sonne & heir of The
duke of northfolke the Erle of Ogenford the Erle of West-
merland the sonne & heir of the Erle of northumberland the
sonne and heir of the Erle of Warmond the lord Roos Sir
James butler the lord narmas Sir Henry gray of an-
kerwille Sir William newill lord of wonbrigge sir george.
Druid lord barmer the lord Wellis the lord Berkeley the sonne
& heir of the lord Talbot his Rauf gray of Wexh Sir Ro-
bert Ber the Richard gray Sir Edmond longerford Sir
Robert Wylkfeld his John Botall the Sir raynold cobham
Sir John passfield sir thomas rustall Sir John chid-
oke Sir Rauf longerford sir William drury sir William.
of thomas sir Richard Carbonell Sir Richard Wyndesore
Sir John schirke the Sir nicholas blouke sir Rauf the
archdeacon sir Edmond trafford sir William Cheyne sir William
laughey sir John June sir Gilebert leauchamp

¶ Item in the viij. yere the duke of bedford with the duchesse
his Wyfe went over for to calke & a litle to fow there o-
ver Harry bishop of Wyndesore & on our lady day. An
nunciid in our lady church at calke the bishop of Win-
chester whan he had songe masse was made cardinall & he
helping to fow the hys under the dulle of bedford sette the hare
on his hys and then went his bulles and as well of his char-
ge as the mowping of his benefices spirituall & temporall.

¶ And this same yere was grette abundaunce of wyne that
the fabrike of hys and of wine was bestowed for it was
used almost every other day This same yere the good Er-
le of salisbury Sir thomas Mountagu was hys dyce or

J. 1486

hannes at which flegd he Was slayne With a goinne Which
come out of the tounes Whos soule god haue mercy and
Forch sich that he Was slayne Englishmen neuer gat ne
pauailled in fraunce but ever after began to lise littill &
littell till all Was lost ¶ Also this same yere a baton muz
chard a good Wedd We in her bedd without algate Which
Wedd We fond him for almesse and he had a Way all that he
had And after this he toke greich of holy church at seint ge
orges in soue Werke & there toke the crosse a forf Wom chys
lund And as he Went it hapend that he came by the place
Wher he did this cursed dede in the suburbis of London ad
the Women of the same parisshe come out With stones Car
nell dunge & so We made a dede of him not Withstandyng
the Constable and many ocher men beyng present to kepe
him for there Were many Women & had no pite ¶ Also this
same yere the duke of northfolke With many gentelmen ad
poman toke his barge the viij. day of noumber at seynt
mary ouer pes for to haue goo churgh London brigg and ch
urgh mys guydyng of the barge it ouer the We on the py
logz many men drownd but the duke himselfe With. h.
or iij. lepe vpon the piles & so We saved With helpe of me
that Were aboue the brigg With casted downe Roopes by
hiche they saued him selfe This same yere on seint Peter
des day lyng Henry beyng viij. yere of age Was crowned
at Westmynster at Whos coronacion there was xxxiij. kny
ghtes This yere on seint Georges day he passed ouer the
see to calys toward fraunce About this tyme and a fore
the Reame beyng in grete miserie and tribulacion the wol
phine With his partie began to make Werre and gat certeyn
places and makes strusses vpon Englishmen by the
ment of his Capitayns that is to We in her and pord
de sagneralles and spiciall a mayd Which they named la
puella de diu This mayd hood lyke a man and Was a

Hand 16

Valyane capitayne amonge them & toke vpon hir many
gret enterprises in so moch that they had a helmed to haue
acouered alle their losses by hir not wichstandyng at the
the laste after many gret feates by the helpe and p[ro]u[isi]o[n]e
of Sir Johan Lugeuburgh which was a noble Capitay
nes of the dukes of Burgoyne & many Englysshmen p[ro]
carres & Burgoyngs which were of our partie before the
twe of c[on]p[re] the xxij. day of May the foresaid puelle was
take in the feld & armed like a man & many ocher Capitay
nes with her And were all brought to Roan and there
he was put in prison and there she was Iugged by the las
we to be burnt & churche she said that she was with chylde
whereby she was respited a while but in conclusion it was
founde that she was not with chylde & churche she was be
come in Roan & the ocher Capitaynes were put to traunsons
and entreated as men of warre bene accustomed & c.
¶ This same yere aboute candlemasse Richard hunder a
Bollepackee was dampned for an heretike & brent a thou
hills And aboute midlente Sir thomas lagget p[re]st ad
dicane of maner i Estfeyr beside Balden was disgraced &
dampned for an heretike and brent in smythesfeld And al
so in this same yere whyles the kyng was in france ther w
ere many heretikes & sollers that had purposed to haue ma
de a rissyng & castedilles in many places But blissed be
god al myghty the capitayn of kyng was taken whos name
was William manndrille a Venar of abendone and lay
ly of the same toun which named him selfe Jack sharp
of Wygmoreland in Wales and after ward he was helde
at abendone in the Wyson Wyke on the xij. day this
same yere the vij. day of february kyng Henry the vi. was
crowned kyng of France at Paris in the church of our
lady with gret sollemnite then kyng was the Cardi
nall of England the duke of Bedford and many ocher

Henry 8.
kings of fraunce & of England And after this comen-
a gath feste holden at paris the kyng returned from thence
to Roane so to Ward calys And the ix day of fev-
ber at Dover Whom all the compnes of Kent met at Be-
rmondoun hit went counterburge Dover all in red hoodes &
so came forth till he come to the Black heath wherfor he
was meete with the main Johan Welles with all the cra-
ftis of London clad all in white & so they brought hym to
London the xxj. day of the same moneth ¶ This same yere
was a trespasse of the Wolles of calys made by the soud-
iours by cause they were not paid of their wages wherfor
the duke of bedford Regent of fraunce beinge thence Capi-
tayne came to calys the xlvj. day in the ester week And 3
the morne after many soudiours of the towne were arrested
and put in Ward And in the same week he wote to the Wy-
ne And by the mene of the bisschop of the Wyche he wedded
the Erlis daughter of seint poull & came agayne to calys.
And the x. day of June on seint Bernabes day There
were four soudiours of calys that were chief causers
of the trespasse byhed that is to witte Johan maddelley
Johan Lunday Thomas palmer and Thomas tolbor And
an C. y. banished the towne that same tyme and before be-
re banished hundred and xx. soudiours And on mysdome-
rny after came the lord regent and his wyfe to london.

Ca. CC. xliij.

a About this tyme pope martyn dyed And after hym
Engenye the fourth was pope this was pryncely cho-
sen in Rome by the cardinals and was verye and indu-
bitable Pope but shortly after he was put and expul-
sed out of Rome in such wyse that he was fayne to flye naked
In this same tyme was the counsaill of basill to which
until he was cited to come And because he came not they
exposed hym but he woulde not see nor receyve by this

gave the cit of Rome & also still pope y Bii. yre This ye
w about withfontyd the heretikes of pragh Wer destroyed
for at two Journys Wer destroyed of them Mo chan.
ygh. thousand with hir capitayns that is to Wete procapis
saphoe & lupus paschier Also there Was taken a Lyue
maister piers clerke an Englishmen and heretike Also
this same yre Was a grette feste & a stronge duryng. vi.
Weekes for it began on seint bartholomes euen & lasted un
to seint scolasticus day in feuer in which tyme the Wyn
tage the came from Burdeux come ouer shotters hille this
yre Was the councell of aras and a grette traitte. sic Wene
the kyng of England & the kyng of fraunce Wete Was af
sembled many grete lordes of bothe parties at which councel
it Was offered to the kyng of England many grette chynges
by the moey of a legate that come fro Rome which Was
cardinal of seint cross which offers Wete refused by the
Cardinal of England & ocher lordes that Wete there for
the kyng Wete for the duke of Burgoyne which had bene
long English I Wene for soke our pris & returned fran sh
by went of the said legate & made a ptes with the frenllh
kyng wrytyng of the kyng for recompensyng of his fady
we seth the councel pntien the lord ship of macy which
moch oche surprised in the said tyme And so oure
bassatours came home a grette in Wete was chan they We
nt for they losse then the duke of Burgoyne which had bene
with his burgoyones & picardes a singular helpe in all
the conquest of normandie and of fraunce This same yre
Was a grette battail on the seint Wene the Jene Weps and
the kyng of aragon of which battail the Jene Weps had
the victorie for they were the kyngs of Aragon the kyng
of Navarre & the grette maister of seint James in galise W
cathin. & the grette & laquies & moche ocher peple & this W
as on seint dionys day this same yre Wete seyn in. Jours

1445

1445

attornes & anone folowed the chafold gouvernaunce in the
chirch that is to wete of Engenge of the counaill & of the
peneuallite Also this same yere M-cccc. xxxiii. Was a pas
sing yere wynnaby which steyles houses & trees were od
chewen about this tyme Was an holy mayde in holande
called by d v geth which lpued dly by miracle noe cryng o
ny mete This yere the duke of Burgoyne began his ordie
at lyle of the golden fflpes & ordeyned arayne knyghts
of the ordie and made statutes & ordinaunces moche acor
dyng by to the ordie of the Garter. Also this same yere
the ffransshmen had enterpased to haue stolen calys in the
fisspnyng tyme for many bootis of fraunce had sauoyd up
tis to come to calys for to take hving And the fauours
of the tounne had a custome to come to chirch & haue the
stauis stading at the chirch to the ffransshmen which were
arayed like ffishers had purposed to haue taken so theire
wey & winne the tounne but one of them lay with a comyn
woman the upghe to fore & told to hir cheir counaill and
shon the morue told the lieutenante which forch with co
maundd that everymansholde kepe his wey in his hon
saryng tyme & other And whan they apperced this
that they were mispoynd they sailed straye to d v & stall
and toke that toun And on new yers euen after they toke
harflete & thus englysshmen began to losse a litle & a litle
in Normandye

How calys & guphenes were beleged by the
duke of burgoine & how they were rescued by the du
ke of gloucestre Ca. ducentesimp quinquagisimo

This yere Was a gret noyse thurgh all Englonde
We the duke of Burgoyne hold came & belege calis
Wherfor the Erle of montaigne with his armye that he had
for to haue goon with in to fraunce Was commaundd &

charged that he shold go to calys which was at that tyme
me well vittailed & maned for he Johan tache was then
tenant of the kyng in that toun And the baron of dud
the lieutenant of the castell & the iij day of July the du
ke of burgoyne with all the power of flandres and moche
other peple came before calys & sette his siege aboute The
toun & every toun of flandres had their tentes by hem
selfe And this siege endured thus Weekes In the meane whi
le the duke of gloucestre kyng protectour of Englund toke
the moste part of the lordes of Englund & went ouer chesee
to calys for to rescue the toun or to fighte with the duke &
his host yf they wold haue biden this tyme London & eu
ry good toun of Englund sente ouer see to thes rescous
er men peple well armed of the best and chosen men for the
warre And the iij day of August the said duke of Glouc
ster arriued at calys with all his armye & v. hundred
shippes & moo And the duke and all his host the day in
the siege as soon as they espied the sailles in the see before
they approached Calys haue so surlie in a morninge depar
ted fro the siege luyng behynde them moche stuffe & vicia
lls and fledde in to flandres & picardie and in lyke wyse
sa dyd the siege the day tofore guynes where as they Of
Guynes toke the great gonnes of brasse called digon & ma
ny other great gonnes & serpentines ¶ And thanne whā
the duke of Gloucestre was arriued with all his host he
went in to flandres and was thanne yf daies & dyd
burne all the harme house he founde & so fair vilages po
punges & hold and other houses which were of no strengthe
and so he returned home agayne ¶ Also this same yere
the kyng of scotland & his gowernour northburgh with moche peple
But Sir Randalgray departed fro the castell and ordeyned
for rescous But assone as the kyng understode his depart
yng he surlie brake his siege and went his way and

Auging moche ordinaunce behind hym When he gat no W
urship This same yere the iiij. day of Januar quene Cath
rine Which was the kynges moder & wyfe to kyng Henry
the firste dyed & departed out of this world & was brou
ght ryally thurgh London & so to Westmynster & then she
lieth Wurschipfully buried in our lady chapel And also
this same yere the viij. day of Januar full tyme the gas
te With the turren hit on London brgge to ward south
Welle With the archie & all that stode churche This same
yere Was a grette empty holte by hit Wene Gmumpung and
Crelpe by Wene the kyng & duke of Burgoyne Wht for
the kyng Was the cardinall of Englund the duke of nor
folk & many othir lordes & for the duke Was the duchess
haupung full power of hit lord as Regent & lady of hals
do Wren Was taken by regens of bothe parties an abste
nence of Wren for a certayne tyme in the name of the du
chess & not of the duke because he had goon foz hit ooth
a lingeunce that he myd make to kyng Henry therfor The
kyng neuer wolde Wate ne appointe ne haue to do With hit
after but all in the duchesse name Also this same yere que
ne Jane died iiij. day of July Which had ben kyng Henry
the fourths wife & Was caned foz hermondsey by to ca
untarbury When she lieth buried by kyng Henry the iiij.
for houlond This same yere died all the Lyons in the tow
of London the Which had not be seyn many yeres before out
of mynde.

How owayn a squier of Wales that had wedded
Queene Katherine was arrested & of the tyme bitwen
Engenpe & felix. Ca. C. li.

1. N the vij. yere of kyng Henry side sigismund emp
our of almaine & luyghe of the garter Wht the
myne the kyng hape at seie poules in lodd ryally When
as made a riall foz the kyng in his estate chad in the

Was at entee at dirige & on the morne at masse & And
after hym was chose & chosen Albrecht duke of Ostrich whiche
had wedded sigismundus daughter for to be Emperour
This was taken & receyved to be kyng of heme & Un-
garie because of his wyfe that was sigismundus daughter
which lyste after him none other hit this albere was em-
poure but one yere for he was popfond & so seide some saye
he dyde of a felyce but he was a cruouse man & pitifull so
moche that alle the peple & hee lyste him said that the wor-
ld was not worth to have his presence This same yere o-
ne Owayn a squyer of Wales a ma of lowe birch which
had many a day before ferwelwedded quene Katherine &
had by her iii-sones & a daughter was taken & commaunds
did to newgate to prison by my lord of gloucesters pteowar
of the name And this yere he threke prison by the mene
of a prest that was his chapelayne And afte he was take
agayn by my lord hemond & brought agayn to newgate.
Whiche aft word was deliuered at large & one of his sones
after ward was made Ekle of Richemond & another Ekle
of prynces eke iii. a monk of Westminster Which monke
dyd sone afte this same yere also on new yearis day at hyr
hardcastle till deit a stalk of wode lodely at asenon &
low iii. m. mescurously & foule hurt othe also at Bedford
on othe wday wit iiij. m. murther without feare by fallig
downe of a steele as they com gude of their comtalle & mag
foule hurt in che y viij. per sir richard beauchap the good er
le of Barre Wit side at roth being that the lieutenant of the
Engyn in normoit & fro them his lord y was brought to Bar-
re Wyt When he lieth Burshippfully i a new chappell & the
southside of the quire also this yer was a grete dreche of we-
ter in all englod for a suffer of shire was dorethel pes
i many places of englod & it may nize nor lantp no vgh
Shewesther bre that come maike of food ste in the pres

Richard

se and broughte to London certayne shippes laden with
which eased & did much good to the poore for corne was
so scarce in England that in some places of England po
we people made hem bread of fern roots This year the generall
all counsell of basile disposed pope Engenye & they chose
felix which was duke of gaulle & then began the same
which ended by to the year of our lord ihesu crist M. cccc.
xlviij. This felix was a devout prince & so were his sonnes
his sonnes & after lived a holy & devout lyfe And was cho
sen pope by the counsell of basile Engenye disposed a so the
reigning was longe tyme And this felix had no moche obe
dience be cause of the newe lawe for the moste part & well ni
gh all cristen dome obeyed & obeyed Engenye for very pope
god And which was the very pope of them both for he
occupied during the lyfe of Engenye This same year he
Richard which vicarie of hermesworth was degraded
of his parsonage at paulis a bishp at tourney as for an he
write on seint Boetius day to be well at his death he
died a good cristen man wherfor after his death moche pe
ple come to the place wher he had be buried & offered and ma
de a heap of stones & sette up a crosse of stone & hylde hym
for a saint till the warre & stryde by the commaundement
of the kyng & of bishoppes destroyed it & made it a dung
hille Also this same year the sherris of london fetter out of
seint maries the graue the seint bartheleme five psones
which after ward were restored agayne to the seint warre by
the kynges Justices after albert the infidelle was cho
sen for our this sentence duke of ostende was lode for
disfend for to be crownd at rome by cause of the sic but aft
that dmd was had he was crownd with imperiall diademe
with great glorie & triumph of pope nicholas the iiij. chp
was a man pryncely quite & of singular pacience not heaving
the church he was the kyng of portingale together with

How the duchesse of gloucester was arrested for tre-
son & committed to perpetuall prison in the Ile of man
& of the deth of maister roger bolynghbroke ca cc lii.

1. This yere Elianor cobham duchesse of gloucester,
Was arrested for certain poyntis of treason leyd aga-
yne hir wher vpon she was examined in seint stephens
chappell at Westmynster before the Archebisschop of canter-
bury & there she was enioined to open prouance for to go
churgh chepe bering a coper in her hand and after to perpe-
tuall prison in the Ile of man vnder the keepynge of sir
Thomas Stanley Also that same tyme was arrested maister
Thomas southe well a chanon of Westmynster maister Jo-
han hune a chapellayn of the said lady maister Rogger bo-
lynghbrok a clerk vsing nigromancie And one margery
Jurdeman called the Whiche of Eye beside Westmynster.
These were arrested as for keepynge of counsaill With the sa-
yd duchesse of gloucester And as for maister Thomas sou-
thwell he dwelt in the towre the nyghe before he shold haue be-
trayed on the morow so he said him selfe that he shold tye
in his bedde and not by Justise And in the yere xx. may
ster Johan hune & maister Rogger bolynghbrok were brou-
ght to the gyldehalle in london & there before the maiour the
biden and chief Justice of Englund were trayned & dāp-
ned both to be drawen hanged & quartered. But maister Jo-
han hune had his charter & was pardoned by the kynge. But
maister roger was drawen to ribourne wher he confessed
that he dwelt gylts & newe had trespassed in that he dyd
fore notwithstanding he was hanged hedd & quartered on. W-
for soule god haue mercy & margery Jurdeman was bren-
in smychfeld also this yere was a grete affraye i flouster
by nyghears the bishope went me of counseilmen of london & dy-
uerse me slayne & some hurt and one herbold was chief
cause of this misgouernance and affraye Also this yere

after the king of the main of London the commons named
Robert clapton & Ralph Holland Taylor & the aldermen
to the Robert clapton & brought him with right bond Of
the main as the custom is And thence with Tail
four & other bond crafty men came not this Men
but Ralph Holland Therefore the main there was padgely
sent to the so called to newgate where they also a gre
a while & were punished In this same year were diuer
se Embassadours sent in to Guyan for a marriage for the
king for the Erles daughter of arminall which was con
cluded but by the means of the Erle of suffolke it was let
te & put a parte ¶ And after this the said Erle of suffolke
Went ouer the see in to france & there he made the man
age between the king of Englund & the kynes daughter
of seyrland and of Iherusalem And the next year it was co
cluded fully that marriage by which marriage the king
hold deliuer to his father the duchie of Anjou & the Erle
dome of mayne which was the hept of normandie then
he departed the Erle of suffolke with his wyfe & diuerse
lordes & knyghtes in the moste nall affaie that myght be
oute of Englund with newe clothes & palfrayes whiche
Went through chyn & so went ouer the see & respyed by
a ship brought her in the land after to hampton where she
landed & was nally purged & on candlemasse entred before
by a great tempest of thunder & lighenynge at afternone pau
lus strep was seene a fire on the myddes of shafe in the ci
tie which was quenched by force of labour & specially by
the labour of the moor & masse parst of the towne in chyn
which was thought impossible save only by the grace of God
This year was the Erle of stafford made and create duke
of bornglham the Erle of warre by the title of warre by
the title of dorset marquis of dorset & the Erle of suffolke was
made marquess of suffolke

MARI AND IOHAN MADE

How kyng henry wedded Quene margarete and
of hir coronacion. Ca. ducentesimo lii.

In this yere kyng Henry married at south Wyke que-
ne margarete she come to london the xviij. day Of
maye And by the way all the lordes of england assayed
hir worshipfully in diuerse places & in especiall the duke
of Gloucestre & on the blacke hech the maier aldermen and
all the craftes in blake gones broodred with the traile of
his craft that they myght be by knowyn mette with hir by
the red hoodes & brought hir to london where were diuerse
pageants & continuance of diuerse histories shewyd in diuerse
places of the cite Riially & castell And the xxx. day Of
maye the forsaide Quene was crowned at Westmynster and
there was Justis in. dayes duryng which the sapeneuare
to for the abbeye This yere the priour of Eglmarie appelled
the Erle of Armond of treason which had a day assigned
to them for to fyght in Smythfeld And the bystis were
made and fild dressed but when it came to poine the kyng
commaunded that they shold not fyght but toke the quar-
rell in to his owne hond and this was doon at the Insti-
unce and labour of certayn prebours and doctour of Lo-
don as maister Gillebert Worspington parson of saint
Andres in holborne and othir also this same yere came a
gret embassade in to england out of fraunce for to haue co-
cluded a perpetuall pece but in conclusion it turned vn to
a trewys of a yere About this tyme dyd saint barnardi
nt a gret fyete which began the new reformation of the
orde in many places in so moche that they that were refor-
med bene called obseruantes which obseruantes ben decreed
gretly i. Iulius in almaine this barnardin was cano-
nized by pope nicholas the fift In the yere M. cccc. l. Jo-
hannes capistrano was his discipul which plied moche to
the reformation of the orde for Whod god she womaga saig

CREATE MONE WHEN CHRIST ALON

miracle also hit is to be no debate from this tyme for as
at kynghem ne p[ro]f[ess]ion ne be f[or]ward but f[or]tune bega to
toure ne f[or]d him on all sides as well in f[ra]nce normandie gu
pan as in Englonde Somme men holden opinioun That
king Henry gaf compassioun plenary to sir Edward bulst
sir Robert was dene of seint seueryns a ocher to conclud
a mariage for him With the Erl of arminales fustier
Which was promised as it was sayd and concluded but
afterward it was broken & he wedded quene margaret as
a fore is said Which was a durt mariage for the Reame of
Englonde for it is knowen verily that for to haue her w
as deliuered the duchie of Angles & the Erlome of mar
ne Which was the kepe of normandie for the f[ra]nssmen
then And aboue this the said margarete of suffolk & agid
in pl[ai]n parlour st[an]deth & an halfe for to f[re]che her ou
a of f[ra]ncaile What a mariage was this as to the compa
rison of that of that ocher mariage of armynges for the
shold haue bene deliuered so many castles & townes giv
kinge & so moche good shold haue ben geuen With her that
all Englonde shold haue ben the by enrichen but contr
re wise f[or]t What for every gude prince dought to keep his
promyse for because of his king of this promise & for mari
age of Quene margarete What losse hath had the Reame of
glond by lossing of Normandie and gupan by diuision in
in the name the w[ar]d[en] of c[om]munes agens the prince
& thes What diuisiō amouge the lordes What murder
slayng of eam What felde foughen & made in edelid so
many that many a mā hath lost his life & ledelid the
king deposid & quene With her some said to f[re] in to f[re]
land & f[ro]m thens in to f[ra]nce & so to loyn the pl[ai]
that she come f[ro]m f[ro]m many men & me that the king of
the kinges promisse to the fustier of the Erl of Armynges
was cause of this grete losse & aduersite.

How the good duke of gloucester humfrey the kyn-
ges uncle was arrested at the parlement of bury and
his deeth & how ancea in magne was deliured.

Ca. ducentesimo lvi.

In the yere xxv. of kyng Henry Was a parlyment at
bury called saint Edmondes burie about which Was
comanded all the commons of the countie to be there in their
moste menseable array for to a Wapen upon the kyng to w-
hich plemente come the duke of gloucester humfrey the kynges
uncle which had bene protectour of Englonde alle the yere
ne age of the kyng And anon after he Was in his lodgyn-
ge he Was arrested by the viscount lemond the Constable
of Englonde accompanied the duke of Borkyngham & many
other lordes And forch with all his seruantes Were coman-
ded for to departe from him & xxvj. of the chief of them w-
ere also arrested & sent to diverse prisons. And anon after
this said arresst the said duke Was on the morne dede on w-
hos soule god haue mercy Amen But so w- he dyde & in w-
hat maner the certeyne is not to me knowne some sayd he
dyde for for we some sayd he Was murdred by bene the
fechered his deche sayd that on hote spide Was put in hys
founder but so w- he dyde god knoweth to w- is no thing
hid & theche whan he Was so dede he Was laid open that alle
men myght see him And so both lordes & knyghtes of the
kinge with burgisemen & sa w- his lie & due w- he to
kyngdom the people so w- he dede that may me mark what
this world is this duke Was a noble man & a grete clerk
had but shippfully ruled this maner to the kynges honoure &
never could he fonde fault to his due enemye of them that w-
en gouernours & had promised the duchie of Anjou & the
countie of magne caused the destruction of this noble man
for they doted him that he wold haue enuyssed that deliuer
him & after they sent his body to saint alldes with certeyn

A. D.

1447.

lighte for to be buried And so fir geruays of clifton had
thay the charge to conuey the wyse so it was buried at
seine abbey in the abbey and by presence of his household
was sente to london & there was tyned & Jugged to be by
Wen Wynged & quartered of Whom the names was fir Roger
er chamburlyne knyght on middelton asquier he lard as
squier Archa: a squier & Richard nedham Whiche by presence
was by Wen Wynged & the town of london thurgh charyte to
Cilborne & there Wynged & last donne quyle & thanne strepe
for to haue bene hidded & quartered And thanne the Marz
quyle of suffolke the Wedd was for them the knyghtes pdon in
his his gait seal & so they was pdonned of the immancie
of the excommunication & had this lyues And so they was brou
ught agayne to london & after fulle distour Thus began
the trouble in the Reame of Englonde for the deche of this
noble duke of Gloucestre All the communes of the Reame
began for to murmur for it and was necessent after the
pope Engayne was by Nicholas the first was elect pope
this Nicholas was chosen for Engayne it hanging the
cisme nor withstanding he gaue the obedience of all chris
ten Reames for after he was elect and sacred pope many
noble lordes of France & of Englonde were sente in to saue
ge to pope Jelis for to encrech him to assent of the papacye
by the special labour of the bishop of norwich and the
lord of Iohannis he assented the second yere after that pope
Nicholas was sacred And the said Jelis was made legat
of France & cardinal of saure & had resygued to be by
pope to Nicholas And after lyued an holy lyfe and byde
an holy man and as it is said Almyghty god sheweth mi
racles for hym & this was the beginnynge of the schisme by Engayne
And Jelis and duned & dyed the cause was thus
The general councill of Basle deposed Engayne which
was only Pope and Indubitable for as moche as he was

Handwritten text at the top of the page, possibly a title or header, including the word "Handwritten" and some numbers.

Handwritten text in the upper middle section of the page, possibly a date or a reference number.

